

The Boss

Behind The Game

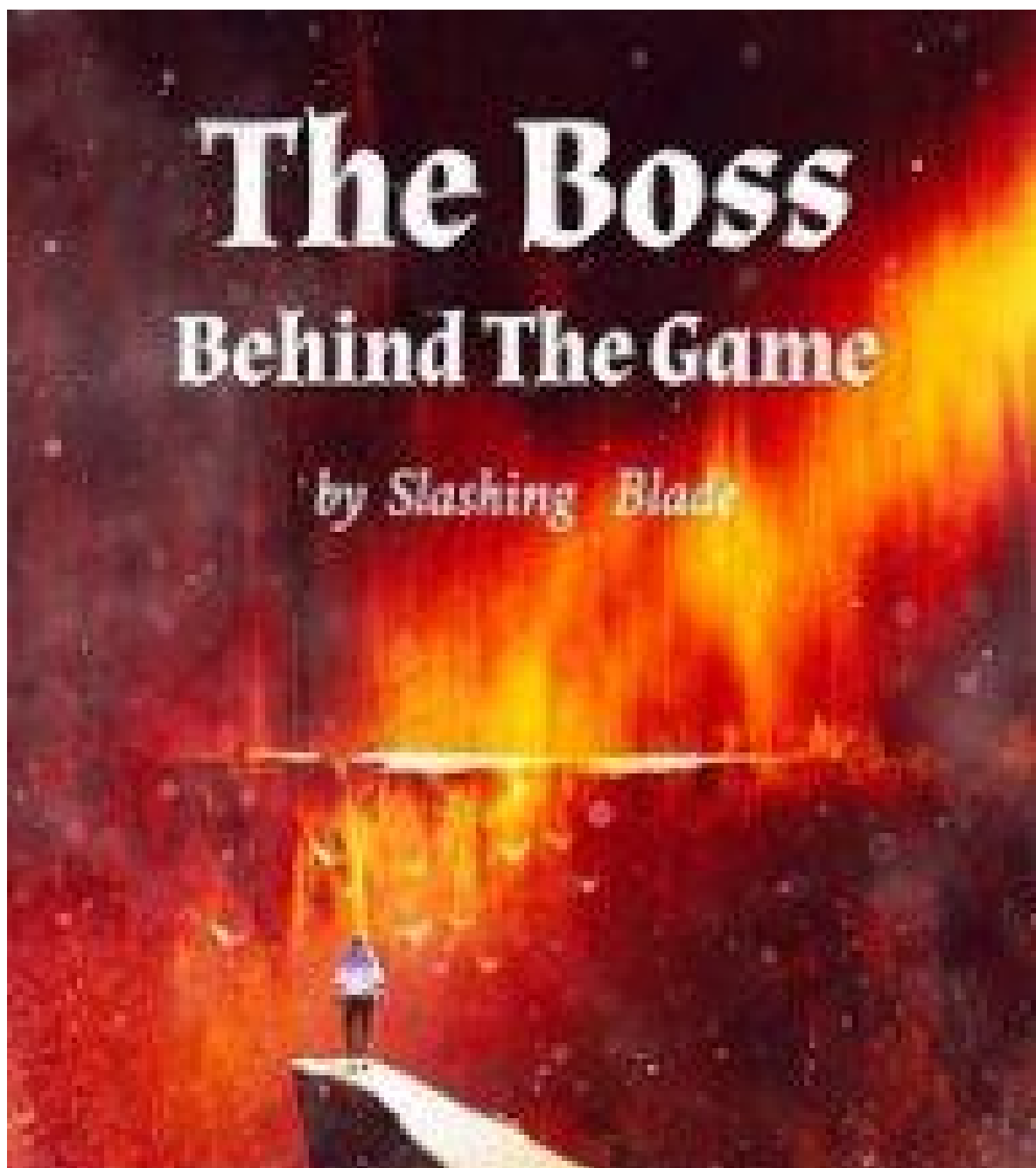
by Slashing Blade



WED.COM.VN

The Boss Behind The Game

Slashing Blade





Source: <https://boxnovel.com/novel/the-boss-behind-the-game>

Generated by [Lightnovel Crawler](#)

The Boss Behind The Game Chapter 101-200

1. [Volume 2](#)

1. [Chapter 101 - Raiding The Insect Island](#)
2. [Chapter 102 - Xiao Tian'S Return](#)
3. [Chapter 103 - Squid, The Sea Merchants](#)
4. [Chapter 104 - The Value Of Soul Coins](#)
5. [Chapter 105 - Soul Coins Transaction Center](#)
6. [Chapter 106 - The Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament](#)
7. [Chapter 107 - His Excellency Cangxu](#)
8. [Chapter 108 - Ancient Secrets](#)
9. [Chapter 109 - The Secret Of The Zombie Spirit Sect](#)
10. [Chapter 110 - Zombie Forgemaster](#)
11. [Chapter 111 - The Zombie Forgemaster \(Part 2\)](#)
12. [Chapter 112 - A Vow Before The Battle](#)
13. [Chapter 113 - The Beginning Of The Hegemony.](#)
14. [Chapter 114 - Archery Competition](#)
15. [Chapter 115 - First Fortress Captured](#)
16. [Chapter 116 - Rematch](#)
17. [Chapter 117 - The Last Craziness](#)
18. [Chapter 118 - Thunder Liu Chai](#)
19. [Chapter 119 - One Man Guarding](#)
20. [Chapter 120 - The Best Overall Performance](#)
21. [Chapter 121 - An Influx Of New Players](#)
22. [Chapter 122 - Cangxu'S Conspiracy.](#)
23. [Chapter 123 - The Arrival Of The Deities](#)
24. [Chapter 124 - Lovers](#)
25. [Chapter 125 - Above The River Of Forgetfulness](#)
26. [Chapter 126 - A Subordinate Worth Ten Million Soul Coins](#)
27. [Chapter 127 - Boasting On The Livestream](#)
28. [Chapter 128 - The Grudge From A Food Fight](#)
29. [Chapter 129 - The New Casting Master](#)
30. [Chapter 130 - The Joy Of Boasting Only Lasted Momentarily.](#)
31. [Chapter 131 - Descendants Of The Dead](#)
32. [Chapter 132 - God'S Right Arm](#)
33. [Chapter 133 - Oncoming Strike Of The Sea King](#)

34. [Chapter 134 - Half Ghost Emperor](#)
35. [Chapter 135 - Return To Origin](#)
36. [Chapter 136 - The Big Treasure](#)
37. [Chapter 137 - A Turtledove In The Magpie'S Nest](#)
38. [Chapter 138 - New Downloadable Content 'The Invasion Of Evil'](#)
39. [Chapter 139 - The Nation'S Enemy](#)
40. [Chapter 140 - The Civilian Players' Fury](#)
41. [Chapter 141 - Accomplished The First Killing Attempt](#)
42. [Chapter 142 - Twin Souls](#)
43. [Chapter 143 - How To Maintain The State Of Combat](#)
44. [Chapter 144 - Hiderigami Plug](#)
45. [Chapter 145 - Listen To My Explanation](#)
46. [Chapter 146 - Plan To Annihilate Their Clan](#)
47. [Chapter 147 - The Fire Of Revenge](#)
48. [Chapter 148 - Class Development](#)
49. [Chapter 149 - The Construction War](#)
50. [Chapter 150 - Monster-Killing Bot](#)
51. [Chapter 151 - The Rock Ghost King Had Come To Help \(Part 3\)](#)
52. [Chapter 152 - Restriction On Cutting Down Trees Was Impossible \(Part 4\)](#)
53. [Chapter 153 - Incompatible \(Part 5\)](#)
54. [Chapter 154 - The Counterattack Of The Black Sea Corporation](#)
55. [Chapter 155 - Lunar New Year'S Event](#)
56. [Chapter 156 - Fashion Auction](#)
57. [Chapter 157 - The Curious Hydra King](#)
58. [Chapter 158 - A Fatal Attack](#)
59. [Chapter 159 - The Ambitious Rock Ghost King](#)
60. [Chapter 160 - Sneak In For Investigation](#)
61. [Chapter 161 - This Place Was Rather Scary](#)
62. [Chapter 162 - The Drought Zombie And The Wood Spiritmaster \(Two In One\)](#)
63. [Chapter 163 - Ice Snow Clan](#)
64. [Chapter 164 - Out For A Stroll](#)
65. [Chapter 165 - Dark Shadow Twins \(Two In One\)](#)
66. [Chapter 166 - Fengling](#)
67. [Chapter 167 - The Hope For Gold \(Part 1\)](#)
68. [Chapter 168 - He'S Going To Be Fine \(Part 2\)](#)

69. [Chapter 169 - Fengling, The New Member Of The Great Dragon Guild \(Part 3\)](#)
70. [Chapter 170 - Buddy Recruitment \(Part 1\)](#)
71. [Chapter 171 - Sweet Revenge Began From Cleaning \(Part 2\)](#)
72. [Chapter 172 - A Live Assassination \(Part 3\)](#)
73. [Chapter 173 - The Realm Of Heart Sword](#)
74. [Chapter 174 - The Treasure Of The Sea King](#)
75. [Chapter 175 - A Conversation Which Was Not On The Same Page](#)
76. [Chapter 176 - Netherworld](#)
77. [Chapter 177 - Hysterical Experiments On The Brink Of Death](#)
78. [Chapter 178 - The Purpose Of Having A Dream](#)
79. [Chapter 179 - The Resurrection Of Cangxu \(2 In 1\)](#)
80. [Chapter 180 - That Old Fellow Was Extremely Terrifying](#)
81. [Chapter 181 - The European Server'S New Settings](#)
82. [Chapter 182 - Time Traveler](#)
83. [Chapter 183 - The Official Launch Of The European Server](#)
84. [Chapter 184 - Dark Knight = Dark Chess](#)
85. [Chapter 185 - The Destiny'S Child Of The Multiverse](#)
86. [Chapter 186 - The System Quest](#)
87. [Chapter 187 - The Lantern Festival Event](#)
88. [Chapter 188 - Cross-Server Auction](#)
89. [Chapter 189 - Building A Super-Warship](#)
90. [Chapter 190 - Titanic \(Part One\)](#)
91. [Chapter 191 - Titanic \(Part Two\)](#)
92. [Chapter 192 - Mu Te Coffin](#)
93. [Chapter 193 - 35,000 Yards Under The Sea](#)
94. [Chapter 194 - The Surging Undercurrent](#)
95. [Chapter 195 - The Ethnomaniac](#)
96. [Chapter 196 - The Covenant](#)
97. [Chapter 197 - Warring Crisis](#)
98. [Chapter 198 - The Earth Breaking Clan](#)
99. [Chapter 199 - I Shall Acknowledge You As The King!](#)
100. [Chapter 200 - Assembly Of The Forces Of Beiqi](#)

Volume 2

Chapter 101 - Raiding The Insect Island

Liu Chai was hoping that Xiao Tian would deploy numerous garrisons on the interior of the island.

Very soon, there were myriads of armored orcs lining up in the interior and assembling at the port.

“My fellow comrades of the Demolition Traders, please wait for me here. I’ll come back once I’ve captured the wire-pullers!” Xiao Tian took out a blue bead from his armor as he spoke before he tossed it into the ocean.

The blue bead began to dissolve once it came in contact with the water. Ripples and bubbles appeared on the surface of the ocean.

After some time, many huge dark shadows emerged from the surface of the ocean. The gigantic sea creatures jumped out of the ocean one after another and the numbers of the creatures continued to increase.

In a blink of an eye, there were already thousands of sea creatures gathering at the port. The scene was spectacular.

“Set out! Don’t let the thieves escape!” as he spoke, Xiao Tian leapt up and landed on the back of a massive sea creature, which appeared to be a whale.

Upon seeing that, all the other orcs followed and climbed to the back of the sea creatures one after another.

Once everything was ready, Xiao Tian waved his arm, the huge army of sea creatures then advanced toward Fallen Fish Island.

After he made sure that the army of Xiao Tian had disappeared from sight, Liu Chai immediately made an announcement in the joint guild live chat channel.

“Gu Yu, stay alert! Xiao Tian is on his way, buy us some time. The other three guilds, prepare to go ashore!”

Upon receiving the news, Wu Guoyi and the others who were laying low along the shoreline around the island summoned their warships before they sailed toward Insect Island.

After he delivered the message to the other four guilds, Liu Chai turned to look at the orcs that were guarding the port.

He said with a grin, “Brother, do you mind letting us into the interior of the island?”

The orc was stunned by the request before it immediately shook its head, “Without any order from the Island Owner, no one is allowed to enter the interior!”

“Are you sure?”

“Of course. This is the rule set by the Island Owner. How can we alter it?”

“It’s such a waste then!”

As Liu Chai spoke, the two soldiers, who were initially standing behind him, took a step forward. They lifted their battle axes and mercilessly slashed the orc’s face.

The abrupt attack caught the orc off guard and severely injured them. Fortunately, the orc was wearing a helmet. Therefore, the attack was not fatal but it did feel a little light-headed after receiving the blow.

When it was about to shout for help, Liu Chai took a step forward. With a red flash, his power was boosted to the maximum before he violently struck a punch on the orc.

The punch was so powerful that it dented the orc’s face before it killed the orc on the spot.

After the orc died, Liu Chai beckoned his members on the warship, signaling them to disembark.

However, even after all the guild members had gathered, Liu Chai did not immediately launch an attack. Instead, he started a waiting game.

Although a major part of defense forces on the interior of the island had been removed, the remaining orcs that were guarding the island were the immensely powerful orcs. Their guild was no match for the orcs.

Only when the four guilds joined forces, they would have a chance of winning!

Soon, the warships from the other three guilds came into sight as they sailed rapidly toward the port.

After the ships were docked, Wu Guoyi and his crew disembarked from their warships and went down the stairs before they hurried to Liu Chai's side.

“Hurry up and gather around! We don't have much time. It only depends on how much time Brother Gu Yu can buy us!”

Upon seeing the arrival of the aids, Liu Chai changed away his white armor into a purple outfit.

They had chosen Fallen Fish Island because, among the other islands discovered by the players, this island was the furthest from Insect Island. Moreover, there were no garrisons on Fallen Fish Island, allowing Gu Yu and the others to get prepared without having to worry about being chased out by the other marine tribes.

Although, compared to Fallen Fish Island, the Liuli Coast was actually further to Insect Island, they would prefer not to lead the disaster to the other players. Therefore, Fallen Fish Island was their first choice. Even so, they needed at least two hours to travel back and forth from the two islands and their time was limited.

“Since you’re familiar with the interior of the island, you will lead us this time,” Wu Guoyi said as he looked at Liu Chai.

Although the four guilds fought frequently, they knew each other very well. Liu Chai was a short-tempered person, but an admirable guild leader. Besides, his ability was well-recognized among the other members.

Liu Chai nodded before he raised his fist, “Fellow brothers, the fortunes are right in front of us. Let’s bring them down together!”

“Attack!”

The members of the four guilds raised their weapons and cried in unison.

The guild members, who were participating in the current raid, knew exactly what was on the island and they would eventually have a share of the resources, too. Therefore, they were all in high spirits at that moment.

Under Liu Chai’s leadership, the guild allies strode across the long vine bridge and headed directly to the interior of the island.

They expected to run into garrisons around the long vine bridge which were all connected. However, it seemed like their operations had diverted their troops. This had boosted Liu Chai’s confidence in winning the raid.

There were no obstacles along their way. Under the leadership of Liu Chai, all the players rushed toward the first spiritual field once they arrived.

However, they ran into a patrol that consisted of three hundred orcs.

The orcs were shocked when they saw the players. After all, the island had not been intruded for many years. Therefore, they were dumbfounded by the unannounced arrival of this many trespassers.

“Attack!” Liu Chai cried loudly. Then, thousands of players followed suit and yelled furiously before they charged the Orc Patrol.

When the leader of the Orc Patrol regained its composure, it quickly grabbed the orc beside it, “Ring the alarm. Quick!”

Upon the command, the orc promptly dashed for the alarm. The leader of the Orc Patrol then turned toward the players before he raised his axe and said, “How dare you offend the Sea King Navy! Attack!”

The two parties instantly broke into a fight.

Since the time limit for this war was very short and they knew that Gu Yu could not hold for too long, Liu Chai and the others were extremely anxious. Naturally, they would not stand by and watch.

The berserkers and the Rune Masters who were at the frontline went head-on toward the orcs and started a melee.

The frontline of both parties were equipped with heavy armor and weapons. During the battle, the muscles of all the warriors were seen contracting as they fought. Sparks flew as the weapons were struck together, showcasing the intensity of the fight.

Water Turrets were gradually formed right behind the army. Numerous water cannonballs were then shot toward the Orc Patrol.

“All assassins, divide yourselves into two teams and activate your Shadow Steps. Look for an opportunity to assassinate them!”

Following Liu Chai’s rave, the assassin players who were standing in the center of the troop separated into two groups before they transformed into shadows and assassinated the Orc Patrol from both sides.

The atmosphere was lit up by flashes after more flashes as the assassin players seized each vital moment and took away the life of those wounded orcs.

Only the elite players of the guilds were present in this battle. At this moment, all players were flaunting their top-notch skills. The orcs were driven into a corner and their numbers were significantly reduced.

“Too-toom!”

Just then, a melodious sound of the trumpet resounded across the island!

Chapter 102 - Xiao Tian'S Return

The trumpet was blown, alerting every orc who was defending.

Knowing that the Orc Army was arriving soon, Liu Chai made another announcement on the guild live chat, "Kill all these orcs first and prepare to confront the Orc Army!"

Upon hearing this, the players grew more aggressive. Some of the players seized the opportunity and pounced onto the orcs, sacrificing themselves in order to create a chance for their teammates to kill them.

Nevertheless, if they were to kill one life by losing another life, they would still have the upper hand, owing to their huge numbers.

Under such a frenzied attack, before long, there were only dozens left out of the initial hundreds of orcs.

The remaining orcs knew that they could not win the fight and intended to flee the scene. However, all at once, the assassin players began to drive the orcs into a corner.

After the onslaught, the Orc Patrol was completely annihilated.

"Hurry up and loot everything from the first spiritual field!" Liu Chai pointed at the spiritual field and he yelled.

The players briefly adjusted their positions before they dashed for the spiritual field.

After five minutes of sprinting, the spiritual field, which was obscured by a faint golden fog of soul energy, came into their sight.

The few orcs, who were guarding the spiritual field, were in daze when they saw the enormous number of troops made up of thousands of players.

“Attack!”

Following the roaring command, the players charged toward the enemies.

It was then when the leader of the orcs took out an item from its pocket. With a violent pull, a shroud of fog was shot into the air.

“He’s sending a signal. Everyone, stay alert! Warriors, go to the frontline. Assassins and mages, collect spiritual materials. Loot everything!”

After Liu Chai’s command, the berserkers tensed their bodies and ran toward the orcs. The ceaseless attack effectively chased the orcs out from the spiritual field.

The players at the back seemed overjoyed and started to collect the spiritual materials as fast as they could before storing them in the channel.

The Son of the Sea in the middle of the spiritual field was extracted by the players and was kept in the channel, too.

The spiritual field was easily raided by the players and the orcs were murdered right after they were done collecting the materials!

When Liu Chai led his comrades toward the second spiritual field, they encountered the army of thousands of orcs who had assembled after they received the signal.

Liu Chai and the others started to worry after seeing them.

“Get ready to fight!”

Upon listening to Liu Chai’s command, all players got into their respective positions.

The orc leader, who had already noticed the players, swung its spiked club forward. Its muscles expanded as it let out a thunderous roar.

A battle broke out once again.

The players had lost all their advantages in the fight this time. Although they still outnumbered the orcs, one orc could win against a few players.

Especially the orc leader. Its strength was way stronger than the Ghost Supreme Commander whom the players killed previously.

Liu Chai's expression grew solemn as he realized that the players were barely having an upper hand against the orcs. He reckoned that it would not be a good choice to drag this battle on any longer as the worst situation would have come true when Xiao Tian returned with his army.

“Each guild should send a team of assassins to the other spiritual fields to seize the spiritual materials by activating Shadow Step. I've already sent the coordinates through the channel. Quick!”

Promptly, Wu Guoyi and the others deployed a batch of assassins from the guild live chat to seize the spiritual materials according to the coordinates given.

Upon receiving Liu Chai's command, four clouds of shadows immediately left the camp and rushed to the assigned locations.

“Stop them!” seeing that the players had left the camps, the orc leader immediately knew what they were up to and shouted to his subordinates at the rear.

The Orc Army sent out four groups of forces to chase after the assassin players.

.....

Lu Wu was aware of the players' activities. In the meantime, he was observing them in real time, too.

The current battle was significant to Lu Wu, too. According to Bei Li, if the players won the war, the Derived Spiritual Rice that they harvested would help him to transform into a human form again and acquire the first skill, the Power of the Dark Beast.

Besides, Lu Wu found that Gu Yu and the others who were guarding Fallen Fish Island had already confronted Xiao Tian.

The battle at Fallen Fish Island was different. It was a pyrrhic victory.

Although Gu Yu owned the inheritance of the Demonic God, it was nothing when compared to Xiao Tian whose ability was of the similar tier as the Ghost General.

The war only lasted less than 30 minutes before it quickly ended. All the players from the Myth Guild were wiped out while Gu Yu and a few other leaders were captured alive.

.....

In the meantime, on the shore of Fallen Fish Island.

Xiao Tian stared at Gu Yu who was apprehended before he asked with a ferocious expression, “Where is the Son of the Sea now?”

Gu Yu remained silent as he lowered his pain receptor, intending to buy some time.

However, out of Gu Yu’s expectation, Xiao Tian who was about to continue the interrogation, changed his expression all of a sudden.

Just then, the red light on his Communication Gemstone began to flicker. With that, Xiao Tian immediately knew that Insect Island had been intruded.

Recalling the entire battle, he thought something was amiss as the power behind the curtain was so weak and the number of their troops did not achieve tens of thousands as what was mentioned by the Demolition Traders. Everything did not make sense.

Immediately, Xiao Tian turned around and shouted to his members at the rear.

“Everyone, get onto the sea monsters now and head back to Insect Island immediately! We’ve fallen into their trap!”

Gu Yu was shocked upon seeing Xiao Tian’s reaction.

He had no clue how Xiao Tian discovered that Insect Island was invaded. If Xiao Tian managed to rush back to the island now, their plan would fail.

He made a quick decision and said, “Xiao Tian, aren’t you interested in the whereabouts of the Son of the Sea? I’ll tell you!”

However, Gu Yu did not expect that Xiao Tian would glare at him and slap his head brutally, killing Gu Yu on the spot.

After that, Xiao Tian threw a glimpse at the other players before he waved his claws. Streams of black light were shot across the air, killing all the players Xiao Tian intended to torture and interrogate and left only Sun Qi.

Sun Qi did not get killed but was caught by Xiao Tian. Xiao Tian brought Sun Qi along before he mounted the sea creature and raced back to Insect Island.

On Insect Island, both parties had fallen into a deadlock. Neither of the teams seemed to be winning.

This had significantly perturbed Liu Chai. Therefore, he quickly dispatched more manpower to help the teams who were trying to steal the spiritual materials.

Although this would increase the pressure of the battle, stealing the spiritual materials was their main goal. If they failed to obtain the spiritual materials, they would fail their mission even if they won the battle.

In the meantime, the assassins that were deployed earlier had sent their feedback about the plundering on the live chat.

Three of the teams were stopped by the orcs who were guarding the spiritual fields. Only one team had successfully stolen a unique spiritual material from one of the spiritual fields.

However, those orcs who knew that they could not win had surrounded the Son of the Sea to protect it. So the team was still trying to break through the orcs' defenses in order to get the Son of the Sea.

According to the feedback of the dispatched players, Liu Chai would occasionally choose a few players from the battle to assist in the plundering, thus increasing the pressure of the battle.

At this moment, numerous shadows of the sea creatures took shape on the shore of Insect Island.

Xiao Tian's eyes were filled with rage as soon as he saw the island. He leapt off the back of the sea creature, stepped on the waves, and dashed for Insect Island's port.

Chapter 103 - Squid, The Sea Merchants

On Insect Island, Liu Chai, who was fighting against the entire Orc Army, continued to dispatch more manpower. At this moment, his expression went through an abrupt change.

This was because Sun Qi told him over the live chat channel that Xiao Tian had arrived on Insect Island and had discovered their activity.

The news had upset Liu Chai. They had indeed underestimated the strength of the military forces on Insect Island. However, it was all too late now. His voice roared across the live chat channel.

“Everyone, split up and loot as many spiritual materials as you can at the given coordinates! Xiao Tian is back!”

Upon hearing Liu Chai’s command, Wu Guoyi and his peers promptly ordered their guild members to split up.

As a result, the player’s battle array was instantly destroyed by the orcs. A great number of forefront berserkers had fallen and the orcs charged directly at the mage who were stationed at the rear of the garrison and began the massacre.

Nevertheless, the players were no longer focusing on the fight. Each of them had picked a direction and ran toward the spiritual fields after they were dispersed.

“Howl...”

At this moment, a deafening wolf’s howl resonated across the whole island before the silhouette of an enormous blue wolf ran past at a high speed. Every player who came in contact with the silhouette was instantly set

ablaze and burned by a blue flame before their bodies instantly melted away.

As the silhouette of the wolf relentlessly ran around the players, the number of players was significantly reduced. This had put the other players in an immensely stressful environment, causing them to despair.

“Our boss is back! Kill them!” the orc leader growled and the entire Orc Army had regained their fighting spirit.

Now that the war was coming to an end, Liu Chai and the teams were already scattered across different spiritual fields, finishing up on their final loot.

Any additional spiritual plants being collected now were considered as profit earned. Therefore, all the players had stopped fighting and raced into the spiritual fields to collect the spiritual plants instead.

“Howl...”

Xiao Tian’s thundering roar resounded once again. Three shadows of blue wolves escaped his body and dashed for the remaining three spiritual fields while he stationed himself at the end of the long vine bridge.

Xiao Tian was currently incensed. He had never foreseen himself being tricked like this.

Everything the Demotion Traders said about the man behind the curtain was nothing but a lie! The real masterminds behind this ruse were the Demolition Traders.

Recalling how Liu Chai told him that the hidden boss was longing for the other four Son of the Seas on this island, Xiao Tian was enraged.

Before long, the orcs that had been sent out earlier had returned concurrently and were eliminating the remaining players.

This time, the players could no longer withstand the onslaught. One after another, they were killed before they turned into black smoke and exited the

game.

Xiao Tian, who had returned to the center of the island once again, was pained when he saw the damage done to the spiritual fields.

Despair grew in him when the orcs combed the entire inner island and found out that all the spiritual materials and the Son of the Seas that were looted by the invaders had mysteriously disappeared.

Xiao Tian controlled the Shadow Wolf remotely as he guarded the long vine bridge, intending to prevent anyone from stealing the spiritual materials. Despite the fact that no one had escaped under his watch, the spiritual materials had still vanished.

The news instantly paled Xiao Tian as he knew he was doomed to die!

The Sea King would never forgive him!

After he mulled over the situation, Xiao Tian peered at Sun Qi, who was still in his grasp, and relaxed his face.

This White Phantom was the spiritual beast of the world. One's cultivation would grow by consuming its flesh. Therefore, it was as valuable as a Son of the Sea. He could only beg for mercy from the Sea King by offering this White Phantom.

Sun Qi, who was under Xiao Tian's captivity, was flustered, knowing that all the other players, save for him, had been killed. Furious, he kicked Xiao Tian at his waist.

“When are you going to kill me?”

Xiao Tian was surprised when he heard Sun Qi's words, “You can talk?”

“Both of us are dogs. Why don't you just let me go!” Sun Qi said while looking expectantly at Xiao Tian.

“Dog? I'm a Sea Wolf Demon and you're a White Phantom, neither of us is a dog!”

Xiao Tian was stunned, “You can speak? Are you a mutant?”

Similarly, Sun Qi was shocked, ergo he glowered. He was already sad to have been turned into a dog. Now, he was even seen as a mutant. If he was capable of fighting, he really wanted to have 300 rounds of battles with Xiao Tian.

“Do you know where the creatures hid the spiritual materials? I will release you once you provide me with an answer!” Xiao Tian asked, all of a sudden.

Upon hearing that, Sun Qi spread his arms wide, “Well, just kill me now then!”

Initially, Xiao Tian was going to bring Sun Qi to the Sea King. But knowing that Sun Qi could speak, halfway through the journey he decided to change his plan and interrogate him by trying to obtain some useful information. He reckoned that he might still have a chance to retrieve the Son of the Sea.

Just then, an orc arrived hastily to report a message.

“Boss, there’s a big ship at the port, claiming that they are the members of the Sea Trading Association. They have even brought along a token from the Sea King!”

Xiao Tian was once again infuriated upon hearing the news before he gave a loud shriek. He levitated into the air and flew toward the pier.

At the port, a green-skinned, round-headed man, with a pair of big ears and narrowed eyes, was waiting for something. At the speed of light, Xiao Tian descended from the sky and plummeted to the ground, giving the man a scare.

After recognizing the man as Xiao Tian, the man heaved a sigh of relief and presented the token from the Sea King, the Grass of Vanity.

“Xiao Tian, the Island Owner, I am Squid of the Western Trading Association. With the consent of the Sea King, I am here for the Son of the

Sea!”

After he took a look at the Grass of Vanity, Xiao Tian glared at him.

“You punk. I see you’ve even gotten the Sea King’s Grass of Vanity. It seems like you will not stop until you have all the Son of the Seas on my Insect Island!”

Squid was stunned for a moment, “This Grass of Vanity is indeed authentic. Moreover, we the Western Trading Association, have spent a lot to trade the Son of the Sea from the Sea King. However, the Sea King had informed us that the Son of the Sea is with you, and you will pass it to us once we present the token of Sea King.”

Upon hearing these words, Xiao Tian’s eyes were filled with rage. He reached out to grab Squid by his neck and slowly lifted him up.

“It was the Demolition Traders before, and now, comes the Western Trading Association. You seem to be rather persistent, trying to push me into the corner with one scam after another. This time, I will not fall for it...”

As he spoke, the muscles on Xiao Tian’s right hand expanded. A crack sounded across the atmosphere and Squid’s neck was broken.

Squid died with a shocked expression on his face, not understanding what led to his death. I have certainly followed the Sea King’s orders and even brought along the token, but why...

Staring at the other traders who were scrambling onto their ship, intending to flee as soon as possible, Xiao Tian raised his head and let out a long howl. The shadow of a huge blue wolf appeared above his head and clawed forward menacingly, breaking the Specter Ship in two.

As to the traders who had fallen into the water, Xiao Tian ordered mercilessly, “Kill them all. Leave none behind!”

Chapter 104 - The Value Of Soul Coins

After the battle on Insect Island, Lu Wu made a calculation according to the statistics and found out that the players had looted a total of 428 pieces of Derived Spiritual Rice and 1 Son of the Sea.

Lu Wu was surprised by the marvelous results.

The players' extraordinary plan had astonished Lu Wu who was the boss behind the game. This had reconfirmed his belief that the players had infinite potential if they were allowed to develop their skills without restrictions.

There would be surprises everywhere!

However, after the battle, Lu Wu had spent precisely 200,000 soul coins to purchase unique spiritual materials. He felt as if a piece of him had been cut off due to this great amount.

But of course, the guild master who received the soul coins did not keep them only for himself.

All the participants received the rewards they deserved, enabling all the players who participated in this raid on Insect Island to reap a lot of benefits.

After this battle, it could be said that the strength of these five guilds had once again grown immensely.

The only Son of the Sea acquired was handed over to Chen Ziyu by members of the Great Dragon Guild after they had logged back online. Chen Ziyu then fulfilled his promise by passing this sole Son of the Sea to Liu Chai.

The news of this successful invasion on Insect Island had spread rapidly to the other players. While Liu Chai was now coveted by everyone, many people had also set their sights on him.

Especially Gu Yu, who had offered to pay a huge sum to acquire the Son of the Sea from him.

However, Liu Chai had firmly rejected all buyers and said that he would consume it himself in order to strengthen his talent ability.

This decision had disappointed many rich players who longed for the Son of the Sea. They felt that Liu Chai had wasted such a treasure.

Since Liu Chai wasn't short on money, he didn't care about that.

This battle had also made the players yearn for more similar island raids. There were pro players in the forum who had immediately set up a group called Ocean Explorers, specializing in exploring the ocean territories and mapping the areas explored before posting it on the forum as a reference for the other players.

The enthusiasm of these pro players posting about the game's technicalities had earned Lu Wu's admiration. In order to support their hard work, Lu Wu added a new feature to the forum: Forum Post Rewards.

In other words, as long as the posts on technicalities were acknowledged by the players, they could use this feature to reward the original poster of the forum post.

This decision was made by Lu Wu to encourage the players' creativity, and at the same time rapidly develop the player's skills and talent.

But Lu Wu had no idea whether the reward should be in a new type of coin or soul coins, so he posted a message on the official web forum to ask the players for suggestions.

The players' responses were very unanimous and all of them chose soul coins.

All the players were still desperately longing for more soul coins.

A player even went so far as to post a topic on analyzing the price value of soul coins in the forum. This made Lu Wu speechless.

“Based on my data-backed calculation of soul coin value, I realized a terrifying fact...”

Broke_Trash’s original post:

“First of all, this is not a technical post. This is just a scientific analysis of an astonishing truth that was brought up by the game, Battle Online, which does not have any official top-up option for soul coins.

I shall first analyze our existing coins as compared to the soul coins for all of you.

According to the data (see graph), Dragon Nation’s commodities have an annual price increase of 2.9%. Based on this trend, let’s take five million as an example, in 10 years’ time the value will be equivalent to 3.75 million in today’s value.

But if we calculate based on the real price level, the actual prices of Dragon Nation’s commodities this year have increased by 5.4 times compared to the end of 1996. In this case, the annual increase is about 8%!

So if we calculate based on the real-time price increase, the five million after 10 years is equivalent to 2.31 million today.

But (knock on wood), if we calculate the printing speed of banknotes in our country, the annual growth rate is about 16.3%. With this, five million in 2329, which is 10 years later, is only equivalent to 1.1 million today!

At the end of the analysis, he took a deep breath and let out a horrified sigh.

A few million yuan disappeared just like that, and he wanted to cry. (Oh, my bad, I am a poor man without five million. Phew, so close to facing such a huge loss!)

Next let's analyze our soul coins.

Since the soul coins have just been released a few months back, the extent of its calculation is not that big.

However, one thing is clear to everyone: the value of soul coins keeps on increasing. Although this is closely related to the demand of rich players, but (knocking on wood again) if you think that only the rich players are contributing to the value increase of the soul coins, then you could be very wrong.

I'll ask only one question, have you all thought about spending money in-game?

My monthly salary is only 85,000 yuan, which is considered lower than the average income level in our country, but I'm still spending money in-game all the time and my friends are also spending cash to buy soul coins. Hence rich players are one of the reasons for the increase in the value of soul coins, but more importantly, there is a huge number of mildly rich players in the game.

Coming back to the topic of soul coins rising in their price value...

Since I joined the game ten days after the server opened, I was unsure of the earlier price of soul coins, but I've done a little research on that.

The price of soul coins in the first server was first successfully bid on by a player named Ye_Xueer_is_the_cutest. The initial price of the soul coins was 300 yuan.

But within only ten days, the price of soul coins had soared to 800 yuan with an increase of more than 2.6 times more than the initial value.

However, this is not the end. Although the price increase of soul coins is not that steep now, it's approaching 1,000 yuan already.

What does this theory show? It means that even if the soul coins are left aside after being bought, this asset of yours would far surpass the price

increase of our commodities.

Of course, this only holds true if the game is operating continuously (To add on, this broken game is really fun. As long as the Battle Online Corporation continues to operate, I will continue playing!)

Lastly, I am hereby attaching my price forecast which shall be validated after ten years:

Based on my assumption of this game, it will definitely become viral all over the world. If that day really comes (great warning ahead).

There will be a new universal currency in the world. Its value can even be said to increase steadily and can be used all over the world. It may also be exchanged with the currency of any country. Isn't it astonishing! (Note: I'm not talking about a worldwide common currency!)

That universal currency will be soul coins!"

As soon as this player's post of analyzing the soul coins appeared, it had caused a commotion among the players.

Crayon_Shinchan: "I wanted to challenge the writer but then I noticed that my knowledge was so limited, so I'll just say that he is amazing."

Watermelon_Taro: "My salary is only 38,000 yuan and is bordering the poverty threshold, even so I have managed to spend money in-game several times. I agree with the author on this!"

Popeye_The_Sailor_Man: "To be honest, I also have the same idea as you, but it feels kind of absurd. Anyway, I will mark this first and come back to this post in ten years."

Xueli_The_Strongest: "It can only happen if the game goes viral across the world~ But I support this prediction, I'll stockpile soul coins first and wait for their value to increase!"

I_Am_Not_Beili: "Haha~ I'm marking this too... we shall wait and see!"

Wand_Making_Mage: “I’m convinced by you and am ready to invest a huge sum. Please leave your address so that if I go broke I shall come and find you!”

The original author replied to Wand_Making_Mage: “Well if you happen to make a profit, will I have any bonuses? (shiny eyes!)”

Chapter 105 - Soul Coins

Transaction Center

The post by Broke_Trash also got Lu Wu thinking.

At first, Lu Wu found this post absolutely absurd, but then he gave it a second thought.

If the game Battle Online really does become famous worldwide, players from every country would choose to use their local currency to spend money in-game to exchange for soul coins. That player's words would be true then, soul coins would become a global currency!

By thinking that way, Lu Wu realized an enormous bug in the game, too.

The game had no well-secured transaction protection system.

For example, the 500 soul coins that Lu Wu sold to Ye Xue'er back at the beginning. It was, in fact, unsafe and he could have easily been duped.

Although there were many guaranteed transaction platforms currently, their complicated procedures and long waiting periods had caused most players to choose the easy way out which was to just undergo direct transaction.

Since there are only a few hundred thousand players now, the gap in all of these transactions was not noticeable just yet.

However, if what Broke_Trash said comes true, where soul coins are used universally, the huge amount of transaction value coming in every day gave Lu Wu chills just by thinking about it.

At this point, Lu Wu immediately told Bei Li what was on his mind.

Later, the two of them started discussing how to systematize this transaction process.

After three hours of discussions, Lu Wu and Bei Li ultimately finalized the new function to be introduced into the game called the Soul Coins Transaction Center.

Though it was named the Soul Coins Transaction Center, Lu Wu was not selling soul coins on his own, it was to protect the safety of the players when they were trading soul coins.

This function's existence equated to that of a middle-man.

Which means if Player A and Player B wanted to trade soul coins, the seller and the purchaser must first keep their cash and soul coins with Lu Wu simultaneously. Then, Lu Wu will hand them to the respective players.

With a procedure involving Lu Wu, the process would be guaranteed safe.

However, since the Soul Coins Transaction Center was now online, Lu Wu followed the old rules and added a service fee.

In order to prevent the players from feeling too burdened by the additional fees and thus choose to trade directly, Lu Wu only set the service fee at 1%.

To him, soul coins were no doubt more important than money, so the 1% was charged on soul coins instead of real coins.

Lu Wu could have chosen to take 1% from both sides, but his craving for real money was becoming less and less. After he started cultivating, he knew that he would achieve worldliness someday.

For the current Lu Wu, he just needed enough money to live on, and maybe one day he wouldn't need them at all anymore.

But the value of soul coins would never decrease for Lu Wu even when he becomes stronger.

After finalizing the solution, Lu Wu opened a top-up path on the website and registered a virtual online account to store the player's cash.

Lu Wu originally planned to spend another 30,000 yuan to buy an online artificial intelligence customer service bot, because the transaction value would only grow larger to which he would not be able to handle alone. However, during such a crucial time, Bei Li the all-around helper settled everything.

She copied the information of this account into the artifact directly before connecting it to the internet by a higher-powered artifact, thus realizing the real-time transaction of the players.

Through this, not only did the effectiveness increase significantly, the players barely have to wait as well. As soon as the Soul Coins Transaction Center receives the cash transfers, it would process it automatically and top-up soul coins in the players' backpacks within seconds, while the cash would be connected to the internet by the artifact and transferred into the sellers' accounts directly.

Right after Bei Li made sure this feature would not crash, it was implemented into the game.

Regarding this new feature, the forum was flooded by the players' compliments.

Invincible_Loneliness: "Great! I got duped a few times trading soul coins in a group before. After that, I could only use my reputation as a guarantee to let other people give their soul coins first before I pay. But now that we have the Soul Coins Transaction Center, I won't have to worry about this anymore~ Hehe~ Keep the soul coins separately!"

Ye_Xueer_is_the_cutest: "Great! Quick and easy, finally the officials are doing something right!"

Peppa_Boar: "Not bad~ Not bad, but I don't understand why the Soul Coins Transaction Center has been launched already but the top-up option for soul coins is still not yet available. I'm beginning to worry if the Battle Online Corporation is going to stop operating (funny)"

Crayon_Shinchan replied to Peppa_Boar: “They’re using love to generate electricity and the power of love is never-ending. So how could they possibly collapse (funny)!”

Priest_Baiyue replied Crayon_Shinchan: “Speaking of love, I have to mention something. I remember there was once a guy named Lee Xiaoyao who asked me whether I believed in love, then I said I trust science. Because of that, this brat kept chasing after me to beat me, this son of a bitch (funny)!”

Crayon_Shinchan replied Priest_Baiyue: “Baiyue Xiu’er, sit down right now!”

Hand_Tore_Ghostie: “I feel like the game content is getting more and more exuberant. I am full of anticipation as I watch this game grow~ Way to go!”

Gold_Farmer_Monster: Cool~ “This saves a lot of time for me. The extra gaming time can be used for laboring, gonna give it a like!”

Xueli_The_Strongest: “Happy~ When I saw the analysis done by Broke_Trash, I thought of this problem already because the in-game soul coins trading had no safeguards, and the officials did not provide a way to top-up. This was indeed a snake in the grass. But I never thought that Soul Coins Transaction Center would be available the next day, gonna give a like to the officials~! Also, what about topping-up? Not gonna launch it yet? Are you challenging me to take you guys away with a Shadow Step and a Blood Slash?! (furious)”

...

Other than the players’ compliments, during this stage when the Soul Coins Transaction Center went online, Lu Wu was also actively collecting all the players’ advice in the forum. He then further level-upped the functions in the Soul Coins Transaction Center by adding a Sale Mode which resembled an auction.

This meant that players didn’t have to search for buyers for the soul coins they were selling anymore. They just had to display their soul coins in the

Soul Coins Transaction Center in the form of products and provide the ratio they want to sell.

Same goes to the purchasers, having this Sale Mode meant that they did not have to search for sellers anymore. When they wanted soul coins, they could top-up cash in the Soul Coins Transaction Center and find a ratio they thought was suitable for purchasing.

This had undoubtedly saved the players a lot of time. It could be said that this function's existence had benefited both the players and Lu Wu at the same time.

Although the 1% charge was small in proportion, as long as the number of players kept increasing, the transaction numbers would grow.

When it came to the later stages, daily transaction numbers would be a source of princely income for Lu Wu.

Chapter 106 - The Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament

After launching the Soul Coins Transaction Center, Lu Wu continued designing the game's content again.

The number of players had reached 600,000 and the 100 fortresses he prepared within the Artifact Channel were completed.

Lu Wu decided to officially put them to use by establishing the first Guild Hegemony Tournament.

Regarding this, Lu Wu phoned An Manman to tell her about his thoughts.

After some discussion between the two, An Manman stated that the Shark Streaming Platform would launch the tournament's preparation stage immediately and Lu Wu would be informed once everything was ready.

While An Manman kept herself busy preparing for the tournament, Lu Wu also started the tournament's promotion.

After this update, the players discovered a new computer graphic when they went online.

With the eerily stormy background music playing, the scene slowly unfolded.

The scene showed a brown, earthy desert and 100 mighty fortresses appeared vaguely amidst the sandstorm. The atmosphere was sorrowful and deserted. Then, an old voice could be heard,

“On this land burned by blood and flames, 100 fortresses that symbolized the highest strength and peak of power have once again received the opportunity to awaken...”

The scene then zoomed away. The fortresses became smaller from the players' point of view and golden thrones appeared above each of these fortresses.

The old voice sounded again, "There is no real invincibility, no forever winner, and the last ruler had already left..."

Right then, black, blurry silhouettes appeared above every throne.

"Only the mightiest can take over the fortresses, rule the armies, and be crowned as the new hero!"

When the voice faded out, the scene transitioned between fortresses of different architectural styles, showing the structure of the fortresses to the players clearly.

"The Battle of the Hundred Fortress City... Who will dictate the living and the dead in this world!?"

Numerous shadows of soldiers appeared instantly. With their battling voices trembling the sky, they charged boldly toward the fortresses that represented the peak of power.

"We were born to achieve and succeed, only with mass murdering on the battlefield with nine million kills can one be the hero of the heroes! Will this supreme throne belong to you?"

The old voice disappeared with flags of different colors waving on each fortress, echoing greatly in the sandstorm.

[The First Annual Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament]:

Tournament requirements: This activity will be held for six hours. Registration must be done in units of guilds with the guild having 300 or more members.

Tournament rules:

This tournament will be adapting the Fortress Obtaining Rule. Every registered guild will be transported to the Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament map after the activity starts. After ten minutes of safety protection, guild players can choose from a hundred different fortresses to challenge. (Note: every fortress has 5 million blood bars for sustainability) After taking over the fortress and the fortress flag, the guild will be the owner of the fortress and receive other guild's attacks.

Victory requirements: The guilds have to defend ownership of their respective fortresses until the tournament ends. If the fortress flag is snatched during the defending period, the defensive guild will be transported out of the fortress and become the attacking guild!

Event special bonus: This tournament cancels the 3 hour revival system to allow revival at the map's center just ten minutes after death!

Hundred Fortresses Owner Rewards:

One, the winner's guild shall receive 3,000 soul coins as a reward.

Two, members of the fortress owner's guild will receive the red title Hundred Fortresses Elite.

[Hundred Fortresses Elite (30 days red)]: Symbolizes the winners of the Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament.

Title attributes: Receive extra monster-hunting experience points of 5% and an extra 10 free entries to the Instance Dungeon.

Three, the chairman of the fortress owner's guild shall receive the exclusive purple title Lord of the Royal Fortress.

[Lord of the Royal Fortress (30 days purple)]: Symbolizes the Lord of the Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament.

Title attributes: Receive extra monster-hunting experience points of 10% and an extra 30 free entries to the Instance Dungeon.

Four, the winning guilds shall have the priority of purchasing the upcoming Guild Station.

Official announcement: The Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament activity will be live streamed and commentated by the Shark Streaming Platform. The venue of the livestream is set at Dragon Metropolis Sports Center and the tournament onlooker tickets can be bought from their website. You can also watch the real time tournament streaming and commentating on the Shark Streaming Platform!

This announcement evoked an uproar among the players.

The sudden existence of the Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament had every big guild caught off guard. Most of them spontaneously assembled meetings and were immensely accepting new members at the same time.

Many guilds had lowered the threshold for guild entrance for this tournament in order to create history in this momentous battle.

During the players' preparation period, the health potion had become the bestseller in the game shop and it was manufactured nonstop for sale.

However, the impact of this activity was way more than just these. All the guild players were hungry for the big reward, they were clear as to what it meant to win this tournament.

Even by just the bonus for level-training experience they could see how their own guild could overtake other guilds in no time.

Moreover, they could obtain the priority of purchasing the Guild Station for their guilds. This tournament meant everything to those big guilds.

The price of in-game resources had risen greatly due to this as well. The sales of one-time items in the game shop had allowed Lu Wu to earn a fortune.

But what astonished the players was that Battle Online was collaborating with the Shark Streaming Platform for the livestream of this tournament.

Many players understood that the Shark Streaming Platform had an enormous live-streaming audience, meaning that this tournament was a match anticipated by players on a national level.

Therefore, the methods of showing off their respective guilds in the tournament had also become a hot topic amongst players.

Of course, there were many solo players who couldn't participate in this activity, so they logged on to the Shark Streaming Platform directly to buy on-site tickets at the Dragon Metropolis Sports Center as support for the first ever tournament of Battle Online.

There were even players who posted analysis and predictions in the forum to dissect the strongest guilds at the current stage and predict the winning possibilities of the guilds.

There were also guilds which were too weak to take down a fortress by themselves merging with other guilds to take down the fortress together. Only after the tournament would they decide on who would be the owner of that fortress.

The ones that were planning ahead for this were not only small guilds, some big guilds were even luring the small ones by giving them benefits, hoping they would become a part of their alliance during The Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament and help them defend their fortresses.

The actual battlefield would not be as easy as they thought it would be. Every player was enthusiastically preparing for the forthcoming war on the battlefield!

Chapter 107 - His Excellency

Cangxu

After the announcement of the tournament, the place where An Manman was working at, the Shark Streaming Platform, became very busy.

Regarding the game Battle Online, the top management of Shark all looked forward to their project, which was why they prepared meticulously for this tournament. They rented the Dragon Metropolis Sports Center as the livestream venue and allowed the top emcee named Fang Ping to host the tournament.

Furthermore, they had even invited a professional band to produce a title song for the tournament as the opening show for The Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament.

Before Lu Wu could start promoting, the Shark Streaming Platform had taken the initiative to painstakingly promote on various streaming platforms by using their own money.

Because of this, more players had noticed the game Battle Online and it had once again gained popularity with the number of players increasing in an astonishing manner.

All arrangements for the tournament had entered an intensive preparation stage.

During this period, An Manman called Lu Wu, bringing him another piece of good news.

Many gaming media channels had contacted the Shark Streaming Platform to get ready to report on this tournament.

Undoubtedly, Lu Wu was excited, because the wave of media attention would significantly increase players and welcome them earlier than

expected.

The streaming of Platform173, the only platform that was available to download Battle Online, had also surged dramatically, exhilarating Wu Guoyi and made him want to ask Lu Wu out for a drink to celebrate again.

Despite that, Lu Wu declined. He was still a cat, so he counted alcohol out in order to prevent Wu Guoyi from freaking out.

But Lu Wu wasn't resting either. Once again, he upgraded the Hundred Fortresses Map in the artifact to ensure that no errors would occur on the details of the tournament. He had also begun to set some easter eggs in the game together with Bei Li.

For instance, there was a little golden dragon in a fortress named Extreme City. The player who obtained and consumed the golden dragon would receive a buff with five minutes of doubled attributes.

Another example would be the Invincible Grass located at the borders of the Hundred Fortresses Town that would grant players ten seconds of invincibility. There were also many more hidden easter eggs included to make the tournament more fun.

Of course, the addition of these easter eggs demanded zero soul coins, because they were all done within the Artifact Channel.

Similar to how players could infinitely revive, because it all happened in the channel, there was no need to be concerned about soul damage, too. The only big expense by Lu Wu in this activity were the rewards for the winners at the end of the tournament.

What thrilled the players was the news that Lu Wu revealed on the official website.

The guild that takes over Beiqi Fortress in this activity will have their battle recorded into the Annals of Great Battles as a video clip.

This news had undoubtedly delighted the players who longed to be the first guild in this game to win such a notable tournament.

...

His Excellency Cangxu's palace at the center of his large domain.

A white-haired but young looking man looked downward to the Ghost King and Ghost General worshipping him. He then let out a weak sigh and waved them away.

After his subordinates left, he pressed the golden scepter beside his throne. The throne slowly shifted its position and revealed a path beneath it.

Staring at this dark path, complex expressions clouded the face of His Excellency Cangxu.

He sighed once again before stepping onto the path.

Along with his appearance, the torches around were kindled, brightening the space below.

When he was a few hundred meters down, an empty cell appeared before him.

In the middle of this cell, there was a stunning woman in thin chiffon, and her four limbs were all chained up. She was held captive there.

Looking at the beauty, His Excellency Cangxu's expression became complicated. There was agony, wrath, and remorse. All his feelings were tangled together, making His Excellency Cangxu seem exceptionally depressed.

Just then, the woman suddenly opened her eyes and stared at His Excellency Cangxu.

His Excellency Cangxu's body gently trembled when the woman looked at him mockingly, "I'm ready to fight till death this time. If I succeed, I'll let you out. We still have a great future awaiting."

“Although you’ve been plotting for 10,000 years, you are no longer the Cangxu who became stronger just because it was his desire, so you are destined to fail. After all, this place was never one which you could sit in.”

The woman’s words made His Excellency Cangxu’s face gradually become ferocious, “You bitch, don’t you know how much effort I invested into this, and for whom I did all these for? You bitch! Bitch! Why must you degrade yourself like this! Are you treating me right this way!?”

The woman laughed like she was mocking herself as she looked at the furious His Excellency Cangxu, “If it wasn’t because of my sacrifice, you wouldn’t even be here, His Excellency Cangxu, let alone your position as the King of the Land of Cangxu!”

Upon hearing this, His Excellency Cangxu’s face was drained of all color. He recalled the day he became His Excellency Cangxu and what this woman in ruby makeup had said to him while crying, “If it wasn’t for my huge sacrifice, it would be impossible for you to become His Excellency Cangxu!”

Staring at the woman, His Excellency Cangxu’s heart felt a recurring pain.

Even though he was already the king controlling the Land of Cangxu of the underworld now, he was still a nobody amongst the cycle of reincarnation and could never detach himself to reach higher. He could not even protect his most beloved person.

After staring deeply into the woman’s eyes once again, His Excellency Cangxu turned around and left. But with every step he took, his body quivered a bit, as if he was tremendously tormented.

“I’ve been a shiv in other people’s hands for my whole life. This time, I want to be the one holding it! Even if it will break my bones and shatter my soul!”

After His Excellency Cangxu left, the woman finally let out her tears and mumbled quietly, “Detach? How hard could it be? If you fail, I’ll just follow you.”

Her enchanting eyes closed slowly. A tear escaped and ran down her cheek as it shone crystalline in the dark cell.

Chapter 108 - Ancient Secrets

The second day of preparation for the Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament.

When Bei Li was on the sofa watching movies with Lu Wu, her face suddenly tensed up. She then took out a small notebook from her pocket and ran through it thoroughly.

Lu Wu sensed Bei Li's mood change, so he could not hold back his curiosity and asked her, "What happened?"

"Someone wants to rebel against us!" Bei Li answered seriously after a few moments of silence.

"Rebel? What do you mean!?" Lu Wu was dumbfounded.

"Wu, since you have started cultivating, you need to know some things as well. Do you know what is up there in the sky?" asked Bei Li while raising her hand and pointing upward.

"Stars? Moon? Sun?"

Bei Li picked Lu Wu up from the sofa and pressed her fingers unto him in a way that seemed to be a rather intense massage, "So mischievous~ So mischievous~"

The cultivated Lu Wu stood his hair up and leaped, escaping Bei Li's hug. He relayed his force on the sofa and jumped onto her head before giving her a nice slap with his claws,

"Did you already forget that you're no match for me?"

This slap brought tears to Bei Li's eyes, "I forgot!"

“Say it, what is happening exactly!?” Lu Wu asked with superiority after regaining the upper hand.

Bei Li ruffled her head and spoke with a slightly solemn tone,

“Do you remember what you promised me on the first day we met?”

Lu Wu began recollecting. After intricately recalling the incidents on that day, he smiled awkwardly, “Are you referring to the matter in which I borrowed an army from Emperor Qin Shihuang to invade the underworld?”

Bei Li looked enraged upon hearing this. Just when she raised her hand to grab Lu Wu, she suddenly thought of something and kept her hands back bitterly, “You told me, ‘Do you want to help me out and become my right hand-man? We will conquer heaven after the underworld and we shall rule all three worlds!’”

Lu Wu became more uneasy after listening.

This was obviously a joke. He did not take it seriously back then and had forgotten about it after such a long time. Little did he know that Bei Li would still remember every detail of it.

“Could it be heaven?” Lu Wu questioned inquisitively.

Bei Li nodded fervently, “Since there is an underworld and there are cultivators in the human world, then there is of course a world of the immortals in heaven!”

“Do you still remember back then when you’ve asked me where the Earthly Deities of the human world went and I pointed above my head? Actually, I meant heaven.”

Upon hearing this, Lu Wu put on a solemn expression, “Then what do you mean by rebelling? Somebody wants to invade heaven?”

Bei Li shook her head, “I’m not sure of his intentions nor his identity. But he activated the Yin Talisman! That means he has become one of the Anti-Heaven Alliance!”

Listening to Bei Li's explanation, Lu Wu widened his eyes. Son of a bitch, this looks like the time when I received the Yin Talisman which allowed me to go in and out of the underworld.

"Am I part of the Anti-Heaven Alliance, too?" Lu Wu could not stay still anymore.

"Of course you're not. Your Yin Talisman had already been engraved into the artifact, so naturally you won't have the symbol of the Anti-Heaven Alliance."

"Phew!" Lu Wu let out a long sigh. He almost thought he was starting a war with the Deities and the Gods.

"But your ancestor was part of the Anti-Heaven Alliance," Bei Li's eyes squinted into crescent shapes as she said while grinning.

Lu Wu opened his eyes wide again, "Why did my ancestor join such a notorious group?"

"Because heaven is unfair!"

Lu Wu quickly replied, "What does that mean?"

"A few million years ago, heaven, the human world, and the underworld, were the three main worlds that coexisted. Among them, the human world was the strongest. Every hundred years, there would be gifted geniuses who managed to cultivate and become Earthly Deities. There were also a few kings who suppressed and overlooked the world!"

"That was the true era of cultivation. Everyone in the human world was in high spirits. Nurtured by the soul energy of the world, they were the most powerful world among the three worlds!"

"But do you know why the human world nowadays lacks soul energy and cultivation is so hard?"

Dumbfounded, Lu Wu shook his head.

“It was because those deities knew that if they don’t limit the human world’s progress, one day the human world would be leading the three worlds. So they did a despicable move by letting a powerhouse into the underworld to stop the flow of soul energy from the underworld to the world of the living through the Six Doors of Reincarnation!”

“The soul energy of the world was getting thinner, which alerted most Earthly Deities in the human world. So they visited the underworld themselves to investigate! However the cunning deities were ready for them for a long time. They disguised themselves as powerhouses from the underworld to stop the investigation from the human world, and even massacred the Earthly Deities in the underworld.”

“What happened during this period was complicated, so I won’t go into the details with you. Anyway, it was what triggered an earth-shattering war between the human world and the underworld! This battle nearly broke the underworld into pieces. If the Great Emperors of the Underworld did not unite under the Six Doors of Reincarnation, this war would have just made the underworld disappear!”

“The mistake was made but discovered too late. The deities in the world of the immortals then were like chess players, calculating every step they made. However, it was at this time when the true evil backstage manipulator appeared. The very first thing they did was to break the Heavenly Gate, cutting the other source of soul energy to the human world!”

“Until this stage, the schemes of the world of the immortals no longer mattered. After the war between the human world and the underworld, the human world was facing combat power deprivation, so there was no way they could fight against the world of the immortals again. Moreover, the world of the immortals had also gotten rid of their last hope to regain their power through cultivation as both sources of soul energy were cut off. The human world could never regain the golden era of cultivation they used to have, nor could they give birth to another invincible being like the emperors of old!”

“After that, the soul energy in the human world withered. Countless fights over sources were happening frequently. Cultivation had finally come to its end and faded out of humans’ sight with time!”

Hearing Bei Li’s explanation, Lu Wu frowned, “Then why did you say the Earthly Deities went up to the sky?”

“Living under the fear of soul energy extinction, some Earthly Deities chose to betray humans and entered heaven, becoming the underdogs of heaven! The other Earthly Deities who refused to give in left the domain in search for an opportunity to revive the humans’ glory days.”

“What about the human emperors? Weren’t they immortal as well? Where did they go?”

Bei Li shook her head, “I told you everything I could tell you. You should not know more than this. You won’t gain any benefit by listening to more of this because your soul is too weak, hence it is impossible for you to keep this secret.... nonetheless, let me tell you something. If you want to be the ruler, then behind the world of the immortals...”

Out of the blue, Lu Wu quivered while listening. He then bent over on the sofa and moaned painfully.

It was because he felt his soul throbbing with pain, as if a spiky brush was combing his body over and over again.

Seeing this, Bei Li quickly took a few pieces of the spiritual rice from the artifact, crushed them, and fed them into Lu Wu’s mouth.

Soul energy charged within his body and suffused throughout. The sharp pain ceased and Lu Wu slowly opened his bloodshot eyes.

Lu Wu’s face was plastered with fear, but doubts still filled his heart to the brim.

He knew he could not listen anymore. Bei Li did not lie to him. Knowing too much would really get himself killed.

Chapter 109 - The Secret Of The Zombie Spirit Sect

What Bei Li said made Lu Wu realize that there were so many secrets hidden behind this normal-looking world.

“Wu, don’t you worry too much. Just relax and focus on your game. You need to know that you are now controlling the most talented human beings in the three worlds who were once even feared by the world of the immortals. In addition, you have the artifact to help you... your future will be earth-shaking, so you don’t need to be afraid of any forces!”

Lu Wu nodded at Bei Li’s comforting words. Just like she mentioned, as he was now armed with the artifact and in charge of the most gifted clan, if he gave himself enough time, nobody would be an obstacle on his path to success!

“So, someone wants to rebel against them now?” he ventured to ask.

Bei Li nodded, “It is most probably a force from the underworld. I’m unsure about his intentions, but you’d better stop this dangerous action right away!”

“Why?”

“The power of the human world and the underworld cannot be compared to heaven’s for now, let alone endure a big war. His thoughts were too simple. Not only is he destined to lose, he could also be an encumbrance to the other two worlds!”

Lu Wu drew in a deep breath, “What should I do?”

“If he wants to rebel, he will need to use the Yin Talisman to travel to the human world and find the right opportunity. I will sense him once he passes

the Six Doors of Reincarnation. Then, I will inform you and plan a plot for you!”

Lu Wu gave a hard nod after hearing this.

...

The underworld, Burial Grounds.

After the cataclysmic war between the Demonic God and Hiderigami, this land where the deceased used to rest in peace had turned into ruins.

Right now, the silhouette of a player was walking on the cracked land and at the same time, his sight shifted continuously, as if he was searching for something.

After lunging over a slanted stone pillar, Hu He’s face was lit with delight. He rushed to the remains of a Bone Spirit that was covered by rocks with only half an arm visible.

With little effort, he cleared the rocks and revealed the Bone Spirit warrior underneath.

Then, he began picking on the Bone Spirit’s body for some usable items. After that, he wandered around again.

After two hours, Hu He appeared outside the parameters of the Burial Grounds.

After locating an empty area, Hu He opened his channel and poured all the bits and pieces of the Bone Spirit he collected onto the floor.

Then, he opened his photo gallery in the game and searched for the photo of the Secret of the Zombie Spirit Sect which he took in reality.

Staring at the ancient book, a glimpse of anticipation glowed on Hu He’s face.

Hu He was different from a lot of youngsters in reality. He believed in the existence of gods and cultivators because his grandfather was a cultivator.

Hu He could remember that his grandfather was weird and isolated. He spent his whole life in the straw hut which he built at the mass grave behind their village and stayed there throughout the year. He would not have come home if nothing special happened.

However, during a visit back to the village, this abnormal grandfather totally shocked young Hu He for the rest of his life.

It was the summer holidays of that year when Hu He went back to visit his grandparents with his parents. In order to surprise his grandfather, he hiked up the mountain alone and went to the mass grave that his grandfather frequented.

Because of that, he discovered his grandfather's secret.

When he secretly arrived at the mountain and went near the mass grave, he noticed his grandfather and decided to run up and surprise him.

But as he got closer, Hu He horrifyingly found out that his grandfather was holding some broken limbs covered in fresh mud and was drawing something in the air excitedly.

Young Hu He thought his grandfather had murdered someone. At the same time, due to the immense terror he felt, he stood a short distance away, staring dumbly, but his grandfather never noticed his presence.

Then what happened next left Hu He stunned.

As his grandfather drew in mid-air, the broken limbs slowly recombined, forming a two-meter high giant zombie.

Seeing this, Hu He could not sit still anymore. It was then his grandfather's eyes noticed and shone with fury. He turned, pointed, and the zombie-giant jumped onto him straight away.

Hu He still remembered clearly that the zombie's shiny black nails were only a few centimeters away from his neck. If his grandfather did not stop the zombie in time, he believed that he would have died.

Hu He bawled his head off then while his grandfather quickly shushed the zombie away and held him in his arms. While he was comforting Hu He, his eyes were full of anxiety, too.

Since then, he knew that his grandfather was not just an ordinary human.

From that day onward, due to his curiosity, Hu He would find his grandfather during every holiday.

Perhaps he was influenced by superhero movies and comics. Hu He thought that he may have an extraordinary family background, and he could have inherited those kinds of supernatural powers as well.

His grandfather did not keep anything from him anymore. He told Hu He that his ancestors were cultivators of the Zombie Spirit Sect, mastering the secret magic of zombie summoning, zombie awakening, and zombie assembling.

Young Hu He once told his grandfather excitedly that he wanted to learn and cultivate, too.

Although he would occasionally show off some skills to his grandson, priding his prestige as a grandfather, when it came to Hu He's passion in cultivating, he remained very stubborn and refused firmly.

Hu He tried every possible way but still failed to learn the secret method of cultivation from his grandfather, which unquestionably put him in low spirits.

However, when Hu He was 23, he received shocking news while he was in university. His grandfather was ailing and wanted to meet him for the last time.

Hu He hurriedly rushed from another city to meet him. When he met him, he terrifyingly found out that his grandfather's face was as pale as ash. Like a rotting old tree, he reeked of death all over.

Sensing Hu He's arrival, the old man gained some strength and held his hand when he approached the bedside and said, "Little He... this is why I never agreed to let you cultivate... I don't want you to end up miserable like me."

Seeing this old man who loved him to the bone, Hu He's tears trickled down his face.

"If you want something... you must give something in return... now that you know the consequences... the answer that you longed for... grandpa has left it below the straw hut... you're all grown up now... how you will choose... is not up to grandpa anymore."

After saying this, Hu He's grandfather shut his eyes forever.

Heartbroken, Hu He found this Secret of the Zombie Spirit Sect while tidying up his grandfather's belongings in the straw hut at the mass grave.

At that moment, Hu He hesitated. He wanted to cultivate. It was his dream since he was young. But at the same time, his grandfather's advice appeared in his head once again.

Finally, with the mindset that he would just give it a try and not actually cultivate, Hu He read the ancient book.

Chapter 110 - Zombie Forgemaster

Ever since then, Hu He would spend a lot of time understanding the Secret of the Zombie Spirit Sect, but he did follow his grandfather's warning of not cultivating.

As for the reason why he wanted to test the power of this ancient book in the game, it was due to a bizarre event that he noticed in the game yesterday.

That day when he was claiming new turf in the Naraka Instance Dungeon with his team, they met an elite monster named Zombie Fire and were attacked by it.

Being the assassin on the team, Hu He swiftly moved beside Zombie Fire while it was attacking, searching for a chance to attack.

Unexpectedly, Zombie Fire suddenly changed its attacking direction and charged toward him.

The sudden attack cost almost half of his health and another attack followed immediately.

Just when he was about to be killed, he found that there was a fiery red bead under Zombie Fire's left underarm.

As he was very familiar with the Secret of the Zombie Spirit Sect, Hu He recognized this bead. It was named Leakage, a weakness point deliberately left by the Zombie Forgemaster.

When a zombie spirit is successfully created, they will automatically take in Yin energy from the world, cultivating and progressing without being noticed. Through this, ferocious spirits could easily be born. Leakage was purposely made to prevent the zombie spirit from attacking their owners, thus giving the Zombie Forgemaster extra protection.

If it was only that, Hu He could regard it as a coincidence.

However, when his dagger cut open the red bead, the scene astonished him.

Gusts of thick black fog escaped from Zombie Fire's underarm after the bead cracked, causing it to slow down its motion and ultimately saved Hu He from this deadly attack.

The discharging of zombie energy was indeed identical to the records in the ancient book.

Was Zombie Fire made by a Zombie Forgemaster? Hu He seemed extremely shocked.

After the zombie energy was discharged, Zombie Fire was easily killed by his team due to the great reduction in its strength and speed.

However, Hu He found all of this strange.

Why did the same forged-zombie appear in the game as recorded in the ancient book? Was the founder of this game also a descendant of the Zombie Spirit Sect? Is this why he added the same easter egg in the game?

Even Hu He himself thought that his hypothesis was unreasonable, but he just couldn't shake it off.

If his guess is correct and the game's founder is indeed a descendant of the Zombie Spirit Sect, then he might be able to use the secrets of the Zombie Spirit Sect in the game.

He wouldn't dare to learn them in reality, but since he did not have to worry about his body getting damaged in the game, Hu He went to the Burial Grounds without any pressure in order to prove that. He started to search for body remains, trying to make a zombie out of what he learned from the ancient book.

...

Looking at the remains on the ground, Hu He waved his hand and the photos in the gallery started to flip by pages.

He built the zombie while referring to the ancient book. Then, he followed the method recorded in the book to summon a spirit by using his blood. He tried again and again according to the procedures.

Although he had read the ancient book many times and the graphics of zombie building were already very familiar to him, it wasn't until he actually tried it when he realized that it was so much harder to do it.

After a few trials of building and summoning, Hu He was discouraged by his failure to awaken the zombie spirit, leading him to think that perhaps he was being too sensitive.

According to his grandfather, they were probably the only bloodline left from the Zombie Spirit Sect. It was impossible that there were other descendants, let alone them being the game's creators.

Unwilling to accept his results, Hu He decided to try one last time. If he failed again, he would give up.

So he built it again by following the method in the ancient book.

But just as he had expected, he failed again.

The zombie spirit was still not awakened.

Disappointed, Hu He completely gave up as he did not want to waste any more time. Just when he was about to leave, the sound of the game's notification rang in his ears.

[Permission to create a new character class: Zombie Forgemaster (Note: Once you choose this, you may not give up on it. This character class is a systemless growth progress, so you will need to learn everything on your own!)]

There really is a hidden easter egg! So my guess was correct? Hu He's face was full of surprise.

...

Actually, as soon as Hu He started building the zombie, Lu Wu and Bei Li already noticed him and the Secret of the Zombie Spirit Sect in his gallery.

This player was portraying strength beyond what the artifact had given and Lu Wu was totally astonished by him. He thought Hu He was also a cultivator in real life.

However, Bei Li's inference was different. For her, Hu He's zombie forging techniques were far too amateur. He did not even master the basics as a Zombie Forgemaster and his soul strength was like a normal person's. He was a total stranger and could not even be considered as a cultivator.

However, his actions sparked Lu Wu's curiosity. So he asked Bei Li if this kind of power could be progressed digitally under the artifact.

According to Bei Li, Hu He's zombie forging skills was probably a branch of a cultivation system in the underworld which was popular there. Since there was no related data saved in the artifact, if it were to be digitized, the future progress of this character class would be unknown, but most probably the result would be this account going astray.

After all, character classes like the Cursed Apostle and the Rune Master were created out of years of collection created by other clans in the underworld.

So this Zombie Forgemaster could not be compared to the other character classes in the system. Furthermore, this player was a complete clueless rookie. Even if he changed his character class, he would only be slightly stronger than his original one, the assassin. There was no way that he could beat the other specified character classes in the system.

However, Lu Wu still hoped that this player could grasp this self-exploration path, providing the game with one more varied progression path. Nonetheless, as he was not in a position to decide, he gave the player the chance to choose.

After all, Lu Wu's vision for the game was to provide freedom to the players, allowing them to unleash their own potential. Therefore, the players would always surprise him.

...

Looking at the game notification, Hu He's heart pounded with excitement, wanting to confirm immediately.

However, he hesitated.

His initial aim was to become a Cursed Apostle, mastering the powers of the Naraka Realm. But this character class came with a term that said no giving up, so there was no turning back once he had made his choice.

Moreover, this game did not allow account deletion and restarting. So the outcome of his choice was a great sacrifice.

It was then Hu He's grandfather's face appeared in his mind.

Although I can't cultivate this in reality, I could inherit my grandfather's mission and follow his footsteps in another form if I choose this character class.

Right after that, Hu He's eyes glowed with firmness, and he chose to confirm.

[Server Announcement: Congratulations to player Hu He for creating a new character class, Zombie Forgemaster. Hidden reward received: 500 soul coins (untradable)]

Once the notification appeared, all the players in the server were in an uproar.

Chapter 111 - The Zombie Forgemaster (Part 2)

The gamers had only heard that they could advance into a hidden character class by chance.

Creating a new character class was something the gamers did not even dare to think about. However, the Server Announcement made the players realize that one god-like person had succeeded in the act and had been credited in the game as a reward.

All the gamers entered the game's forum and were crazily asking about it. All of them wanted to know how the player did it.

All of a sudden, the name Hu He was constantly being mentioned in the forum.

Meanwhile Hu He, who was staring at the Data Menu in front of him, was still in shock.

[Zombie Forgemaster]:

Class description: A Deathwalker that can create a new life from the body of a dead soul. A powerful Zombie Forgemaster is a master at zombie refining, zombie controlling, zombie awakening, zombie summoning, zombie assembling, zombie forging, zombie spirit parasitism, zombie spirit back-feeding, and other dark capabilities.

Class upgrade: Unsystematic advancement template, thus self-exploration needed.

Class specialty: The stronger the corpse, the stronger the spirit of the forged zombie. (Note: The stronger the corpse, the harder the forgery is.)

Looking at the menu of his newly advanced character class, Hu He was lost in his thoughts.

By the looks of the description, this character class seemed to have a great potential to be developed. At least there was one thing that the other character classes were incomparable in, which was that the strength of the zombie spirit was not limited by one's self. As long as he could obtain the corpse of a powerhouse and manage to refine it, he could definitely kill enemies of higher levels even if his level was low.

Don't tell me that I will need to go on the path of digging up and robbing graves to find the body of a powerhouse?

Thinking of this, Hu He did not know whether to laugh or cry.

His grandfather had been staying in the mass grave for his entire life and now he was going to be a gravedigger in the game. The specialty of this Zombie Spirit Sect was really spectacular.

However, his childhood experiences had turned him into an extremely brave person. He was not afraid of evil spirits like zombies or ghouls at all. Not to mention that this was just a gaming world, hence there was no need to worry too much.

After considering the direction of his future development, Hu He's gaze fell to the remains on the floor which he had failed to put together, revealing a hint of perseverance. He then opened the ancient book again and started to assemble according to the steps in the book.

By relying on the experiences he had accumulated from each failure and the rich theoretical experiences he gained from reading ancient books, a cloud of faint black vapor finally appeared on the remains after he had put together the pieces thirty-two times. Then, the black vapor was slowly absorbed into the skeleton.

After the remains were being nourished by the black vapor, the gap between the bones at the joint areas automatically adjusted and solidified. Then, a weak soul flame erupted from the skull of the skeleton.

“I did it!” Hu He shouted excitedly.

[Zombie Skeleton Warrior (Grey)]: A failed zombie forging product that was made out of the remains of the bones spirit, broken bones warrior, and skull walker.

(Note: Over time, all zombie spirit creatures could absorb Yin energy and grow independently. The higher the quality of the zombie spirit, the faster it would grow.)

(Note: The quality of the zombie spirit creatures are divided into six stages. From the lowest to the highest stage are respectively grey (inferior), white (normal), blue (excellent), red (rare), purple (epic) and black (legendary).)

Strength evaluation: Physical strength (Level 28), attack speed (Level 2), attack power (Level 2).

Zombie spirit enchantment: None

Zombie spirit’s specialty: Slow-witted (Poor refining skills would only retain the original physical strength of the corpse. It could not stimulate the real power of the zombie spirit.)

Judging from the data, the forging of this Zombie Skeleton Warrior was a total failure. But Hu He was still elated as he knew that this path was really feasible.

At the same time, his desire to continue exploring the path had been aroused.

Looking at the sluggish Zombie Skeleton Warrior that was lying on the ground, a thought ran through Hu He’s mind.

After receiving an order, the Zombie Skeleton Warrior slowly got up from the ground. Then, it performed various actions according to Hu He’s orders.

The feeling of him being able to control a living creature made Hu he grin from ear to ear.

“Well... from today onward, I will be a gravedigger in the game, seeking for the body of a strong person and become someone powerful!”

Thinking of the powerful strength of the Demonic God and Hiderigami, his mind began to imagine him being lucky and found the remains as powerful as them from some relic. He then forged a superb zombie spirit and became undefeatable.

However, Hu He's face froze when he thought of this.

Suddenly, he remembered a very important thing. Cha Na's head seemed to be still hanging on the fortress gate after the Christmas Battle!

Hu He's breaths became heavy and his eyes began to glow.

It would be the best material to forge a zombie if he could steal it. By then, he would put it together with a body and perhaps forge an extremely strong zombie spirit.

But, he was still hesitant. This was mainly because he was afraid that his behaviour would be discovered and he would become a sinner in the eyes of the other gamers.

After all, Cha Na's head was a memento which marked the defeat of Liuli District. It had a symbolic meaning.

Hu He was torn and he remained silent for some time.

After pondering over and over again, Hu He was still reluctant to let go of the opportunity to obtain Cha Na's head. Thus, he decided to steal it in the middle of the night when there was less people around.

Is this feeling of thirst for remains an occupational disease that is in the blood of the Zombie Spirit Sect? A guess emerged in Hu He's mind.

He then laughed mischievously and walked toward the Mansion of the Dead together with his Zombie Skeleton Warrior.

A gravedigger, who was going to be spurned by many, officially embarked on his journey to becoming a Zombie Forgemaster.

.....

Meanwhile, in the forum.

Crayon_Shinchan: “Where is the god-like person who created a new character class? Come out and show your skills.”

Xueli_The_Strongest: “I really want to know how he did it. There was also no official release to explain about it and the godlike person is also not active in the forum. This is so annoying.”

Strike_Gold: “I think our guild needs this kind of technical talent (Cool).”

Peppa_Boar: “A Zombie Forgemaster? A horrible guess came to my mind. Could it be that this brat got the knack of playing corpses and hence initiated the post-credits scene in the game? (chills)”

Crayon_Shinchan replied to Peppa_Boar: “Looking at the name of the character class and your guess, images are now flooding my mind (chills).”

Broke_Trash: “Someone please get the Attributes Menu of this character class. I suspect that this brat is a murderer in real life. It’s so scary. (funny face)”

Crayon_Shinchan: “I agree. Zombie Forgemaster, come out faster. I will call the cops if you still refuse to show the Attributes Menu. (funny face)”

Chapter 112 - A Vow Before The Battle

At night, the stadium of the Dragon Metropolis was ablaze with lights.

After five days of waiting, the long-awaited Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament had finally kicked off.

As the lights gradually dimmed down, the faces of the players who were the most loyal fans of Battle Online were filled with excitement as they sat waiting in the gymnasium.

With a beam of light shining at the center of the stage, four figures of the ATC Band slowly appeared. At the same time, music started to play.

‘Legends Never Die’

Legends never die,

When the world is calling you,

Can you hear them screaming out your name?

Legends never die.

They never lose hope,

When everything’s cold and the fighting’s near.

It’s deep in their bones,

They’ll run into smoke when the fire is fierce.

Oh pick yourself up, ’cause

Legends never die.

Legends never die,

They're written down in eternity,

But you'll never see the price it costs.

Scars collected all their lives,

When everything's lost.

They pick up their heart and avenge defeat,

Before it all starts,

Thru suffer through harm just to touch a dream.

Oh pick yourself up, 'cause

Legends never die.

.....

As the music played, the lights in the entire Dragon Metropolis stadium gathered and formed the map of the Hundred Fortresses Hegemony above the crowd.

CG scenes in the game were projected in 3D form and at the same time, the gamers below cheered.

“Battles never end, legends never die. Welcome to the stadium of the Dragon Metropolis to watch the first Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament of Battle Online,” the host of the tournament, Fang Ping appeared at the center of the stage.

The surrounding lights came on at this moment, illuminating the sky. Four huge words ‘Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament’ emerged on the big screen in front of the stage.

“I believe that the loyal players of Battle Online have waited a long time for the arrival of this day and tonight, we are going to watch them compete to be one of the one hundred strongest guilds of the year! The horn of war has sounded. In between this battle of blood and fire, who will be the ultimate king? Let’s turn our attention to the big screen...”

As Fang Ping finished his sentences, the fonts on the big screen faded and the scene of the Mansion of the Dead in the game appeared.

.....

Meanwhile in the game, all the guilds were ready and waiting for the opening of the event.

[Server Announcement: Attention to all the guild gamers who have registered for the Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament. The transport array will be open in thirty seconds. Please be prepared!]

The message of the game had the entire Mansion of the Dead liven up. All the gamers were shouting in excitement.

Liu Chai of the Demolition Guild said, “Brothers, I wanted to say one thing before the battle. I’m going to take down the City of Beiqi. Do you guys have the confidence!?”

Upon hearing the leader’s bellow, all the members of the Demolition Guild raised their weapons and cheered at the same time.

Gu Yu of the Myth Guild said, “The City of Beiqi is our target. We have always been the strongest guild, from the beginning to the end!”

Chen Ziyu of the Great Dragon Guild said, “Brothers, we are different from the other guilds. Unlike them, we have no money or connections, but this time...”

Chen Ziyu glanced at the guild members and said, “This time... we vow to take over the City of Beiqi!”

Wu Guoyi of the Avengers said, “It’s time for us to prove ourselves. We have been preparing for today. Point your sword at the City of Beiqi and get ready to fight with me. Winner takes all and the loser stands small. We swear to fight till we die!”

Lu Zhan of the Slayer Alliance raised the wine glass in his hand and said, “A toast to those who are going to war with me. We are going to sweep through the battlefield and make contributions to our guild! Cheers!”

With that, all the guild members raised their glasses and downed their wine.

Yue Han of the Ground Shaking Guild said, “Golden swords and iron horses... all my warriors are excellent fighters who can fight like tigers. There is no enemy that can defeat us. If it were not us who will win over Beiqi, who else could it be!?”

.....

All the guild masters shouted their goals during the last thirty seconds of the transportation countdown.

The audiences that were watching the live broadcast outside the arena were also influenced by their burning excitement. Enthusiastic cheers broke out in the stadium of the Dragon Metropolis. They felt that lofty ambitions had filled their hearts and they were looking forward to seeing who was going to win the epic battle tonight.

There were also a large number of gamers who were watching the live broadcast of the tournament on the Shark Streaming Platform. Even those who had never played this game before were affected by the passionate pre-battle mobilization. It had even triggered their curiosity about the game, Battle Online.

The battle was about to start. Even Lu Wu did not expect that the City of Beiqi would be the target of all the grand guilds.

Shockingly, these powerful guilds that had established immortal dynasties in other games had the same goal, which was to be the champion.

An epic level battle was slowly beginning...

Chapter 113 - The Beginning Of The Hegemony

[Transportation started. Players, please be ready!]

With the announcement, gamers who were well-prepared at the Mansion of the Dead turned into white lights and disappeared in their spots.

Meanwhile, at the central region of the Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament's map, white lights flashed and all the players were gathered there.

The hegemony tournament was held on a large scale as there were 881 guilds, with a total of 634,320 players participating in it.

At the current stage, other games would definitely encounter some server failures such as lagging and other similar problems if such a large number of players appeared on the same piece of map at the same time.

However, Battle Online was still performing well and did not let anyone down.

[Event Notice: The ten minute safety protection countdown starts now. During the safe time, gamers are not allowed to leave the central region and kill each other. Please get ready for the upcoming battle!]

After receiving the message, all the guild masters began to call for the members of their guilds and they quickly gathered together.

While Gu Yu, Liu Chai, Lu Zan and Wu Guoyi were waiting for the members to assemble, they opened the built-in map of the game to search for the location of the City of Beiqi.

In the map of the Hundred Fortresses Hegemony, the City of Beiqi was conspicuous as it was the only fortress that was located in the North of the

map, whereas East, South, and West each had 33 fortresses.

As the safety countdown began, a white halo appeared on the ground. It gradually shrank as time passed.

When the white halo shrank until the center position, the game message reappeared.

[Safe time is over and the battle officially starts now. Warriors, let's advance toward the peak of glory!]

“Roar!” the gamers growled excitedly.

At that moment, all the guilds began to run wildly in four directions.

The number of gamers who hit the North was the least. It was totally incomparable to the other three directions. It seemed that everyone who was watching the hegemony tournament clearly knew that the North was the place where all the warlords were vying for supremacy and battle was at its most intense.

To the North, there were 38 guilds in total. The Myth Guild, Demolition Officers, Slayer Alliance, Great Dragon Guild, Ground Shaking Guild, Avengers, and Association of the Guardian Angels were undoubtedly the seven strongest guilds while the other 31 guilds were drawn in before the tournament in order to help one of the guilds win the championship.

They were wary of another as they ran toward the City of Beiqi. However, none of them took the initiative to launch an attack.

“Brothers~ Speed up!”

Suddenly, Liu Chai shouted excitedly and a blue halo which was quickly expanding outward appeared at his feet.

[Sea of War]: By unlocking the ability, members of that faction will receive a five percent increase in speed and two healing points per second for a duration of ten minutes, covering the area within a 100 meter radius.

The forward speed of the entire guild increased as the blue aperture shrouded the members of the Demolition Guild, slowly increasing the distance between them and the other guilds.

“All members, drink the potion!” Gu Yu shouted on the live chat channel as well.

Upon hearing Gu Yu’s order, all the guild members retrieved the Speed Potion which they bought from the shop and chugged it down without hesitation.

All of a sudden the members of the Myth Guild sped up too and were moving forward faster than the Demolition Guild.

“Fucking rich!” Chen Ziyu who saw this was undoubtedly depressed. After all, his guild was the poorest compared to the other guilds.

.....

After dashing for about ten minutes, the magnificent City of Beiqi appeared in the sight of the crowd. Gu Yu who first arrived at the City of Beiqi’s fortress gate immediately directed the members of the guild to launch a fierce attack.

After the initial attack, a line of health points numbering 4,942,381 was shown above the fortress gate.

Even though the fortress gate had nearly 5 million health points, it had no defense value. All the damage bore it was real damage. Under the attack of the Myth Guild, the health bar began to drop rapidly.

At this time, the members of the Demolition Guild had also arrived.

Liu Chai immediately roared with rage, “Crash into the place and clear them out!”

Along with Liu Chai’s roaring and under the leadership of dozens of Rune Masters, the berserkers in the front row rammed violently into the Myth Guild’s defensive line that was ready in battle array.

“Boom!”

A war broke out instantly.

The Demolition Guild and Myth Guild had been old adversaries. Thus, encountering each other made their eyes blaze with hatred and they quickly broke into a fight.

“Hold on for another five minutes and we will be able to seize the city! Dog, heal the members!” Gu Yu shouted in rage.

Upon hearing Gu Yu’s order, Sun Qi leaped from the ground. With his body floating in the air, he began to sprinkle green light of healing.

Suddenly, an arrow appeared from the front and struck Sun Qi.

The blow immediately interrupted Sun Qi’s skills. As he was falling, another flaming arrow flew from the distance and hit Sun Qi again.

The power of Annihilation burst out in an instant, killing Sun Qi in the air within seconds. He then turned into a beam of white light and was returned to the central safe point.

“Nice one!” Wu Guoyi shouted excitedly. He then patted the guild member next to him who was retrieving his longbow.

The person who shot the two precise arrows was a player named Li Lin. He had won third place in the Archery Inheritance Trial. Apparently, he was not Ye Chen who mastered the Predestined Archery.

Since the Myth Guild had seized the opportunity in capturing the city and had formed a defensive barrier in front of the fortress gate, the Myth Guild was now their common enemy.

“Brothers, let’s secure the fortress gate to help the Myth Guild get into the city!”

Six guilds who were in the siege team suddenly changed their formations. They collectively turned and attacked the players behind them, sharing the

direct pressure with the Myth Guild.

The scale of the battle gradually expanded as the number of players involved increased. The area in front of fortress gate was in chaos. Spells and skills were flying all over the place and gamers were constantly on the brink of death. They were killed even before they managed to drink potions and were sent back to the safe area as a beam of white light.

Liu Chai said, “Brothers who are at the safe area, quickly come to support after being resurrected. As for the others, let’s gather around and make our way through. We will definitely seize the City of Beiqi!”

Upon hearing Liu Chai’s roar, the Demolition Guild began to search for their own members in the chaos with great efficiency. They quickly assembled and charged forward again.

Such a large scale clash broke out at the beginning of the Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament. The viewers who were watching the live broadcast off-site were filled with satisfaction. Everyone’s eyes were staring at the screen, waiting for the fall of the gate!

Chapter 114 - Archery Competition

Although there were five alliance guilds to assist, the Myth Guild was still under great pressure as they were facing the sortie from the other six guilds who spared no effort.

Looking at the health bar of the fortress gate that had dropped more than half, Gu Yu's gaze became firm.

“Lingtian, shoot at their source of attacks to help reduce the incoming pressure!”

The long-haired man next to him nodded, took one step forward and slowly lifted his dark green Cloud Reaching Bow. He then began to aim at the Water Turrets that were located at the back of the Siege Guild's army.

As the first runner-up of the Archery Trial, Mo Lingtian's archery skill was undoubtedly powerful. Every flaming arrow released by him managed to take down a vulnerable water element Mage at the back.

Mo Lingtian's performance immediately caught the attention of the Siege Guild. Soon, assassins snuck up to him and slashed their sharp daggers toward him without warning.

Seeing this, a smile appeared at the corner of Mo Lingtian's mouth. Then, he tilted his body and the Sliding ability was activated. His figure slid a few metres forward, easily avoiding several fatal attacks.

Those assassins were shocked. But before they managed to react, the assassin players of the Myth Guild had approached them and the instant burst of damage slew them into white rays.

Mo Lingtian's eyes turned sharp after glancing at the Siege Guild army in front of him. He then ran forward through the gaps in between the players of his own guild. As he was running, he would lift his long bow from time to time to aim and shoot.

Every time after he shot an arrow, he would turn around and change his attacking position decisively. He did not even need to look at the flying trajectory of the arrow. Yet the arrow could always hit the target accurately.

His running attacks made it impossible for the assassin players to spot his location accurately. His strong killing ability had also surprised the audience.

“This is how the true champion of the Archery Trial performs! He is really awesome! Ye Chen is definitely not his rival!”

“That’s awesome! He did not even look back after releasing an arrow and could predict the next safe attacking spot. This gaming guru has been keeping a low profile. Impressive! Impressive!”

“It used to be said in the forum that assassins are mage killers. I think he is the real mage killer! He’s so powerful!”

.....

Everyone could imagine that if Mo Lingtian was born in ancient times, he would definitely be a valiant general as he had such a powerful personal ability. By just relying on his personal ability, the number of mage players behind the Siege army were constantly decreasing and all the assassins were helpless.

Mo Lingtian turned around immediately after releasing another arrow. He then walked toward a pre-selected shooting spot.

However, at this moment, a burning arrow appeared from the front.

Mo Lingtian’s face froze and he activated Sliding.

“Huh?” Mo Lingtian was stunned as he suddenly noticed that the arrow was not aiming at him. It landed at a spot which was three metres away from him.

Thus, he immediately activated his Eagle Eyes and found out that Ye Chen was running toward him with a longbow in his hand.

Upon seeing Ye Chen's silhouette, a hint of gloominess appeared in Mo Lingtian's eyes.

He was conceited with his archery skills. Thus, losing to Ye Chen in archery was a disgrace to him and he was always ashamed of it.

Mo Lingtian would've been more motivated if Ye Chen had won with his real abilities. However, Ye Chen was just a random shooter. Hence, Mo Lingtian refused to accept the fact that he was defeated by him!

Mo Lingtian's eyes revealed a trace of disdain as he saw Ye Chen running toward him. He slowly raised his long bow and aimed at Ye Chen. Then, he shot an arrow after charging.

Ye Chen who was at a distance noticed this and immediately activated Sliding. He barely managed to avoid the arrow.

Mo Lingtian was not surprised by the fact that Ye Chen could avoid his attack. After all, the Sliding ability attached to this profession was meant to use to dodge skill attacks.

As Ye Chen's silhouette was closing in, Mo Lingtian began to predict Ye Chen's movement path. He even took into account the Sliding distance this time. Then, he shot an arrow again.

However, to Mo Lingtian's surprise, Ye Chen did not activate the Sliding ability. This arrow was wrongly predicted and it landed in front of Ye Chen.

Seeing this, surprise flashed in Mo Lingtian's eyes. But deep in his heart, he was still calm.

The cultivation of the mental state was also extremely important for the cultivation of archery. Even slight changes in mentality would affect the accuracy of the arrows.

In addition, Mo Lingtian never felt that he had lost to Ye Chen. After all, he was the true archer.

By then, the distance between them was less than 15 meters. As Mo Lingtian raised his longbow, Ye Chen who was running also slowly raised his longbow.

Two flaming arrows were shot at the same time.

“Crack!”

A line of ‘-110’ bloody words appeared above Ye Chen’s head. His health points were reduced by more than half. Meanwhile, an assassin from the Demolition Guild who was at a distance was beaten by him into a white ray and disappeared in place.

At this moment, Ye Chen was undoubtedly depressed as failure by fate was always saddening.

Mo Lingtian scorned as he saw that Ye Chen was already close to his death. Once again, he pulled an arrow out from his back and placed it on the bow. He then pulled the bow and aimed, wanting to kill Ye Chen this time.

A cunning look appeared in Ye Chen’s eyes as the arrow was being shot. He immediately activated the Sliding ability and leaned back, sliding three meters forward and appeared next to Mo Lingtian.

“Daze!”

Ye Chen used his longbow as a weapon and struck a blow to Mo Lingtian’s chest.

[Got stunned by a skill (Daze Attack), remain in a daze for a second!]

The appearance of the game message left Mo Lingtian in shock. Isn’t this an ability that is cultivated by close combat character class from the Cultivation Pavilion? As an archer, why did he learn this skill?

Before Mo Lingtian could figure it out, the back of his head was hit by Ye Chen forcefully. He fell to the ground as he was freed from the dizzy state.

“You...”

Before Mo Lingtian could complete his sentence, Ye Chen yelled excitedly, “The Fallen Slash!”

Accompanied by the red flames appearing on the longbow, the blow landed forcefully on Mo Lingtian’s body who was caught off guard, resulting in 68 points of damage.

Mo Lingtian who did a double take was shocked and furious. However, Ye Chen once again applied his close combat skill and slashed toward him. He quickly activated Sliding, wanting to distance himself from Ye Chen.

But when Mo Lingtian activated his Sliding skill, Ye Chen immediately activated his Sliding skill as well to close in on him. The longbow was being held in his hand as a weapon and once again, he hit Mo Lingtian right in his face with it.

At this moment, Mo Lingtian’s state of mind was greatly affected. Even though he could kill Ye Chen who was about to die by just shooting an arrow, Ye Chen did not give him the opportunity to do so. He had been following him closely and applied his close combat skills all the way.

This made Mo Lingtian feel down and depressed. It’s a competition between two archers. Is it really fair to fight like this!?

“Ah! Get away from me!” Mo Lingtian could no longer stand it. He raised his longbow and waved.

“Once again, daze!” as the longbows collided, Ye Chen’s skill had cooled down and Mo Lingtian was stunned again. Then, he grabbed the longbow with both his hands and smashed it at Mo Lingtian’s face, turning him into a white ray.

Chapter 115 - First Fortress

Captured

After killing Mo Lingtian, a smile appeared on Ye Chen's face.

He had been very depressed after undergoing the character class advancement into a Sun Chasing Archer. Thus, he had been cultivating hard in order to improve his archery skills as he no longer wanted to leave it to fate.

However, he was really not talented in this area. No matter how hard he practiced, his efforts were in vain.

Being driven into a corner, Ye Chen almost gave up on himself. But after being enlightened by Ye Xue'er, he chose to change his path a bit and cultivate close combat skills. Coupled with the blessings of the Sun Chasing Power, the agile movement by Sliding and the close combat skills from the Cultivation Pavilion that had no character class requirements, he managed to cultivate his own path.

Ye Chen had showed his talent in this aspect. He noticed that using a bow in a close combat suited him.

Ye Chen knew that he had made the correct decision as he had managed to kill Mo Lingtian. An archer should fucking do hand-to-hand combat and an archer who could deal with close combat is the best!

Ye Chen's performance made everyone who was watching the game dumbfounded.

The comment screen was flooded with words like 'Mo Lingtian is awesome!' just now. But at this moment, everyone was totally stunned.

His creative gameplay had destroyed the worldview of many players, as an archer who needed no arrows and hit his enemy in the face using his bow to

cause damage.

“As expected, champions are champions. Brother Chen has never let us down. An archer who can do hand-to-hand combat is really awesome!”

“I finally realized that we can’t judge Ye Chen from a mundane viewpoint as he always surprises us. It’s fantastic! An archer who can do hand-to-hand combat is really awesome!”

“Brother Chen’s unpredictable gameplay is endless. The most amusing person of the year has to be him!”

“Such a breath-taking control. I’m really curious what he had experienced to be so skillful in close combat...”

“The sayings that Ye Chen could always survive a hopeless situation are not just empty talk. Several practical experiences have proven everything. Perhaps, Ye Chen is the legendary Son of Luck. (funny face)”

.....

In the Shark Streaming Platform off the game field, a wave of compliments for Ye Chen appeared on the comment screen.

Meanwhile, Mo Lingtian was staring blankly at the resurrection spot.

This battle was a great blow to him. He was defeated by Ye Chen in a head-to-head battle. How is this possible...

This failure had caused Mo Lingtian to shut himself off again.

.....

The siege war was still going on and the battle cries outside the City of Beiqi were sky-rending. The pressure of the Myth Guild was also increasing as more than half of the guild members were injured.

Just then, a loud sound was heard at the fortress gate and the whole gate shattered.

Upon seeing this, a look of ecstasy appeared on Gu Yu's face.

“Warriors, hang in there while the others enter the fortress and grab the flag!”

“Hurry! Everyone get into the fortress and grab the flag!”

All the guild masters including Wu Guoyi and Liu Chai shouted eagerly.

Without the support of the back row, the defensive line of the Myth Guild was immediately broken through. Tens of thousands of players were running madly toward the fortress, trying to stop the Myth Guild from getting the flag.

At this moment, a white flag was erected at the central region of the City of Beiqi. The players of the Myth Guild were first to arrive and began to launch attacks on the flag itself.

However, the flag did not have any health points. It immediately shattered under the attack of a few blasts of magic. Just then, the game message appeared.

[Congratulations to the Myth Guild for capturing the City of Beiqi. Five minutes of safety protection time is awarded and the guild's resurrection spot is shifted to the City of Beiqi!]

At that moment, members of the other guilds who had just entered the City of Beiqi were collectively transported to the fortress gate. The shattered fortress gate was also restored.

Meanwhile, a Selection Menu emerged in front of Gu Yu.

[Please choose a banner to represent your guild!]

Hundreds of options appeared in front of Gu Yu. After having a quick glance, Gu Yu fixed his gaze on a Golden Arrogant Dragon flag. He then clicked to confirm.

The guild players who were outside caught sight of a golden flag which was slowly rising from the City of Beiqi. A huge word 'Myth' was on the flag.

"Fuck!" Liu Chai shouted gloomily.

Looking at the countdown to the protection time on the fortress gate, they knew that they could only wait for the next round to attack.

Despite the powerful strength of the Myth Guild, the six alliance guilds were another important reason for them to be able to break into the City of Beiqi directly. They were disrupting the situation, making it extremely difficult to break out of the encirclement.

However, they knew that defending the fortress would be an uphill task for the Myth Guild.

After all, the Myth Guild had the first-comer advantage for the battle in front of the fortress gate. They were squeezing at the fortress gates, forming a small defensive circle and hence their collective attacks could not break it at once. However, they were confident that they could chase the Myth Guild out in one go upon entering the City of Beiqi which was spacious and empty.

"Brothers, let's clear these six guilds off first!" all of a sudden, Wu Guoyi spoke and all of his guild members changed their direction and began to attack those guilds that had just assisted the Myth Guild in defending the fortress.

Wu Guoyi's words had enlightened Chen Ziyu, Liu Chai, and the others. All of them led their guild members to attack the members of the six guilds along with the coalition forces, preventing them from becoming their obstacles in the next siege.

During the protection time of the fortress, these six guilds had become the targets for all and were madly slaughtered by the other guilds.

[Congratulations to the Rampage Guild for occupying Extreme City...]

[Congratulations to the Flying Guild for occupying Changwu City...]

[Congratulations to the World Guild for occupying Luding City...]

.....

As the game messages popped up one after another, the Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament was also getting more intense.

There were constantly guilds who managed to capture the fortresses and the entire safe zone was constantly flashing white lights. Every second, there were several players who were resurrected. After the protection time was over, they went back to the hegemony tournament again.

This epic tournament had made the audience enjoy themselves to the fullest!

Many low profile gaming gurus had gradually entered the sight of everyone, showing off their various operations.

Even the Rampage Guild, that was not well-known in the past, managed to withstand the joint obstruction from the other four guilds and forcibly advanced into Extreme City. They became the first who managed to take down a fortress with absolute advantage.

On the other hand, the number of viewers on the Shark Streaming Platform was constantly increasing. After the event had begun for only an hour, the number of viewers was close to ten million as compared to just two million in the beginning and it was still rising rapidly.

This would be a sleepless night for many people as their eyes would be focusing on this battlefield.

Chapter 116 - Rematch

After the tournament had lasted five hours, a statistical graph was presented on the big screen of the scene.

With the statistics, all the audience members who were watching the hegemony tournament were amazed.

According to the data, the total number of players who died in the hegemony tournament map within the span of five hours was around 5.32 million. There were 35,212 broken weapons and 34,212 damaged pieces of armor. The expenses of repairing equipment in the shop alone had reached a horrifying amount of 500,000 soul coins and the various types of potions consumed were uncountable.

The flags of the one hundred fortresses had been raised more than 3,000 times in total. On average, the fortress flags were altered a few times in an hour.

The Sky Dragon City that was located in the west had substituted ten defenders in just one hour. The battle was so exciting that the audience members were boiling with excitement.

The extraordinary epic battle entered its maddest stage at the last hour. The ferocity of the battle was constantly rising as the guilds that had not captured a fortress yet were turning insane in the end.

.....

As for the City of Beiqi which was under the spotlight of the hegemony tournament, the fortress owner had been substituted several times. Even powerful guilds like the Myth Guild could not defend the fortress for more than twenty minutes.

In the battle for the City of Beiqi, the most outstanding guild other than the powerful Myth Guild was undoubtedly the Demolition Guild.

The Demolition Guild had shown their amazing cohesion in the fortress conquering tournament, especially the personal commanding ability of the guild master, Liu Chai. They unexpectedly managed to defend the City of Beiqi for half an hour, setting a new record for the hundred fortresses' defending time.

By relying on the cooperation of the guild members, they had conquered the City of Beiqi three separate times. They were also the guild who managed to raise their flag in the City of Beiqi for the longest period of time.

Thus far, many guilds had aroused real animosity toward one another. The battle could be said to be action-packed.

During the last hour, the fortress-defending guild was still the Myth Guild.

Following the breakthrough of the fortress gate, a large number of members from the other guilds rushed in. They rushed madly toward the center of the fortress where the fortress flag was placed.

“Everyone, don't worry about the wasting of potions. Maintain your health points and defend the City of Beiqi till you die. As long as we manage to hang in here, we'll be the champion!” Gu Yu's roar was heard in the live chat channel.

If they lost the City of Beiqi again, even Gu Yu dared not guarantee that he could win over the fortress again under the other guilds' siege.

Thus in Gu Yu's point of view, this was their last chance.

To the other guilds, this was their last chance, too. Thus, their attack became extremely aggressive.

Thousands of magic spells collided within the City of Beiqi. The surrounding buildings were all destroyed and the waves of attack were still coming one after another.

As the fortress defenders, the Myth Guild had formed a circle of defense around the flag and were struggling to defend the fortress from the invaders.

The collective attack this time was different from before. While attacking the Myth Guild, they were also observing the actions of the other guilds.

After all, there was only one fortress flag. They would never give up the last chance to the others.

Liu Chai spoke, "Everyone, form the sharp blade sortie formation! Refer to me as the knife point and radiate backward! Rush in!"

Following Liu Chai's growl, the guild members quickly moved behind Liu Chai with good teamwork. They formed a sharp blade-like line of attack.

Both sides of the formations were warrior-type character classes that could fight and resist damage while assassins were all standing at the back, protecting all of the mage players in the center. They then stabbed at the Myth Guild's defensive line like a sharp blade.

At this moment, the Sea of War ability was activated. With the blessings of healing and acceleration, the Demolition Guild erupted a strong ability and tore a hole in the defensive line of the Myth Guild. They then charged toward the fortress flag.

This attack came too suddenly and it caught Gu Yu, who was defending the other side, by surprise.

Looking at the Demolition Guild that was approaching the fortress banner, Gu Yu was in a rage.

Just when the Demolition Guild was about to reach the front of the fortress flag, the Slayer Alliance led by Lu Zhan broke the Myth Guild's outer defensive line from the side and rammed against the Demolition Guild.

Even Gu Yu did not expect that the Slayer Alliance would take the heat off him.

There were less than thirty minutes left. Lu Zhen knew that this was the crucial period of time. If Liu Chai managed to grab the flag and with the

five minutes protection time, Liu Chai would most probably be the final winner. Thus, he had to stop him.

At this moment, several defensive lines were also broken. Wu Guoyi, Ye Xue'er, and the others had rushed to the central region. The last outbreak immediately took place between the six guilds.

This time, there were no alliances. As far as they were concerned, any guild who got into their sight was their enemy!

Any guild who got close to the fortress flag would immediately turn into the target of the other guilds. The war was also getting more intense.

“Boss Chai, I’ll make a way for you. Go ahead and grab the fortress flag!”

As soon as Qi Ming finished his words, he slammed the wand in his hand to the ground and several ghosts emerged from the ground. Qi Ming then waved his hands and the ghosts turned into a spinning ghost whirlwind which swept forward abruptly, making a way out of the crowd.

“Thanks!” Liu Chai turned his head and nodded solemnly at Qi Ming. The jewels on his body shone at the same time and he lunged forward like a tiger.

“I’m here! Who dares to cross!” a silhouette emerged all of a sudden and a red spiritual sword slashed forcefully, causing Liu Chai to retreat.

Ao Jian’s figure emerged at this moment!

The Myth Guild had provided Ao Jian with tremendous amount of materials to support his spiritual sword. Thus, this sword master had finally appeared in the final battle.

“I’m your rival!” Qi Ming went to the front of Ao Jian who was about to kill Liu Chai.

“It’s you!” Ao Jian’s pupils contracted.

“It’s me.” Qi Ming laughed.

“Loser!”

“Nothing is absolute. You may not get to defeat me this time!”

“We’ll see!” Upon finishing his sentence, Ao Jian waved his left hand and a purple longsword flew out from his back. He then held it in his left hand.

At the same time, Qi Ming had activated the Strength of Ghost Monster. He grew taller and the muscles on his arms were as strong as the ancient dragon. His skin was also covered in black as if he was a black demon statue.

The two cultivators crossed swords with each other once again.

Chapter 117 - The Last Craziiness

Qi Ming was no longer afraid of Ao Jian as he had also received an inheritance. He slammed the wand in his hand on the ground again and the emerged ghosts swiftly twined around Ao Jian.

Noticing the attack of the ghosts, Ao Jian waved his red sword to the front. The sword reflected a flash of sun rays and the ghosts were slayed. Then, his figure flashed and he dashed toward Qi Ming.

“Bang!”

Qi Ming remained calm in facing Ao Jian’s attack. His right fist was abruptly thrown toward his opponent, colliding with Ao Jian’s sword.

With the blessings of the double attributes, Qi Ming’s punch overwhelmed Ao Jian’s attack in terms of strength, pushing him back. He then slammed his wand onto the ground again. As the ghosts appeared, he immediately sucked them into his mouth and dark red lines appeared on his body. His physique was once again strengthened.

This time, even Ao Jian could realize that Qi Ming was no longer just a vulnerable mage, but an opponent who was worthy for him to go all out.

.....

As Ao Jian and Qi Ming were battling, Liu Chai’s figure disappeared and he was once again charging toward the fortress flag.

In order to cover Liu Chai up, the remaining assassins of the guild activated Shadow Step and followed closely behind him. All the way, they were protecting him against many murderous intentions.

The Demolition Guild’s strategy was undoubtedly successful. By abandoning all their combat power and keeping only the attacking team,

they once again swept past the tangled warfare and charged toward the fortress flag for the last time.

“Liu Chai, you will not get to conquer the City of Beiqi!”

Suddenly, a burning flame appeared at the central region and Gu Yu’s figure appeared in front of the fortress flag.

A horn slowly emerged from Gu Yu’s forehead and his body grew rapidly at a speed which was visible to the naked eyes. In a blink of an eye, he turned into a three-meter tall red giant.

Gu Yu was no longer holding back since this was already the last stage. He exhibited the Evil Body directly and his strength was greatly enhanced by relying on his inherited ability.

“Defeat him!” Liu Chai bellowed and the rubies on his body were shining brightly. He used up all of his energy and smashed toward Gu Yu who was standing right in front of the fortress flag.

He knew that he would be the winner tonight as long as he defeated Gu Yu!

“Roar!” Gu Yu was growling, too. He swung his fist, smashing it at Liu Chai’s incoming fist.

Both the silhouette stepped backward at the same time. With the Evil Body’s increased strength, Gu Yu’s power was obviously far superior than Liu Chai’s. His punch was so powerful that Liu Chai was forced a few meters backward.

That moment, blood mist suddenly rose in the surrounding area. The blood on the ground floated in the air and rapidly flooded into Gu Yu’s body.

Gu Yu slowly straightened his body and walked to the front of the fortress flag again. He let out an evil laugh, “Liu Chai, you won’t be able to go through me!”

“I can!” Liu Chai stabilized his body and launched another attack as he bawled.

In order to assist their boss to capture the flag, the remaining assassin players followed closely behind him and launched the last attack.

“I said, you can’t!” following Gu Yu’s growl, a blood-colored flame centering him suddenly rose and madly dissipated to the surrounding area.

Bloody words appeared above Liu Chai and the others’ heads.

The assassin players who were originally left with little health all fell one by one, even before they got near to Gu Yu.

“Bang!”

The two fists met each other again and Liu Chai was blasted off his feet, ending up with less than half of his original health points.

“Hold on everyone! There’s just twenty-five minutes left. I will handle Liu Chai!” Gu Yu sent out his last command in the live chat channel.

There was not much time left. The players were fighting each other outside the fortress and hence defending and restraining each other had become relatively easier. The only person who had broken through the tangled warfare was Liu Chai. He had a predisposition that he was going to succeed!

Liu Chai who was getting up again stared at Gu Yu with a hint of nostalgia in his eyes.

He did not know how long it had been since he last encountered such an exciting opponent.

With regards to the confident Gu Yu, he suddenly laughed.

“Gu Yu, I admit that you are really strong. But you still can’t beat me by yourself.”

“Oh?” Gu Yu was a little surprised.

“Have you heard of Thunder?” Liu Chai shook his numb right hand and approached Gu Yu step by step.

“Thunder? Never heard of it before!” Gu Yu smiled indifferently. He then raised his leg and stamped toward the front, charging abruptly toward Liu Chai.

But to Gu Yu’s surprise, Liu Chai did not confront him. He turned his body to the side and dodged his heavy blow.

“Flaw, lower left abdomen!”

Following Liu Chai’s yell, the ruby on his body dazzled. An uppercut struck Gu Yu’s abdomen ferociously.

This punch caught Gu Yu off-guard. He immediately staggered a few steps back.

“Hmph!” Gu Yu snorted before approaching Liu Chai again as he thought that it was just a mistake.

“Flaw, the defense on your right is weak!”

Liu Chai jumped to the left with his nimble movements and shoved his fist right into Gu Yu’s face, slamming him to the ground.

Gu Yu who could not believe what had happened, rolled over and stood up. The muscles of his body contracted and with a growl he launched another attack.

To his surprise, Liu Chai could always predict his punch and even struck back at the critical time.

Seeing Liu Chai pacing back and forth along with his fierce boxing skills, Gu Yu suddenly thought of a person.

“Are you saying that you’re Thunder!”

Liu Chai nodded and said, “You’re the first to know this secret in this game!”

“The Thunder King who once ruled during the wrestling era?” upon hearing Liu Chai’s admission, huge waves started rolling in Gu Yu’s heart.

“What else do you have? Just bring it on. You’re not my rival when it comes to one-on-one combat!” having said that, Liu Chai raised his fists and got into a fighting stance.

Gu Yu did not rebut. Instead, he nodded his head solemnly and a ball of flame was set in his eyes. He then turned his head and stared at Liu Chai.

Gu Yu’s Evil Eye Stare was his ultimate skill. It was also his strongest ability.

Thunder was caught off-guard immediately and got affected by the ability. For a moment, he was still in shock. Thus, Gu Yu rapidly went near him and ferociously punched Liu Chai in his face, lifting him up high into the air.

.....

The situation on the battlefield was undergoing a rapid change and there were only fifteen minutes left. The audience members were experiencing significant ups and downs in their hearts at this final stage.

When they thought that Gu Yu was about to win, Liu Chai demonstrated his strong wrestling ability and suppressed Gu Yu. However at the very last moment, Liu Chai was suddenly restricted and Gu Yu had gained the chance to strike back.

Seeing Liu Chai on the ground with a stunned face after he was punched, everyone who was watching the battle including Lu Wu and Bei Li thought that the Myth Guild was about to win in the game of fortress defense and gain the final victory.

At that moment, Liu Chai laid on the ground and his mind was in utter confusion. Various kinds of negative emotions emerged and memories that made him angry, sad, and desperate appeared before his eyes.

His body was trembling and gradually, he clenched his fist hard.

Chapter 118 - Thunder Liu Chai

Under the Evil Eye Stare's influence, Liu Chai's mind was flooded with memories that had made him feel sorrowful, angry, and desperate. These memories were repeatedly played in his mind like a slideshow.

What everyone, including the members of the Demolition Guild, did not know was that their leader Liu Chai was in reality the most famous wrestling genius of the Dragon Nation. He was none other than the uncrowned King of Thunder who had conquered the wrestling world in his heyday.

However, nobody knew what Thunder had suffered throughout his path of growth under the spotlight.

Liu Chai's parents had abandoned him when he was a kid. At that time, Liu Chai who had been neglected became very rebellious. He mixed with kids of his age on the streets and was often involved in fighting and stealing.

Undoubtedly, he had a dark childhood. He was often detained under the juvenile reformatory center and was seen as the scum of society.

At that time, Liu Chai thought that this was how his remaining life would be, achieving nothing and leading a meaningless life.

But one day, he met an old man who changed his destiny.

He just got out from the juvenile reformatory center that day and it was raining. As he was starving, he went to a supermarket to steal some food, but he was caught as he accidentally hit the shelf and made a sound.

He faced the old man who came to check what happened with a fierce expression. Then, he turned around and shoved his fist at the old man.

This punch hit the old man and pushed the old man a few steps back with his hands on his chest.

To Liu Chai's surprise, the old man did not call the cops. Instead, he gestured for Liu Chai to calm down and handed him the food on the shelves.

That was when Liu Chai first met him. After learning about Liu Chai's experience, the old man said something that was unforgettable to Liu Chai.

“I will adopt you!”

The old man's appearance was like a beam of light in the dark, shining upon Liu Chai who was curled up in the dark.

Since then, the old man had treated Liu Chai like his son. Liu Chai, who was originally taciturn, became cheerful after getting in touch with the old man.

However, Liu Chai's growing environment had made him into a person with low self-esteem. Although he started attending school, he still could not blend in.

Being mocked and beating up those who made fun of him was the most common thing Liu Chai did in school.

In the end, under the joint appeals of numerous parents, he was made to drop out of school. Even though the old man had repeatedly begged them, the result was still the same.

Liu Chai could still remember the trembling look on the old man's face when going in and out of the headmaster's office.

When they got home that day, he thought that the old man would get very angry. But, the old man patted his shoulder gently and said, “Don't look down on yourself, you have strengths that others do not have!”

The young Liu Chai raised his head and looked at the old man curiously. Even he himself was in the opinion that he was useless apart from being ferocious and aggressive.

“Be a wrestler. I'll teach you!” the old man smiled.

Later, Liu Chai learned that the old man was a wrestler when he was young. He then retired due to his injuries and illnesses. His biggest regret was that he could no longer appear in the wrestling ring.

In the following days, Liu Chai practiced during the day and had heart-to-heart conversations with the old man at night to learn the way of life.

Liu Chai had particularly great strength since he was young and could beat several of his peers by himself. His tough growing environment had created his resolute character. In facing the arduous training, he possessed maturity that was beyond his age.

At that time, Liu Chai's talent began to unfold. In the eyes of the old man, he was a natural wrestling genius.

At the age of 15, Liu Chai who had gone through three years of hard training registered for the amateur wrestling competition under the old man's support.

His tempest-like ferocious wrestling skills made him stand out in the amateur group and became a young genius in the eyes of the others. He then became the center of attention.

This marked the start of his glorious path. In the next three years, Liu Chai had won The Wrestling Guru Amateur Competition three times in a row. He was known as Thunder because of his ferocious wrestling skills, implying that he could defeat his opponent swiftly like a thunderbolt.

As he became more famous, Liu Chai gradually became rich. He was then attracted by the voluptuous world and eventually became depraved.

Without the old man by his side to guide him, Liu Chai got lost in this dazzling human world with its myriad temptations.

Finally, under everyone's expectation, this amateur genius stepped onto the professional wrestling arena.

At that time, Liu Chai had not trained for five months. His body condition had severely deteriorated. However, he was so confident that he even partied the night before the competition.

However, reality slapped him hard on the face. He was defeated in the first round of the competition; it was a fiasco.

In the second round, Liu Chai went on stage with great psychological pressure. Just as what the outside world predicted, he was defeated again.

The third round: Lost.

The fourth round: Lost.

Liu Chai was terminated without even playing the fifth round and that was the end of his career.

The public was seething with indignation and many negative news stories about him appeared in the media. Liu Chai was tormented and was about to collapse under the big blow.

He could clearly remember the derision he faced.

“Haha... Thunder, the future King of Wrestling!?! You must be kidding me!”

“An amateur wrestling genius who lost four rounds in a row. Hahaha.”

“Could it be that the previous matches he participated in were all made up?”

.....

However, the bad news did not stop here. A few days later, Liu Chai received news that the old man was sick and was being rescued in the emergency room.

At that time, Liu Chai rushed home like a madman. However, when he saw the grey-haired old man, he had already passed away.

Till the end, he didn't even get to see his father for the last time.

He cried for the first time in his entire life. Liu Chai suddenly felt that there was nothing left for him to linger on.

However at that moment, a doctor stuffed a note in his hand and told him that this was the old man's last words.

Liu Chai opened the note with grief.

“Do you remember what I said? You have talents that others don't. It's not horrifying to lose. The most terrible thing is that you don't have the determination to strike back and win. Do you still remember what you've promised me?”

That sentence had awakened Liu Chai who was in distress. He remembered the old man telling him that he wanted to see him win the national wrestling tournament.

Since then, the king returned.

He constantly increased the intensity of his training, pushing himself to the limits to unleash his strength. The only thing that he had to do every day was to throw a punch at the sandbag again and again.

Both his hands would bleed and formed calluses. The cycle then repeated. Liu Chai was trying to numb the pain in his heart by having the high-intensity training. At that time, the only goal in his heart was to fulfill his final promise to his father.

After the old man was buried, Liu Chai kowtowed in front of the old man's tombstone and said, “I will not lose again!”

This was his last promise to his father who was also his life mentor.

One year later, Liu Chai who once again cleared the amateur group stood on the professional group's ring again.

Liu Chai was no longer boastful. Instead, he was firm and persistent.

This time, Liu Chai had proven to the world that he was the true wrestling genius, the future king of the wrestling world.

He overcame all the difficulties that went his way and countless long-established veterans were defeated by him. Since then, he became the defending champion who had defended his position for eight years. He truly deserved to be the uncrowned king. Thus, his name Thunder was known throughout the country and the world.

However, the old man could no longer witness this. This was also Liu Chai's regret for his entire life.

.....

Liu Chai had now retired and thus his overwhelming and indomitable spirit in the past had long weakened. But at this moment, his memories resurfaced under the stimulation of the Evil Eye Stare and the most ferocious beast in the wrestling world awakened.

“I promised him that I will not lose again!”

Liu Chai who was lying on the ground abruptly opened his eyes and turned his body sideways to dodge Gu Yu's punch.

.....

In the Artifact Channel, a valiant spirit in the Spirit Summoning Palace was trembling and growling.

Both Lu Wu and Bei Li were in shock.

They never thought that Liu Chai would resonate with the valiant spirit.

However, what went beyond their expectation was that the growling valiant spirit suddenly stopped trembling when it was about to escape.

“What's wrong?” Lu Wu was filled with doubt.

“It thinks that its inheritance isn’t worthy for him. His will and the heart of the strong have surpassed the valiant spirit itself!” Bei Li spoke solemnly.

Chapter 119 - One Man Guarding

Bei Li's words made Lu Wu feel stunned on the spot.

With his mortal will, Liu Chai managed to make the Ghost General, a valiant spirit of the Ghost King level in the Valiant Spirits Palace, feel ashamed. The spirit even voluntarily gave up the chance for inheritance of power. His willpower was really horrifying.

“There are two types of powerhouses. The first one being those who have a strong capability but do not have the mentality of a powerhouse while the second one being those who only have the heart of a powerhouse. Regardless of their capabilities, their undefeatable fighting spirits are always as firm as a rock. He belongs to the latter category and is a real powerhouse.”

“There are thousands of ways to obtain strong capabilities but the heart of a powerhouse is not something that can be built within a short span of time. Wu, he is a real powerhouse! Congratulations!” Bei Li turned her head and looked at Lu Wu with a smile.

.....

Seeing that Liu Chai had resisted his Evil Eye Stare and was able to avoid his deadly attack, Gu Yu was petrified.

This skill had always worked and things had never gone wrong. However, his skill failed at this critical moment.

Gu Yu did not know how Liu Chai did that as it was a power from the Demonic God!

Meanwhile, Liu Chai slowly stood up. He was looking at Gu Yu with a brutal stare, like a tiger that was about to lunge toward its prey. Seeing his gaze, a cold shiver ran down Gu Yi's spine.

Facing Liu Chai, who had gotten rid of the Evil Eye Stare, Gu Yu knew that he was no match for him. He immediately called for support on the guild channel. Dozens of guild members who were fighting immediately retreated and came toward the fortress flag.

Liu Chai sneered at the sight of the increasing opponents. The blood in his body was boiling at that moment. It reminded him of the olden days where he enjoyed the excitement of fighting.

Just then, the game message appeared.

[The hidden attributes of willpower have increased drastically. The ability of Sacrificial Tide has been activated.]

[Sacrificial Tide]: The last gift of the Sea God. After this ability is activated, players can offer sacrificial offerings to obtain the blessings of the Sea God Spirit.

Sacrificial offerings that were allowed to be chosen: Soul coins, equipment, health points, experience points to level up.

Note: The offerings cannot be returned!

Liu Chai slightly squatted and ignored the game message. He then waved at Gu Yu and the others who were surrounding him!

“Kill!”

Gu Yu and the others immediately charged toward Liu Chai.

Intertwining steps, side slip, concession, uppercut, swing, straight punch and powerful punch, all of these powerful skills were demonstrated by Liu Chai as a wrestling king.

He was clearly leading even though he was fighting against thirty players by himself.

Seeing this, the off-site audiences were in shock. Everyone was awed by Liu Chai's horrifying battle skills.

Loud screams exploded at the scene.

“Looking at these steps and wrestling techniques, is he really Thunder? Could he really be Thunder?”

“These familiar wrestling techniques and steps. His punches are as quick as Thunder. I am his loyal fan. I will never recognize him wrongly – he is definitely the godly Thunder!”

“Tears welled up. I have never thought that I could meet the godly Thunder again in my life. I am so touched now!”

“If this is not Thunder, I will eat shit in a live stream. I have watched his fighting championship for eight years and I have always been his loyal fan. I should kill myself if I can’t recognize him!”

There was an uproar outside the field. As Liu Chai’s body style and wrestling techniques were too iconic, he was quickly recognized by the crowd outside. The atmosphere at the scene was pushed to a climax again.

[Event Message: The countdown to the last ten minutes of the Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament starts now!]

The music of the theme song was played at the scene again. The entire Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament was coming to an end.

Finally, the defensive line of the Myth Guild had been broken through. All the guilds launched their final attacks toward the fortress flag.

In facing the continuous stream of enemies, Liu Chai leaned to one side to avoid the collision from a Rune Master. His gaze then stopped at the game message which was still in the menu.

“Sacrifice all my equipment, sacrifice all my soul coins, sacrifice all my levels!”

“Bang!”

A huge blue wave descended from the sky, crashing toward Liu Chai's position. It then surrounded him and formed a rapidly spinning blue water ball.

Inside the blue water ball, Liu Chai's limbs started to spread blue energy particles that were condensing.

“Roar!” along with a loud growl, the water ball was blown away, exposing Liu Chai who had been blessed by the Sea God.

His torso was five meters tall and his entire body was made out of translucent blue energy particles. There was a Sea God Scepter that was flashing a brilliant blue light on his back. Everyone was surprised by Liu Chai's current form.

“Roar!”

Liu Chai's figure was standing in front of the fortress flag, looking down at the front.

“Kill!”

In the last fight, no one would retreat. Everyone charged toward Liu Chai who was the only person blocking the way.

Gu Yu and the others even leaped at the same time to attack Liu Chai.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

As the huge blue fists moved, the players were one by one being smashed and flew backward.

At this time, Liu Chai stopped the onslaught of ten thousand players all by himself, showing his extremely powerful strength.

Looking at the endlessly and densely packed players, Liu Chai growled again. The Sea God Scepter behind him then trembled and instantly appeared in his palm.

Liu Chai smashed the ground with the scepter and a huge wave immediately appeared out of thin air, splashing forward.

The huge wave swept a large number of players away.

One man could hold out against ten thousand men. At this time, Liu Chai was like the God of War and had become a mountain that the players could not overcome.

Liu Chai had bet everything in this battle. The cost of sacrificing was undoubtedly huge.

However, he had no regrets as he knew he would win! Because, he was Thunder!

The battle had come to the final stage. Nobody had ever thought that Liu Chai could resist the joint attack of the six guilds.

No matter how strong their skills were, Liu Chai remained still. With the blessings of the Sea God, Liu Chai was not afraid of any attack. In each attack, he could even cause a large number of players to die and turn into white lights.

At this moment, Liu Chai was like a boss, leaving all the players helpless.

This scene was destined to be a classic. When the countdown of the last five minutes started, Liu Chai waved his scepter, causing the wave to surge and swept forward again. Liu Chai then slowly turned his body and looked at the Beiqi fortress flag behind him with a smile...

After the fortress flag was seized, all players in the city were transformed into white lights and were sent to the fortress gate.

Looking at the countdown at the fortress entrance and the flag of the Demolition Guild flying in the wind, Gu Yu, Wu Guoyi, Lu Zhan and the others were dumbfounded.

They knew they had lost...

Huge screams could be heard off-site. All of them were shouting Thunder's name.

The atmosphere at the scene had reached its climax. All the audience members stood up and shouted the name of the person who was once a king.

In this war, Liu Chai had once again conquered everyone with his powerful abilities.

The lights at the scene were dazzling. Everyone waved their hands in the sound of the theme song, venting their excitement.

“Thunder!”

“Thunder!”

“Thunder!”

The stadium was filled with the cheers of the audience.

Even on the live streaming platform, the audience's live comments had covered the entire screen.

There were even a large number of players who were shouting the slogan, “I want to join the Demolition Guild!” At once, Liu Chai had gained a lot of fans with his charisma.

As the bell signifying the end of the countdown rang, hundreds of fortresses had their different governors. A mighty throne even appeared in the air of the City of Beiqi.

[Server Announcement: Congratulations to the Demolition Guild for being the champion of the Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament and the ruler of the City of Beiqi!]

Chapter 120 - The Best Overall Performance

With the end of the Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament, the Annals of Great Battles reappeared in the game.

The golden pages of the book slowly opened. The video of Liu Chao leading his guild to take over the city and the video of him relying on his individual strength to seize the fortress flag were quickly played in the pages. There was also a caption underneath the videos.

[On January 25th of 2319, the first season of the Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament, the Demolition Guild fought under the leadership of Liu Chai. They eventually managed to take over the City of Beiqi and obtain the ownership of the fortress. This war has been recorded in the Annals of Great Battles for the admiration of later generations.]

Although the final result was beyond the expectation of most people, nobody was dissatisfied with the result of Liu Chai taking over the City of Beiqi.

This included Gu Yu. Even though he was disappointed, he was convinced by Liu Chai's performance.

.....

The figure of the host, Fang Ping, appeared on the stage of the Dragon Nation's stadium.

“Ladies and gentlemen, now we are going to vote for the Top 10 Best Performances. You will find the voting button next to your seat to vote for your favorite battle videos. As for the viewers who are watching the live broadcast outside the venue, you can vote for your favorite videos directly on the platform.”

Then, the edited battle videos were played on the big screen for the players to vote for their favourite videos. Each audience had three votes.

After the voting had officially commenced, a data graph was shown on the screen. Among the videos, the votes for Liu Chai's final personal performance video was rising at a speed that far exceeded the other combat videos. It topped the chart after a while and was pulling away from second place with a huge difference in the number of votes.

After waiting for about half an hour, the list on the big screen was finally generated.

[Top Ten Battle Shots of the Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament]

Along with the chart-topping background music, We Are Electric, that the players were most familiar with, the words of the number one video appeared.

“Ladies and gentlemen, the champion of the overall best video comes from the spectacular performance of the Guild Master of the Demolition Guild, Liu Chai, in the battle for the City of Beiqi...”

With the voice of the commentary, the players revisited the eye-opening scene of Liu Chai holding on against the combined attacks of the six guilds all by himself. He managed to defend for the last five minutes which changed their fate and took down the City of Beiqi.

This video has been acknowledged by all audiences to be the best. At that moment, Liu Chai was like a god, looking down at the heroes and capturing the hearts of all the people in the audience.

“The overall second best performance goes to the direction of the City of Beiqi. The two players, Ao Jian and Qi Ming have shown us what is extreme control. All the attacks and defenses were preempted. Such a horrifying individual ability was really scalp tingling...”

In the scene, Ao Jian's attack and Qi Ming's defense methods were emerging endlessly.

Many players were surprised after watching the entire video. This god-like fighting strategy had impressed all the players who were watching.

At the end of the video, Ao Jian united the nine swords and struck the last deadly attack. However, Qi Ming activated self-explosion at the same time. The two players transformed into white lights and disappeared at the same time. It was a draw.

This video could be considered as the model player killing technique tutorial. If it was not Liu Chai's godly performance, this video would have definitely been the best.

“The overall third best scene goes to the direction of the City of Beiqi as well. The Sun Chasing Archer, Ye Chen, used his skillful technique to convince us that an archer's close combat technique could be this amazing, leaving the opponent powerless to defend...”

As the explanation went on, Ye Chen's close combat skills were shown on the big screen again. The audiences had once again realized the horrifying close combat skills of Ye Chen.

“The overall fourth best performance is still from the direction of City of Beiqi where the battle was the most intense. Similarly, the Sun Chasing Archer Mo Lingtian demonstrated to us who a real mage killer is by taking away one life with each arrow. Only Mo Lingtian could be named as the back row harvester on the warfield...”

In the video, Mo Lingtian confidently turned around every time after he shot an arrow. Every arrow was shot accurately to the back row of the enemy like a navigator, killing them easily. It seemed that he was fooling around with the assassins who came secretly. His performance was really spectacular.

“Next is going to be our fifth place. It goes to the wonderful performance of the Rampage Guild in the battle for the Extreme City. The Rampage Guild has given the enemy a lesson on how to defeat the enemy with a lesser army...”

In the video, the Rampage Guild had managed to break through the siege of several guilds and captured the Extreme City by just relying on the power of a single guild and tactical arrangement.

“The overall sixth place once again goes to the direction of the City of Beiqi. It’s a video of the Demolition Guild defending the city. They defended the city for thirty minutes against the attacks from six other guilds. In this battle, the Demolition Guild’s performance was as if they had been assisted directly by god...”

.....

One after another, videos were shown on the big screen, rekindling the audience’s passion.

These scenes had well-shown the excitement and passion of the Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament, pushing the atmosphere of the scene to its climax.

After the top ten videos were played, the hegemony tournament was considered to have officially come to an end. In the end, Fang Ping revealed the news to the audience.

“The Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament has ended successfully. Thank you to all the participating guilds for their spectacular performances. We will meet again at the Individual Skills Battle... See you soon!”

The news revealed by Fang Ping had caused an uproar among the players.

Many loners could not participate in the guilds’ hegemony tournament. However, the Individual Skills Battle was different. This was a real carnival for all the players. The emergence of the news could be said to have given the players great expectations.

.....

Meanwhile, Lu Wu’s expression was a little strange.

The main purpose of this battle was for publicity and the outcome was extremely satisfying. When the live stream ended, the downloaded number of Battle Online at Platform173 had skyrocketed. The number of registered players shown on the artifact was close to two million and it was still increasing.

For the sake of contributing to the event, Lu Wu had made preparations to lose a lot of soul coins. But to his surprise, his amount of soul coins had increased by almost a million after the six hour hegemony tournament had ended.

The potions consumed by the players during the battle and the cost for repairing equipment in the mall far exceeded the amount of soul coins that Lu Wu had prepared. However, a lot of players re-purchased new equipment at the shop due to the damaged equipment, leading to the reinvestment of the soul coins. Lu Wu did not know whether to cry or laugh.

This could only be considered as an unintentional positive outcome.

Lu Wu was also very satisfied with the player's overall performances at the event. It made him realize how horrifying the potential of the ethnicities which once colonized the three worlds and were at once being called the fourth catastrophe.

Especially with Liu Chai in the end. He even had the rare powerhouse's heart. This was Lu Wu's biggest surprise.

In the description of Bei Li, the heart of a powerhouse was a hidden talent-level ability that even Cha Na, Pan Shi, and the others who were at the level of Ghost General and Ghost King did not have.

According to Bei Li, Liu Chai's future potential was limitless. This was because he was able to maintain the mentality of a powerhouse and not lose himself in the course of obtaining power.

Chapter 121 - An Influx Of New Players

The number of players online reached a frightening 2.6 million on the third day after the Hundred Fortress Hegemony Tournament ended and the Mansion of the Dead was crowded with wandering rookie players.

The players who were new to the game were completely amazed by how the game looked so real.

Many of them were expressing their frustration and sighing after finally joining the game as they found the game too late and they were one step later than all the others to progress.

However, this did not affect their interest in exploring the game. Characters with the most basic equipment could be seen everywhere in various zones around Beiqi.

These newbie players were asking the veteran players all sorts of questions for guidance in the forum like curious babies.

[Please give some pointers on which is the strongest character class at this point of the game...]

Strike_Seal: “Definitely a berserker! You can advance into a Rune Master which is a really strong class; you can both defend and attack. Just check out the guild master of the Demolition Officers, he’s a Rune Master!”

Invincible_Lonliness: “Even though I can’t defeat him, isn’t the strongest class at the present stage the Demonic God’s Apostles? (funny)”

A_Large_Wolfdog: “White Phantom isn’t bad either (slams table)”

Crayon_Shinchan: “The strongest class is indeed the Demonic God’s Apostle, but the strongest player at this stage is a Rune Master (funny)”

Author replying to Crayon_Shinchan: “Huh? Why can I only choose from three character classes and none of them are a Demonic God’s Apostle!?”

Crayon_Shinchan replying to the author: “Silly child, you should go look around if you have nothing to do. Who knows, maybe you’ll find it? (pats head)”

Author replying to Crayon_Shinchan: “What do you mean?”

.....

[Game novice asks, I have just reached Level 4. Where can I go to level up quicker and where is the top-up portal?]

OnePunchMan: “If you’re just Level 4, you should roam around the Mansion of the Dead and look for newly-spawned Wandering Souls to kill them. You can also team up and go to the Ghost Mountains. It’s best if you can join a small guild and ask veteran players to take you to kill monsters at a higher level region. If you have the strength, you should join a large guild, then you’ll get to go out to sea immediately~ As for the top-up portal you were talking about, I just smashed my keyboard, don’t ask why... (angry)”

Xueli_The_Strongest: “Newbies are more suited to go around the Ghost Mountains. As for the top-up portal you were asking about... (slams table!)”

Crayon_Shinchan replying to the author: “Top-up portal? Here, here’s the number for the game’s top-up channel. Please remit immediately, the soul coins will be transferred instantly (funny)”

[Game novice at Level 8, brothers please help. I just saw someone with a wolf mount. How does one do that? Do the shops not have it?]

Crayon_Shinchan: “Shut up guys. As a newbie instructor, I have to speak (slams table)! To answer the poster, the wolf is known as a zombie wolf, there are a lot of them in Liuli District. You need to let the same zombie wolf bite you to death 100 times before it recognizes you as its owner and a master-slave contract is established.”

Author replying to Crayon_Shinchan: “Is it really that difficult? (scared)”

Crayon_Shinchan replying to the author: “(slams table) How do you deserve such a flashy mount with such weak willpower?”

[I’m a game-collection enthusiast. I’m going insane by just looking at the upgrading of boats, warships, and the collection of materials for character class development! I’m longing to know how to earn more soul coins! I’m going to die without them!]

Crayon_Shinchan: “That’s easy. Get your father, mother, grandfather, grandmother, brothers, and sisters to go to the seaside and fish. You can also go to the North Rocks in the middle of the night and chop wood. There will definitely be good harvest (funny)”

.....

The novices were asking a bunch of questions in the forum. Aside from the veterans who answered the questions posed by the doubtful novices properly, there were also many trolling veterans like Crayon_Shinchan. The whole forum was extremely lively.

As for Lu Wu, he was surprised to find a number of foreigners appearing in the Battle Online forum, asking questions on the official web forum using real-time translation software.

[Played this game before returning to my country and I was completely addicted. Sadly, I realized that there was no platform to download the software after returning to my country. May I ask the officials, when will this game come to our country?]

Crayon_Shinchan: “Wait till I can knock out a bunch of sub-characters with one blow, I will give you a foreign server and start a transnational war at the same time (funny)”

Strike_Gold: “I’m looking forward to the opening of several servers abroad, but it’s unclear whether they will be with us for the Mansion of the Dead. If that’s the case, let us have a three-second moment of silence...”

Invincible_Loneliness: “I guess it’s coming soon as the game has been gaining popularity. The agents at your side may have been talking with the Battle Online Corporation so it shouldn’t take too long. Other than that, if we’re really living together under the same sky, then you guys will notice how bad the game’s experience is (funny)...”

.....

There were many foreign players who were demanding a foreign server. Thankfully, Lu Wu had already considered the matter.

After the Hundred Fortress Hegemony Tournament, there were many foreign gaming agents who had come forward to get in contact with him but solid cooperation matters were still under negotiation.

Although the three months period was reaching its end, he had already promised Wu Guoyi that he would only work with him during these three months. Therefore, he had to postpone with the agents, though the delay would not be too long.

At the same time, another problem would be posed from the influx of new players if they really open up Battle Online to other countries.

Lu Wu and Bei Li had already discussed this matter before this. Lu Wu did not have any other power plates aside from the Mansion of the Dead at that stage. However, Lu Wu could imagine how badly those foreigners would be oppressed by the veteran players from the Dragon Nation if the Mansion of the Dead was arranged for the foreign players.

However, it was not that there were no solutions, Bei Li even made a proposal.

She suggested tossing the foreign players into the same large domain of Beiqi where the forces were complex and not united.

Although the living conditions were vile, if the number of players in the foreign server exceeded those in the Mansion of the Dead, they could still

develop depending on the innate advantages even if they were a little suppressed in the early stages.

Lu Wu intended to make a decision after careful consideration of that matter.

After all, it was not a small matter. He wanted the players to be able to develop better and stronger so he would have better profits as his income was completely provided by the players.

Lu Wu was not in a hurry as there was still time before the foreign server's release. Therefore, the matter would be put aside for the time being and the current development of the game would be given priority.

The Black Sea Technology Corporation had also contacted Lu Wu after the Hundred Fortress Hegemony Tournament, hoping that Lu Wu would start publicizing the game in half a month according to the agreement because they were about to start the mass production of gaming pods for the official sale.

Lu Wu agreed without hesitation as it was good news for him. Those players who were complaining about the 12-hour shutdown of the server would have a better gaming experience after the gaming pods were released.

However, Lu Wu received some bad news from the Black Sea Technology Corporation.

According to the person in charge of Black Sea Technology Corporation, the domestic major game manufacturers had reached an agreement with the Jie De Corporation and Lu Wu was the only one who refused to accept the offer. Therefore, the Jie De Corporation was ready to make a demonstrative sanction to Battle Online after the official release of the gaming pods.

Due to the various business rules involved, the Jie De Corporation had even figured to use incompatibility as the excuse for the sanction against Battle Online.

Lu Wu thought to himself that this matter would be tricky upon hearing the news. It would definitely be bad press for the publicity of the game.

However, upon further consideration, Lu Wu knew that the players who have played this game were diehard fans. Lu Wu was confident that they would not give up on the game because of the gaming pod issue.

Lu Wu had already figured out the means of a counterattack.

Chapter 122 - Cangxu's Conspiracy

Center zone palace, Cangxu's large domain.

Sitting in the main hall, His Excellency Cangxu looked at the man kneeling before him with an apathetic expression and spoke indifferently, "Are you clear with what you should do now?"

The man below him shivered with fear. He was a default soul drifting around the Land of Cangxu without any consciousness just hours before the white-haired man before him known as His Excellency Cangxu actually roused his memories from his previous life and allowed him to become aware that he had gone to Naraka. He was terrified of these mysterious capabilities.

He did not even have the slightest thought of resistance at this moment as he was afraid that he would be thrown into the 18th level of Naraka and tortured.

The man went down on all fours immediately upon hearing Cangxu's question, "For Your Excellency to bestow me with rebirth, I am ready to work for Your Excellency with my best ability!"

"Then go. I will give you a chance to return and reward you handsomely if you complete your task well!" looking at the man kowtowing on the floor, a trace of decisiveness flashed in Cangxu's eyes.

.....

Night fell and lanterns were lit.

After the clamorous noises of sirens rang out from a distance, the sounds of disordered footsteps and the barking of police dogs became nearer.

Pattering raindrops fell unceasingly on Qin Yu as he leaned against the corner of an abandoned hospital. Gasping for breath, his face was filled with disbelief.

Pinpricks of sweat on his forehead merged with water and blood as they flowed downward while his lips trembled, his face pale.

Everything that happened in the past twelve hours made Qin Yu feel like he was experiencing something straight out of a nightmare. Everything was so real and terrorized him to the core.

Qin Yu turned his head subconsciously to look at the other end of the abandoned hospital. His vision was shrouded by hazy darkness, making him nervous and tense.

After waiting for a moment, Qin Yu finally sighed in relief as he slid to the ground with his back against the wall. His mind began wandering and his train of thought drifted to what had happened twelve hours ago.

.....

Qin Yu had just finished a day's work. He returned to his residence that he rented with his best friend Wu Hao, who was a recent graduate, to get ready for dinner.

However, when he knocked on the door, instead of Wu Hao, the person who opened the door was a tall, dark, and thin man sporting a goatee. The man looked to be in his thirties.

Their eyes met for a few seconds before that man smiled and took the initiative to speak, "You're back. Come on in."

He returned to his own home but it was a stranger who opened the door.

He even said strange words like you're back. Although Qin Yu had questions in his mind, he did not put much thought into it. He thought that the man was probably Wu Hao's guest.

But Qin Yu immediately sensed that something was wrong when he walked past and entered the house.

The house was extremely quiet. The television was turned off. The dining table was empty, the kitchen was also very quiet, and all the window curtains were pulled shut. The silence in the house was somewhat unusual.

This was completely unusual in their house when a guest was visiting.

His housemate Wu Hao would usually prepare a table of food and wait for his return every night. Everything seemed to be a bit fishy.

Qin Yu felt uneasy. He called out Wu Hao's name subconsciously and strode toward Wu Hao's room.

Goatee's voice was heard from behind Qin Yu.

He called out to stop Qin Yu from returning to his room. He then opened the door to the study and pointed into the room as he said, "Come on, Wu Hao's in here."

Qin Yu turned and looked into the study instinctively but his pupils shrunk instantly when he saw what was inside.

Wu Hao was tied to a computer chair with a sturdy rope, his mouth sealed with tape. Wu Hao's body was trembling faintly as he looked at Qin Yu with terror.

Qin Yu instantly realized that he had come home to a burglary.

Qin Yu had taken part in a few criminology research studies in school so he knew that he could not chicken out in this sort of situation. If by chance the criminal before him intends to silence them permanently and he is to surrender, then their lives could not be guaranteed.

He tightened his fists when this came to mind. He was ready to step up to this man and give him a punch on his temple as he intended to make a speedy attack and subdue him.

However, Qin Yu froze on the spot after taking one step forward.

Facing the pitch-black muzzle of a gun, Qin Yu's heart thumped. He did not expect that the criminal before him would actually carry a gun on him.

The goateed man walked up to Wu Hao and pulled the tape off his mouth before pulling out a triangular spike bayonet from his waist with his left hand.

“Nephew, if I run this knife through your body, you'll completely bleed out in half an hour. There will be no way to save you.”

Wu Hao's face became deathly pale upon hearing that and turned to Qin Yu immediately, “Brother Yu, do as my uncle says. He's not a bad person, he won't kill us.”

Looking at the hope in Wu Hao's eyes in the midst of his terror, Qin Yu cast another glance at the gun held up by the goateed man.

Qin Yu also realized that truthfully, the power to decide was already out of his hands.

Wu Hao spoke up again, “Uncle, however much money you want, we'll give it to you. We swear that we won't report you to the police.”

Wu Hao's uncle made a neutral smile upon hearing that but he didn't answer. He picked up another rope and went to Qin Yu's side.

Looking at Qin Yu's rage-filled eyes, he tied him up and said, “Don't move, I will release both of you once I get a hold of the money.”

Qin Yu got a clearer picture of the situation upon hearing that.

This man with a goatee must be Wu Hao's uncle and his motive for burgling their house was only for money.

However, he did not understand why he would set his target on Wu Hao, his own relative.

Nonetheless, that was also the reason why Qin Yu believed that they would not be killed.

Qin Yu was dragged back into his bedroom and thrown onto the bed after getting tied up.

Wu Hao's uncle bound Qin Yu's limbs to the corners of the bed to prevent him from breaking away.

Goatee returned not long after with several rolls of tape which was used to wrap around Qin Yu's body tightly several times.

Still not satisfied, he also taped Qin Yu's eyes and retrieved some plastic bags to be wrapped around Qin Yu's ears so that his hearing was muffled.

“Such a pity, you're still so young!”

The goateed man's sigh sent Qin Yu's heart pounding before his hearing was completely muffled.

A chilling feeling came from his heart and enveloped his entire body.

Qin Yu subconsciously wanted to break away but the knots were too tight and he couldn't move them at all.

The silence engulfing him provoked fear in his heart after the door was shut. His limbs were getting numb as his blood was not circulating.

Everything turned into darkness after that. Nothing could be heard, seen, or spoken.

A gentle shake of his head caused a dripping sound in his ears which were still covered by the plastic bags.

Qin Yu's imagination was starting to run wild at that moment. The image of him being stabbed by the triangular spike bayonet and falling into a pool of blood, convulsing violently appeared in his mind.

His corpse would begin to stink after his blood was coagulated. Qin Yu was tortured by his invisible thoughts and fear but time seemed to go on forever.

.....

After some time, Qin Yu who was in a daze was awakened by a forceful pull.

He could feel that someone was undoing the knots on the bed but he was not relieved at all as he knew that the forceful gesture was definitely not from a rescue team.

As expected by Qin Yu, he was dragged outside violently after the knots on the bed were undone.

His strength to fight was weak as his hands and legs were numb from the poor blood circulation.

Qin Yu tried to grab something to pull him up as he had a hunch that something bad was going to happen.

Then, a pain rushed to his head, rendering him unconscious.

When Qin Yu regained consciousness, he realized that he was lying in an abandoned hospital with blood all over him. Wu Hao's uncle was there in a dim yellow light with an odd look while painting something on the floor.

Qin Yu straightened up his body with difficulty and turned to look to the side.

As expected, Wu Hao was also in tattered clothing covered in blood, lying unconscious.

“What exactly are you going to do? Didn't you say that you wanted money? I'll give it to you...”

Qin Yu was cut off by the goateed man's outstretched hand before he could finish.

Qin Yu borrowed the dusky light to look ahead and discovered that Wu Hao's uncle was carrying a paint bucket. He dipped his hand into it from time to time.

It seemed like he was painting some sort of pattern on the floor.

His nostrils were filled with a rancid smell and he immediately thought of the wounds on him and Wu Hao. Qin Yu immediately guessed what was in the paint bucket.

Even if he was dumber, Qin Yu knew that the man was not after money but must have had other purposes.

However, Qin Yu's body was numb, limping and he could not even muster up the strength to get up, let alone to run.

Wu Hao slowly regained consciousness but he appeared to be weaker than Qin Yu.

There was absolutely no trace of vitality on his pale face that even his expression seemed lifeless. It definitely felt like the situation was turning far from good.

"I'm almost done, my lord. What should I do next?" the man stood up and muttered to himself all of a sudden.

No one answered but his expression became stranger by the minute.

After a moment, he nodded his head gravely and threw his gaze at Qin Yu and Wu Hao.

"Uncle, what are you doing? If you want money, I'll give it to you. Please let us go," Wu Hao's weak voice carried a sobbing tone.

"Nephew, you know how I liked to gamble and how pathetic I was before. But this time, I have a chance to start over. It's impossible for me to let this opportunity go." He paused suddenly before continuing, "To be frank, I was actually beaten to death a month ago because I couldn't pay off my gambling debt..."

Upon hearing that, Qin Yu and Wu Hao felt a chill down their spines and their hair stood on its ends.

There was a chilling light glinting in the man's eyes as he slowly approached them.

Qin Yu's heart was filled with despair. Am I really going to die by the hands of this madman?

The man grabbed Wu Hao's wrist and Qin Yu's hair and pulled them to the position where he stood.

To Qin Yu's terror, after being dragged to the light he realized that the strange pattern under his feet was actually drawn with blood.

The two of them were dragged to the pattern and the man grabbed Wu Hao's left arm. Then, he pulled out the triangular spike bayonet from his waist and made a strong slash on Wu Hao's wrist.

Blood spurted out and dripped down continuously.

Wu Hao and Qin Yu were filled with despair as they looked at the scene.

Qin Yu was limp at the side, watching helplessly as Wu Hao's life faded away.

He tried to think of a way to resist but he was kicked hard and he could not get up again.

The unceasing flowing of blood caused Wu Hao to sink into unconsciousness. He was already limp on the floor, unmoving when his uncle released his wrist.

"It's your turn!"

Bloodthirstiness flashed past the man's eyes as he dragged Qin Yu who had fallen to the ground and used the same way to cut his wrist.

"You... what's your purpose in doing this?" Qin Yu asked feebly.

Death was near but he did not wish to die without knowing what was going on.

“I can only say that you have bad luck. I initially wanted only my nephew’s life because his soul stood out amongst others. As for you, you’re just unlucky, but you can still contribute a bit of value.”

His tone was excited as if he was looking forward to something.

Qin Yu’s consciousness was getting blurry at this point.

He could vaguely see that the blood-painted patterns were scattered with a scarlet light and shadows of evil ghosts began emerging from the patterns one after another...

Chapter 123 - The Arrival Of The Deities

Qin Yu struggled to open his eyes and was relieved to hear the sounds of police sirens and footsteps as he knew that help had arrived.

However, a silhouette appeared from the dark and gripped his hair, pulling him along deeper into the darkness.

Despair filled Qin Yu's heart when he realized that it was Wu Hao's uncle. He wanted to resist and scream for help, but he had no strength to do so due to excessive blood loss. He could only watch helplessly as the man dragged him further into the abandoned hospital.

Qin Yu heard the man's faint voice in the dark, "My lord, why didn't the extradition ritual work on him? I was nearly affected, too."

"Yes!"

"Understood!"

After mumbling to himself for some time, the man took out his dagger while making his way toward Qin Yu.

Right when he was about to stab Qin Yu's neck, a silhouette appeared next to Qin Yu in an instant.

"Meow!"

The sound echoed throughout the abandoned hospital and Wu Hao's uncle dropped to the floor with a horrified expression on his face.

He felt as though someone was choking his spirit, forcing air out of his lungs and suffocating him.

He struggled to look up and noticed that a cat was standing in front of him. It was as white as snow and had mesmerizing green eyes which made him feel like he would be sucked into them.

He was alarmed and tried to stand up when he noticed that the cat's limbs were combusting with green flames.

“Meow!” with a growl, the cat jumped from its position and knocked its body against the man.

Thump!

A sharp noise was heard and to the man's shock, he realized that his spirit had been knocked out of his body and his physical body was lying on the ground unconscious.

“I shall eat you!” Lu Wu stared at the man's spirit which was floating mid-air and opened his mouth to suck him in.

A strong suction entwined with faint green energy was summoned, forming a whirlpool in Lu Wu's mouth.

The goateed man could not resist the mysterious energy and was sucked into Lu Wu's body in an instant.

“Burp!”

Throwing a glance at the unconscious Qin Yu, Lu Wu was exasperated. He contemplated for a while and took out a grain of spiritual rice from the artifact before dividing it into two halves with a pained expression. He then threw one half of it into his mouth and fed the other to Qin Yu.

After making sure that Qin Yu was fine, Lu Wu ran to where the blood ritual was drawn. He observed the pattern of the ritual closely before blowing out a gust of wind filled with green energy to ruin it. Lu Wu left immediately once it was all done.

.....

Back home, Lu Wu looked at Bei Li who was munching on snacks and lifted his paw to greet her, “I’ve taken care of it!”

Bei Li nodded her head, “I saw it and I already knew what he was planning to do. He was a remarkable person, what a waste!”

Lu Wu jumped onto the sofa upon hearing that, “Tell me about his plan to rebel briefly.”

Bei Li nodded, “I have to say that he was a genius. He planned to collect human spirits and use them to create war puppets, hoping to fight against God with humans’ talent ability!”

“Isn’t that similar to our artifacts?” Lu Wu was astounded.

“That’s why I said that he was a genius to be able to think of this method. Unfortunately, he doesn’t have any artifacts to help him so he could only rely on ritual sacrifice to collect human spirits which would take a whole lot longer. I bet that spirit extradition was only his experiment. He would definitely increase the number of extradition rituals if it worked!”

“There’s another important point, his methods were too wicked. The human world would be a huge mess if he succeeded, which is why we had to stop him.”

Listening to Bei Li’s explanation, Lu Wu was reminded of someone whose spirit failed to be extradited to the underworld.

“Could it be that the survivor is our player and his spirit could not be extradited because his spirit was bound to the artifact?”

“Yeah, he is our player and his spirit has been bound to the artifact. No one would be able to extradite his spirit, not even the man behind all this.”

Lu Wu started to realize the seriousness of this matter after listening to Bei Li’s explanation.

He would not be able to win against the man behind all this if he was really powerful.

“What should we do?” Lu Wu asked with a stern expression.

“Expose him and someone will finish him!” Bei Li smiled while squinting her eyes.

Lu Wu was stunned, “What do you mean?”

Bei Li giggled, “I’ve already jotted down the ritual pattern and it’ll be easy to find out where it leads to. I’m sure someone is desperate to stop him...”

.....

His Excellency Cangxu’s large domain palace in the underworld.

Cangxu’s face was twisted with anger and his fists were tightened.

He deliberately looked for a newborn default soul so that he would not be noticed by others as he wanted to stay low. However, he never expected that someone would stop him when he’d barely even started.

Both rage and fear filled his heart.

He had been planning this for years. The blood ritual that was used for the spirit extradition was created solely for this.

He had no idea who was targeting him and how they knew about his plans.

Not many people knew about this matter and Cangxu was certain that they would never betray him. Besides that, the love of his life had been trapped in the dungeon for a long time, she could not have betrayed him!

Cangxu fell into deep thought. He felt as though an invisible hand was hovering above his head, looking for a chance to give him a fatal blow.

“Your Majesty, should we capture some more default souls to proceed with the plan?” a man with a long black sword on his back asked.

A hint of worry flashed across Cangxu’s face when he heard that.

“I chose a default soul to avoid trouble and attention from others, but now... I suspect that those who stopped our plan have already found out my identity!”

“What should we do now?” the man with the sword tightened his jaw.

“Continue with the plan. Contact Riying, Elong, and Fenshui... have them send their best men to me. There’s no need to stay hidden now that I’m exposed. There’s no way that I’ll terminate my plans, I’ve been planning this for more than 10,000 years!”

“Understood!”

Right when the man with the sword was about to leave, some blue light rays appeared on top of the residence out of nowhere.

The rays shone through the vault of heaven and blue lights were cast downward like swords.

Cangxu’s facial expression changed when he felt a sense of oppression from the outside. Fear was evident on the other man’s face, “De... Deities!”

Cangxu’s figure disappeared from his initial position and reappeared in the sky instantly. He threw his hands to the sky and waved his sleeve before a gigantic palm appeared mid-air and caught those blue lights within it.

Cangxu looked into the sky with a stern expression, “Those from heaven, why are you here at my large domain palace in the underworld?”

Eight unworldly silhouettes with divine aura appeared in the sky when Cangxu finished talking. Each of them was stepping on a cloud and they had the same indifferent and unconcerned expression.

“Cangxu, you’ve crossed the line. We are here to arrest you under the commands of Beidou Tianzun!”

“Crossed the line? Is there evidence of this?” Cangxu already guessed it but he still remained calm.

A blood ritual map appeared in the hands of the leader of the deities instantly.

“This map points to your palace and it is connected to your Yin Talisman. Are you still denying it?”

“I’m part of the underworld. Even if I am guilty, the Great Emperor of Feng Du should be the one arresting me!” Cangxu’s demeanor became more imposing as he waved his sleeves and his hair moved despite the absence of wind, “What does it have to do with you?”

Chapter 124 - Lovers

Cangxu's words had invoked the eight deities' anger. Their expressions darkened as they berated him, "Cangxu, there's a clear boundary between the three worlds. Those from the underworld are not allowed to enter the world of the living, or have anything to do with the human tribes. You used the Yin Talisman to enter the world of the living, which is against the rules! We have the right to arrest you as the enforcement body of the three worlds!"

Cangxu smiled faintly, "That's weird... weren't you afraid that the humans would start another upheaval? Why don't you just get rid of them? Why bother with setting rules for the three worlds? You're just a bunch of hypocrites."

"You... are you trying to spark a war between the world of the immortals and the underworld?"

"Those are purely my words, this has nothing to do with the underworld! I just can't stand hypocrites like you. Aren't you here to arrest me? Come and get me!"

Cangxu levitated himself in mid-air while staring expressionlessly at the eight deities.

The eight deities could not stand being taunted by him anymore. They made some hand seals in sync and soon enough, multiple blue swords appeared and hovered in the air.

"Demon Slayer Formation – Slaughter."

The formation enlarged abruptly as the countless blue swords that were scattered around started to combine together, forming a blue Greatsword. The eight deities stood behind the Greatsword and directed it to stab right toward Cangxu's head.

Cangxu was perfectly calm despite facing off against the deities' powerful attacks. He shook his right hand lightly and an Ancient Longsword appeared in his grip. He then tilted his body and swung it forward with tremendous force.

A hundred-meter long sword ray flashed through the sky and came into contact with the blue Greatsword.

The whole sky was instantly enveloped in white light, and the energy from the impact spread out like ripples.

“Cangxu, how dare you attack us! Do you really want to start a war between the two worlds?”

“As I said, whatever I do has nothing to do with the underworld!”

“Boom!”

A loud crash resonated as the blue Greatsword tore the sword ray apart.

Once again, Cangxu swung his Ancient Longsword through the air.

As the violet beam of the sword ray tore through the sky, it absorbed the soul energy from its environment and increased in size and power. Once again, it collided with the blue Greatsword, blocking off the attack of the eight deities.

Right at that moment, several silhouettes jumped up into the air.

“Your Majesty, Riyang is here to support you!”

“Your Majesty, Fenshui is here to support you!”

“Your Majesty, Elong is here to support you!”

.....

All of them appeared right next to Cangxu in the air, and glared at the eight deities with fury.

The eight deities' expressions became grim upon seeing them.

They thought that Cangxu was going to follow them back obediently. They didn't expect that he would put up a fight.

If Cangxu was the only one that they needed to face, then it would not be that big of a problem. However, with the other Ghost Kings and Ghost Generals standing together with him, the eight deities would never stand a chance against them.

"This battle has nothing to do with all of you, leave!" Cangxu glanced at his subordinates, touched by their loyalty, but his tone was stern.

"Your Majesty..."

"I said leave! Can't you understand that?" Cangxu's expression turned cold.

The Ghost Kings and Generals trembled under Cangxu's intimidating aura, which was the result of ruling the Land of Cangxu for more than ten thousand years.

"Please leave me be, this is a war between a traitor of the underworld and the deities. Unless you guys intend to be criminals of the underworld, too?"

Cangxu waved his hands and knocked his subordinates down onto the ground when he saw how conflicted they looked.

After that, he turned to the sky, "You have always been an eyesore to me. Now that we're here today, show me what you've got!"

A layer of violet energy appeared on Cangxu's body, which corroded and ate away at his clothes before condensing and solidifying into a suit of violet golden armor.

"Surrender now, you lunatic!" the eight deities' expressions soured upon seeing that Cangxu was planning to go all out against them. The blue Greatsword's radiance amplified as it swung down toward Cangxu with powerful force.

Cangxu charged forward and countered the blue Greatsword's strike with his Ancient Longsword.

Boom! Strong turbulence was formed above Cangxu's palace.

"Take this!" Cangxu's long hair fluttered in the wind as he thrust his longsword upward.

Multiple cracks appeared on the blue Greatsword, which spread over its entire surface in just a matter of seconds.

Crack... Boom!

A mushroom cloud was formed in the air, forcing Cangxu and the eight deities to take a few steps back.

"You call yourselves deities? Weak!" Cangxu steadied himself and pointed his Longsword at the eight deities, a condescending smirk appearing on his face.

"You..." the eight deities were extremely displeased as they had clearly misjudged Cangxu's capability. They would definitely be regarded as laughing stocks if they were to return empty-handed.

Out of the blue, a giant golden palm appeared in the sky and descended slowly right when they were about to launch another attack. It stirred up a gust of wind which was so strong that even the Ghost Generals and Kings were sent flying.

"God Master!" the eight deities turned around at the same time and greeted the newcomer.

Accompanied by the prestige of the world, the gigantic palm's appearance was as mighty as a mountain.

Cangxu's face fell while staring at the giant golden palm. He had never expected that the God Master himself would show up just to capture him.

“I’ll take you down!” he waved his Ancient Longsword again and advanced forward.

Crack! The ancient Longsword shattered into pieces the moment it came into contact with the giant golden palm. Cangxu’s violet golden armor cracked as he fell backward and crashed heavily onto the ground, causing him to cough out blood.

“Die, you stubborn being!”

A booming voice was heard in the sky before the giant golden palm came down again with greater speed, causing the space beneath it to distort from the great pressure.

Cangxu’s gaze was filled with resentment. He struggled to make a counterattack, but he could not move an inch under the suppression of the giant golden palm, as it had already locked down the area around him.

Although he had been planning this for more than 10,000 years, it seemed that things were about to end this way. Cangxu laid on the ground motionlessly and stared at the giant golden palm that was descending toward him. A self-mocking smile found its way onto his face as his eyelids drooped slowly.

Am I going to die?

Her silhouette appeared in his mind, and he could not help but smile bitterly.

Back then, this place was known as the Land of Yuanxu instead of the Land of Cangxu. He was only a young man who was focused on becoming strong, with no intention whatsoever of becoming the ruler of this land.

The first time they met was at Pagoda Mountain. Dressed in rags, she was shivering inside a tree hollow while looking at everything around her with a cautious gaze.

After coming across her by coincidence, Cangxu gave her some food out of pity, which resulted in that girl attaching herself to his side. He could not get rid of her even if he tried.

She told Cangxu that her name was Xian Ke, and that she was originally from heaven. Her parents had been forcing her to cultivate every single day, so she could no longer take it anymore and snuck her way into the underworld one day by crossing the Spirit Channeling Gate.

She ended up in Pagoda Mountain, which was teeming with ferocious wild beasts. Due to her lack of cultivation, she could not defend herself and was forced to hide in the tree hollow for protection against the elements and hostile beasts.

As a naive girl who could not even defeat a wolf, she spent her time in Pagoda Mountain by hiding in a small corner. She would either fight or flee from wild beasts, depending on how strong they were. If it was not for Cangxu, Xian Ke thought she would have starved to death.

Their encounter led to a long-standing relationship that lasted for 10,000 years.

He kept his mouth sealed when it came to Xian Ke's origins, and she eventually fell in love with Cangxu, who was passionate about cultivation.

They grew stronger together as their love started to blossom between them.

However, Cangxu refused to admit his feelings for her at that time. He ignored her advancements and even rejected her coldly. Nothing was more important than cultivation to him.

Things between them changed when Cangxu joined the army of King Yuan. He was involved in a feud with a Ghost King's child and was almost beaten to death.

Because of that incident, Cangxu became even more fixated on the importance of power. He became obsessed with getting stronger in hopes to change his fragile fate.

Xian Ke watched as the changes took root in Cangxu, but she kept on supporting him.

However, the road to success was undoubtedly tough. In order to claw his way to power by rising through the ranks in the army of King Yuan, hard work was an important factor, but resources and power were also necessary.

Cangxu was incapable of being adaptable at that time, so he faced a lot of obstacles. He was constantly being bullied, and almost died a few times. If it was not for Xian Ke who took care of him, he would have been dead ages ago.

Xian Ke's attitude toward his behavior started to change when she saw how often he came back with wounds. She knew that Cangxu would die one day if this went on.

Nonetheless, Cangxu did not listen to her. He thought that the path to success would definitely be riddled with adversity, and he would become stronger once he overcomes it.

That was when Xian Ke decided to sacrifice herself to fulfill his wish.

Everything changed after that. Others would always share cultivating techniques with him, and no one dared to bully him in the army anymore.

Things had become a lot easier after that, and paired with his determination to become stronger, Cangxu eventually became a Ghost General in the Land of Yuanxu.

However, Cangxu felt empty when he finally gained the power that he had always wanted, as though he had lost something important.

It was at that time when he realized he had fallen for the woman who had given her all for him.

He looked for her and confessed to her, telling her that he wished to marry her. However, she rejected him, saying that she was not worthy of him, and that she no longer loved him.

Things had changed. Right when Cangxu realized his feelings for her, she had decided to leave him.

He felt so lost, not knowing what went wrong.

This continued until the day when he saw Xian Ke in a Ghost King's mansion. Only then did he realize what Xian Ke had done for him.

He was filled with regret and despair, but he could not change the past.

Out of despair, he tried to drown out his feelings by drinking for three consecutive days, and he was completely hammered for three consecutive nights.

Three days later, he picked up a sword and barged into the Ghost King's mansion, swearing to bring the woman he loved back to his side.

This time, he was badly wounded, and she got on her knees to beg for the Ghost King's mercy with tears in her eyes.

Cangxu's life was saved, and he regained the motivation to become stronger. However, this time, it was to get the woman he loved back.

Slowly, he rose from a Ghost General to a Ghost King, and eventually to the most powerful position in the Land of Yuanxu. He finally achieved his goal and killed the Ghost King with his own hands.

On that day, everyone from the Land of Cangxu came to congratulate him, but she still refused to marry him, even if he were to dress her in her wedding silks with his own hands. She said to him, "How can I marry Your Excellency with a past like mine?"

Cangxu was furious and questioned her. He said to her, "I am the ruler of the Land of Cangxu. Am I still not worthy enough for you?"

She gave him a deprecating smile, "If it were not for my past, would you still be the ruler of this land?"

Despite lasting for 10,000 years, this relationship ended up for naught.

It was until the final moment that he learned that although she had a divine nature, her divine source had been depleted from staying in the underworld for too long, and she was dying.

She did not wish to burden him, and wanted to leave this world quietly.

Cangxu heard about the news and looked for spiritual materials frantically, hoping to revive her wilting life.

The spiritual materials worked for a short while and slightly prolonged the woman's life, but it was a futile effort. It seemed impossible to change her fate.

Cangxu was in despair when he could not find more spiritual materials in the Land of Cangxu that could save her life. In the end, he found his way onto the Thousand Tribulations Road in hopes to meet the Great Emperor of Feng Du, one of the rulers of the underworld, even if it meant that his spirit would be torn apart.

The journey was extremely dangerous and he almost died on his way, but he managed to meet the ruler of the underworld in the end.

The Great Emperor of Feng Du told him that the only way to save her was to send her back to heaven, and to find someone who was at the level of a Sky Deity to be her lifeline. Alternatively, he could obtain a divine source from heaven for her to absorb, which could keep her alive.

Now that he knew the way to save her, Cangxu brought Xian Ke along with him and embarked on a journey along Paradise Road, all the way to the Heavenly Gate.

However, the arrogant deities ignored his pleas. To them, Xian Ke was no longer worthy of being a deity since she was already corroded by Yin energy. They refused to acknowledge her status as a deity, let alone help her.

Just when Cangxu was wallowing in despair, he met a deity out front. The deity asked him if he was willing to betray the underworld and become his

sword. He was willing to save Xian Ke in exchange for his service.

Cangxu was at a loss, but he nodded firmly after taking a glance at the dying woman in his arms.

Since then, he would go to the Heavenly Gate and have the deity replenish Xian Ke's divine source once every ten thousand years.

He would collect information from the underworld and deliver it to the deity every ten thousand years in exchange for his help.

However, thirty thousand years ago, the deity refused to help him any longer.

He told Cangxu that the underworld seemed to have forgotten about their past hatred, and that there was no possibility for revenge. Cangxu had lost his worth as his sword, so he was no longer needed.

Cangxu was utterly infuriated this time. He hated the heavens for being unfair to him, as he had worked so hard to save her, but fate chose to pull a joke on him.

Cangxu's hair turned completely white in the span of one night.

They said that the gods above are benevolent and kind, but all he saw was complete darkness.

Xian Ke knew that she was becoming a burden to Cangxu, so she tried to escape multiple times, hoping to find a place to die quietly. She did not want him to sacrifice so much for her.

Angry tears welled up in Cangxu's eyes, as he had no choice but to lock her up. He told Xian Ke that he would find a way to save her, and that he would never let her die!

Since the heartless deities refused to help him, Cangxu diverted his attention toward the divine source of heaven.

However, the divine source was very precious to heaven, therefore it was actually easier to seek help from a Sky Deity than to actually obtain it.

No matter how slim his chances were, Cangxu had no intention to give up.

He had been planning for more than ten thousand years just to break into heaven to save the love of his life.

.....

A mocking smile formed on his lips as he watched the giant golden palm descending toward him.

His ten thousand years of effort were nothing more than a joke!

Chapter 125 - Above The River Of Forgetfulness

All of a sudden, the giant golden palm disintegrated when it was about to smash into Cangxu, and golden soul energy started to rain down from the sky.

“You are overstepping your boundary, Beidou!” the ancient voice boomed in the sky.

“Cangxu has transgressed against the rules that we set, Feng Du. Why are you defending him?”

“Yes, punishment is due for his transgressions, but since he’s in my territory, I’ll be the one in charge of his punishment.”

“Feng Du!” the voice in the sky roared furiously.

“Do you intend to go to war?” the ancient voice boomed again.

“Fine, I’ll let this go for you, Feng Du, but you owe us an explanation. If you don’t come up with a good answer, a war between the two worlds will be inevitable. His transgression isn’t minor after all!”

The giant golden palm coalesced in the sky again. It grasped the eight deities within its palm before disappearing into the sky.

“Sigh... Cangxu, I did not expect you to end up like this!”

Cangxu’s lips trembled when he heard this voice. He did not expect that the Great Emperor Feng Du would go so far to help him.

He knew how big a transgression he made. What he wanted to do could even trigger a war between heaven and the underworld. However, the Great Emperor Feng Du still stood up to protect him.

Cangxu was filled with regret when he recalled his act of betrayal in the past.

He knelt down and kowtowed on the ground while facing the sky.

“Hear me, Great Emperor. I, Cangxu, am willing to take responsibility for everything I did. I will never drag the underworld into this, even if it means tearing my soul apart.”

Another sigh was heard from the sky.

“Go and settle your unfinished business!”

“Thank you for your permission, Great Emperor!” Cangxu kowtowed a few more times before standing up and walking into his palace resolutely.

.....

In his residence, Cangxu was lying in his silk emperor’s robes, a beautiful woman cuddled up close to him.

“Now do you know how to write it?”

The historian before him dipped the brush in ink, before raising his trembling hand ever so slightly.

“Your Majesty, are you sure about this?”

Cangxu nodded calmly. He knew that he must make a choice if he did not want to drag those from the Land of Cangxu into this.

The historian wrote this down with sorrow in his heart:

Cangxu, His Excellency of the great domain of the Land of Cangxu, usurped the throne by killing Yuanxu, the original ruler of the land. He oppressed the people of the Land of Cangxu during his reign. He drowned himself in the vice of lust at all times. He was an embarrassment to all kings. He even had a savage ambition, to single-handedly spark a war between heaven and the underworld. Those in the Land of Cangxu should

take his evil actions as a negative example. After deliberation from all powers in the Land of Cangxu, we have decided to strip him of his ruling authority. He will now be sentenced to exile...

The historian took a deep breath after he finished writing and handed the piece of paper to Cangxu.

Cangxu glanced at it before nodding, a forlorn expression flashing across his face.

“Notify every district in the Land of Cangxu that everyone should celebrate the eradication of someone as evil as Cangxu. This should be a cautionary tale!”

Cangxu looked down at the unparalleled beauty in his arms after the historian left, a hint of tenderness rising up from the depths of his eyes.

“You toiled away for tens of thousands of years just to be known as an evil dictator who will be treated with disdain by everyone after this. Will you regret it?” the woman lying in Cangxu’s embrace blinked her beautiful eyes.

“As long as you don’t hate me, so what if everyone else loathes me? This life is already worth it.”

The woman’s lips curved into a soft smile as her eyes filled with affection, “Don’t leave me behind this time.”

“Yes, we’ll go together this time. It will cause me to worry if I leave you behind.”

The woman’s eyes radiated happiness when she heard that. She picked up a glass of wine from the table next to them.

“Here’s a belated betrothal drink. I shall marry you, but do you take me as your wife?”

“I do!”

Cangxu picked a glass of wine, too, and both of them crossed their arms.

.....

Both of their bodies started turning into stone after they downed their wine glasses. They were still embracing each other at the moment they greeted death, and their faces were filled with happiness.

Perhaps leaving together was the ultimate form of freedom for them, after their hundreds of thousands of years of hardship.

An ancient sigh rang out in the great hall.

“I will send the both of you into the Six Paths of Reincarnation, Cangxu. With this, your mortal business is done.”

A pair of soul wisps were extracted from the stone bodies, which dissipated into thin air, as if they never existed in the first place.

.....

On the Bridge of Forgetfulness, Six Paths of Reincarnation.

Looking at the soup given by Meng Po, the Goddess of Forgetfulness, a flash of remembrance flitted through the woman’s eyes. She eventually accepted the soup and finished it in a gulp.

However, Cangxu’s silhouette appeared in her mind when she closed her eyes.

“The root of love is deeply entrenched within you. However, you can only cross this bridge after you cut ties with your past, and he belongs in that past. Not to mention that you’ve already had one bowl, which is supposed to wipe your memory clean...”

Tears streamed down Xian Ke’s cheeks. She stretched out her hand at Meng Po, saying, “Give me another bowl. I want to go after him. I want to be with him in my next life.”

Meng Po almost could not bear to do it, but she still gave her another bowl.

After gulping down the second bowl of the Water of Forgetfulness, Xian Ke crouched at the side of the bridge and cried while cradling her head, “I still can’t forget him!”

Meng Po sighed when she looked at the weeping Xian Ke, “Fine then. I will help you forget him.”

A bowl of pure, unadulterated Elixir of Forgetfulness appeared in Meng Po’s palm, and she handed it over to Xian Ke gently.

“Drink this. You’ll surely forget about him after that!”

.....

Xian Ke stood up slowly after she drank the bowl of pure elixir. She walked forward in a trance as inexplicable tears streamed down her cheeks.

She felt as if she had lost something important, but she could not recall what it was.

A silhouette appeared beside Meng Po. He watched on affectionately as the woman stepped away from him, till she disappeared at the end of the bridge...

“Have you decided?” Meng Po gazed at Cangxu and asked.

“The fault lies with me this time. It will be no different than giving amnesty to me if you send me into the Six Paths of Reincarnation. The deed has been done. What one does, one takes responsibility by oneself. Only by destroying my soul can I atone for my sins. I do not wish to trouble the Great Emperor of Feng Du, nor do I wish to spark a war between the two worlds.”

Meng Po sighed heavily when she saw Cangxu’s face of resolve. Then, she opened the Gate of Forgetfulness, which was beneath the River of Forgetfulness.

“You will cease to exist after this. Cangxu might be no more in this world, but I, Meng Po, have seared you in my memory!”

Cangxu nodded and walked unwaveringly to the Gate of Forgetfulness.

Meng Po’s voice rang out again right when Cangxu’s silhouette was about to be engulfed by the Gate of Forgetfulness.

“Two destinies tied together by fate over a hundred lives. I will revive the memories of your past lives at this final moment, Cangxu. Giving you a glimpse of your past relationship is the last thing I can do for you.”

The beams of light before him were getting stronger, and silhouettes started appearing at his final moments. Cangxu saw the reincarnations of his past hundred lives and tears were streaming down his face uncontrollably.

She had always been by his side.

He was a king in his first life. Although he ruled the world and his empire was as picturesque as it could get, nothing could compare to the crimson mark between her eyes and her unparalleled grace.

He was a general in his second life. Although he lived a life of lavishness, nothing could compare to her dark silky hair and her exuberant smile.

He was a swordmaster in his third life. Although he traversed the world and made a name for himself with his sword, nothing could compare to her elegance and the gentle flick of her sleeves.

He was a pianist in his fourth life. Although he performed for nobilities and played uncountable tunes of elegance, nothing could compare to the silvery tune of her flute.

He was a monk in his fifth life. Although he had cleared his heart of lust and practiced the path of Buddhism, he still lost to her passing glance and almost deviated from his duties.

He was a minister in his sixth life. Although he left his name in history and was pure and uncorrupted, nothing could compare to her doing her braids

and makeup in front of the mirror.

He was a scholar in his seventh life. Although his life was that of extravagance and accomplishments, nothing could compare to her delicate handwriting and her brush strokes of reed.

He was a farmer in his eighth life. Although he had miles of plum blossoms and acres of silk, nothing could compare to her braided hair and the crimson of her wedding dress.

He was an artist in his ninth life. Although his skills were sought after and his drawings were the treasure of nobles, nothing could compare to her minimalist way of living and the way she laid the table for a meal.

.....

He was the ruler of a land in this life. Although he had a million soldiers and tens of thousands of capable generals, nothing could compare to her smile and her fleeting, beautiful life.

His soul gradually came apart under the River of Forgetfulness. However, the pain of his soul getting destroyed was nothing compared to the agony of his yearning from a hundred past lives.

Cangxu's white hair flowed in the water as he arched his head up to the sky and howled. However, his howl contained the bitterness of his yearning in a hundred lives.

Their destiny finally came to an end in this life...

Cangxu's expression was still that of regret even at the last moment of his soul getting ripped apart...

Chapter 126 - A Subordinate Worth Ten Million Soul Coins

As Cangxu's soul was being torn apart by the River of Forgetfulness, the few wisps of consciousness that were watching all of this unfold from the dark dissipated gradually.

The erstwhile overlord of the Land of Cangxu was finally no more.

His only evidence of existence was in written history, a sinner loathed by future generations.

It was at this moment when a crack appeared in the Gate of Forgetfulness. A small hand appeared from the crack and tried to be grasping onto something...

.....

Inside the house, Bei Li suddenly turned her head around to hug Lu Wu, who was watching TV, and started wailing.

Lu Wu, who was in her arms, was confused.

“Wu, the one behind the blood ritual is dead. I saw his memories before he died. It was so heart-wrenching.”

Looking at Lu Wu, who was still perplexed, Bei Li spoke about what Cangxu experienced before his death and the events of his memories to Lu Wu.

Lu Wu sighed with pity when he heard about Cangxu's painful experience.

“Wu, I think I've found a great spot to expand our server!” Bei Li, who had tears streaming down her face, lowered her head and said to Lu Wu.

“You mean the Land of Cangxu?” Lu Wu had already guessed the place that Bei Li was meaning to say.

“Yup. The Land of Cangxu is now a place without a ruler. It won’t be too hard for players to expand here. Also, we now have extra assistance. If we manage to wake him, the Land of Cangxu will be ours!”

“Extra assistance? What do you mean?”

Bei Li loosened her grip on Lu Wu. She slashed the air with her right hand and a small ball of white light drifted out from the artifact.

“I saved him, but this is all that’s left of him.”

Lu Wu was stunned when he saw the ball of light, “This is the ruler of Cangxu?”

Bei Li nodded. She caught the ball of light in her hand and kneaded it like it was cotton candy.

“This is all that’s left of him. Also, I’ve engraved an artifact seal on it. He won’t betray us even if he regains consciousness. However, it’ll be difficult to revive him fully at this point. He’ll need to be nourished by an abundance of soul power.”

Lu Wu’s eyes lit up upon hearing that.

Lu Wu felt that his time to shine was coming when he thought about the fact that a ruler would be his subordinate soon.

“How many soul coins will we need to revive him?”

Bei Li tapped her fingers while doing her calculations and raised her head with a serious expression.

“Probably ten million or above. His Excellency Cangxu’s strength is incredibly high. If we get into specifics, it might be even higher.”

The smile on Lu Wu’s face froze.

Ten million!

Lu Wu felt disheartened when he heard that number. He thought that he would have an unparalleled general soon, but it seemed like he could not afford it.

He finally understood the pain felt by the players who were into cultivating connections.

As he felt the same pain, Lu Wu decided to increase the level of oppression to have the players feel more pain. Only by doing that could he lessen his own pain.

.....

In the State of Illusion, Land of Beiqi.

This state was located south of the Mansion of The Dead, and was shrouded in mist all year round. It was impossible to have a clear line of sight there.

At this moment, dozens of members of the Slayer Alliance Guild were slowly exploring ahead with Lu Zhan as the lead.

The mist on the map was slowly pushed away and the scene of the State of Illusion on the map was getting clearer.

Lu Zhan had been feeling frustrated lately. Read latest chapters at vipnovel.com

All the bosses of other guilds had chance encounters like obtaining the Son of the Sea or getting the legacy of a Demonic God. Yet, he himself had nothing and he was trailing behind in this aspect.

Therefore, Lu Zhan decided to follow the advice of the pros in the forums and brought his members along to explore, as he might come across a chance encounter himself.

He chose to explore the State of Illusion that was shrouded in mist, because there were scarcely any players exploring this region. There might be tons

of undiscovered resources sleeping there.

After exploring for around half an hour, Lu Zhan and the others were still empty-handed. They were starting to get restless.

It was at this moment when a huge black silhouette appeared in the thick mist and peered at Lu Zhan and his team through its vermilion eyes.

“Roar!”

Waves of killing intent assaulted Lu Zhan and his team and frightened them.

“This land is where deities train in isolation, how dare you...”

“Ouch!”

The tone of the silhouette changed instantly when it was hit by a stone. It no longer sounded imposing or menacing. It sounded childlike instead.

“How dare you...”

Lu Zhan cut it short by picking up another stone and smashed it on its body.

“How dare you try to scare me. I’m not scared even if you’re a Demonic God.”

Lu Zhan’s subordinates followed suit and threw rocks at the silhouette frantically.

“Stop! Stop! Stop! Stop throwing! We can talk this out!” the childlike voice spoke up again as the huge silhouette shrank and the mist dispersed.

“A big goose?” Lu Zhan was stunned when he saw the snow-white crane standing before him.

“I am a crane! A crane!” Tong Gua explained angrily.

Bam! Lu Zhan hurled another rock at Tong Gua’s head.

“You’re a big goose!”

Tong Gua didn’t dare to retort this time. He could only protest silently with a bitter gaze.

“Big Goose, how come you can speak?” Lu Zhan asked with curiosity.

Tong Gua was indignant to be bullied by such a weak creature. He was at least a Ghost King when the King of Beiqi was here, and was worshipped by the people. He was frustrated to be so powerless now.

Bam!

Another rock found its place on Tong Gua’s head, “Hey, our boss is talking to you.”

Tong Gua glanced at Lu Zhan and his team bitterly as he snapped, “There are no chance encounters here. The State of Illusion only has a single crane: me!”

Bam!

“I’m gonna beat the shit out of y’all!”

Tong Gua, who was struck again by another stone, could not take it any longer. He flapped his wings and dashed forward.

Wham! Bam! Thump!

Tong Gua laid on the ground, half dead, after getting beaten up by the members from the Slayer Alliance.

“Still not telling the truth, Big Goose? Look at you, you look like a weak chicken who can’t even fly, and yet you’re claiming to be a Ghost King! You’re not even worthy to be a mount. Aren’t you a little too arrogant to claim that you’re a district ruler in the Land of Beiqi?”

Lu Zhan and his team clearly did not believe that such a puny and weak-looking being like the Big Goose was a Ghost King.

After all, even Cha Na, who was only a Ghost General, had terrifying strength. On the other hand, the Rock Ghost King's power was unbeatable to the players based on their current strength.

Lu Zhan and his team would never believe that this crane was a Ghost King.

Tong Gua's eyes welled up with tears as he felt like his life was meaningless.

He was a distinguished and highly respected individual when the King of Beiqi was still around. He even liberated the State of Illusion from the Land of Beiqi to be its own domain, and was crowned Tong Gua, the Ghost King. Who would have known that he would end up at this point, where he was too worthless to be considered as someone's mount? He clenched his teeth at the thought.

“Spit it out! What chance encounter does the State of Illusion have? I'll allow you to live if you tell me!” Lu Zhan lifted Tong Gua up by the neck slowly and threatened it.

It was at this moment when the light on the crane flitted past and the data analyzed by the artifact surfaced.

[Tong Gua, the Ghost King]: The ruler of the State of Illusion. Strongest Guardian Spirit of the Land of Beiqi. His power has reached the peak of the Ghost King realm.

Details: Unkown.

(Warning: This creature is extremely dangerous. Players are advised to stay away from him as far as possible!)

Lu Zhan and his team were befuddled when they saw the data.

“Extremely dangerous?”

Lu Zhan shook Tong Gua whom he was strangling, still not believing it.

Tong Gua was flapping his wings and his eyes rolled back into his head at that moment, looking like he was going to suffocate to death.

“Hmm, I guess he seems kind of fierce...?”

Chapter 127 - Boasting On The Livestream

Lu Zhan and the others exchanged looks nervously as they looked at Tong Gua the Ghost King who was lying helplessly on the ground and trying to catch his breath.

“Boss, this is a Ghost King. After we kill him, will we be leveled up by hundreds of levels or gain some precious spiritual materials? This is a once-in-a-life-time opportunity!”

Lu Zhan’s heart began to pound after listening to what his teammate said. He felt like he had truly encountered a great opportunity.

Even though this Ghost King seemed pitiable for being so weak, his worth was undeniable. He was basically a living treasury.

“Wait!” Although Tong Gua did not understand their conversation, he who was initially panting, gulped when he heard that they intended to kill him. He raised one of his wings and gestured to them to pause their dialogue.

However, Lu Zhan and the others could not be bothered as they approached the Ghost King with their swords in their hands. Tong Gua was frightened. Surrounded by the air of a loser, he fell onto the ground and began to shiver.

“No, we can’t just kill him like this. We should promote this on the forum to increase the popularity of our guild,” the idea hit Lu Zhan as he was about to attack. Then, he quickly stopped the others who were ready to pounce hungrily on their prey.

“What’s the matter, boss?” asked the puzzled guild members.

“Start a livestream. Let’s boast about it to gain some popularity!”

Lu Zhan launched the built-in live streaming function of the game as he spoke.

Shortly after, a livestream video with the title, After 8 Hours Of Hard-Fought Battle, The Slayer Alliance Has Defeated The Server's First Top-Tier Ghost King. His Death Is On Livestream Now!, appeared on the official platform.

This title was indeed eye-catching and a large number of players immediately swarmed into the livestream channel to watch.

Crayon_Shinchan: “People who use clickbaits should die a terrible death. Yes, I came in purposely to start an argument. How am I Crayon Shinchan if I don't make you cry. (laughing emoji)”

Assassin_Creed: “The poster should be aware that lying is not only illegal now, you'll also need to pay tax for it. I'm going to report you to the authorities now...”

Xueli_The_Strongest: “With the Slayer Alliance's capability, they want to kill a top-tier Ghost King. Cha Na issuing the first warning (Cha_Na_glaring.jpg)”

Watermelon_Taro: “They must be bored to death to even bring up a top-tier Ghost King. Why don't you go and cut down some trees if you have so much time? I get angry just by looking at those Ancient Tree Demons in front of the North Rocks (teeth-gritting emoji)”

Basically, the players who entered the live streaming channel all had the same attitude. They were here to ridicule the host and none of them believed the title.

As the number of viewers in the live streaming channel gradually increased, Lu Zhan, who had prepared to showcase his capability, shifted his gaze to Tong Gua before opening Tong Gua's Analysis Menu.

As soon as Tong Gua's Analysis Menu appeared, the entire live streaming channel was silenced.

Xueli_The_Strongest: “I’m deeply shocked. This is really a Ghost King from the Ghost King Peak Realm. His existence is more powerful than Rock Ghost King...”

Invincible_Loneliness: “Wow! How did you guys do it? Is this the Ghost King from the illusion zone?”

Peppa_Boar: “I suspect that all of you are hacking because I doubt that the Slayer Alliance is capable of killing a Ghost King.”

Crayon_Shinchan: “Fuck, that’s really the Ghost King. But, why does he look like a useless giant goose?”

Lu Zhan satisfied his pride by looking at the other players’ amazement via the live streaming channel.

He answered, “This is a celestial crane, not a giant goose!”

Tong Gua was rendered speechless.

“Well. Next, I’ll show you guys how to kill a Ghost King with only one hand!”

To create a more climactic scene, Lu Zhan did not kill Tong Gua immediately. Instead, he seized Tong Gua by his neck before placing the sword by his throat. He continued to check the number of viewers of the live streaming channel.

Facing his imminent death, Tong Gua struggled. However, with his strength, which was weaker than Wandering Souls, it was impossible for him to escape from Lu Zhan’s headlock.

The players in the comment section also wanted to know what would happen after a Ghost King was killed. Their eyes were glued to their screens as they waited for the development of the story. Before long, the number of viewers in the live streaming channel had skyrocketed.

Once the viewer count reached 20,000, Lu Zhan finally lifted his sword.

“Pay attention. It’s time to witness a miracle!”

Then, he swung his sword toward the Ghost King.

It was at this moment when Tong Gua’s body started to tremble. A green flow of light appeared from his body before he quickly enveloped it. Lu Zhan’s sword immediately sprung back upon hitting Tong Gua. Meanwhile, Lu Zhan was also thrown backward by the immense force as well.

With the help of the green energy, Tong Gua’s body began to glimmer, while a hint of excitement painted across his initially disheartened face.

“Ah, my abilities have returned!”

Everyone in the comment section was puzzled, not knowing what was going on.

It was at that moment that Tong Gua put on a devilish grin before he turned his gaze to Lu Zhan.

“How audacious of you to attempt to kill me!”

Tong Gua flapped his wings as he spoke and, without warning, disappeared. The next moment, he materialized next to Lu Zhan and attacked Lu Zhan with numerous slaps.

The violent blows had terribly stupefied Lu Zhan. He had no idea how Tong Gua, who was previously so weak, had suddenly turned so powerful.

“Fret not. I will definitely not let you die so easily since you’re the first person who was brave enough to beat me up!”

Upon listening to that, Lu Zhan, who was battered, had no tears left to cry. He was immediately thrashed by Tong Gua’s wings again.

After witnessing this, the players in the comment section were quite amused by the tragedy.

Crayon_Shinchan: “So why did you want to show off? Is it that hard to stay alive without creating any drama (laughing emoji)?”

Xueli_The_Strongest: “My stomach hurts from laughing. The first boss to humiliate himself on the livestream. Take my salute!”

Strike_Gold: “We are both guild masters, and out of courtesy, I shouldn’t be laughing. But, I just cannot hold it in. Hahaha, Brother Lu, please don’t hold it against me!”

Peppa_Boar: “As the saying goes, boasting will bring about divine punishment. The slaps to your face were surely loud.”

Watermelon_Taro: “Screenshot to make this into a sticker collection and this swollen face is already in my Battle Online Sticker Collection (laughing emoji)!”

A_Mammoth: “I laughed so hard that I spat my food. Also, I’d like to ask guild master Lu Zhan who’s on the livestream, if he will pay for my wasted food (laughing emoji)?”

Broke_Trash: “I think this scene should be recorded into the Annals of Great Battles (laughing emoji)!”

In the meantime, Lu Zhan felt hopeless because his plan to show off had not only miserably backfired, he was also beaten up by a Big Goose. He had never felt so humiliated before.

He further despaired as the Big Goose, who was standing before him, continued to slap him. His health bar dropped at a very slow rate, though. Lu Zhan suspected that it might take half a day or so for the Big Goose to slap him to death.

Lu Zhan, who was at the verge of crying, started to beg for mercy, “Brother, stop for a moment. We can talk this out!”

Glee flashed across Tong Gua’s eyes when he heard the plea. He thought, my revenge has just started. How can I stop now? Immediately, he decided

to strike his wing across Lu Zhan's cheek again and turn Lu Zhan's head to the side.

“Talk it out? I don't like to talk. I prefer to solve things with brutality!” as he spoke, Tong Gua created a shadow as he flapped his wings rapidly. In the meantime, Lu Zhan's head gradually disappeared as the flaps grew more violent.

“I'll kill you! I'll kill you!” Tong Gua chanted his provocative line as he continued to assault Lu Zhan, traumatizing Lu Zhan both mentally and physically.

The guild members, who were standing at the side, were in shock. None of them had the intention to help him out. Instead, they wanted to run away.

However, after being tortured for some time, Lu Zhan suddenly noticed that the Big Goose's strength was gradually getting weaker and the slaps had also become fewer and farther between. Most importantly, the green glowing energy that had blanketed the Big Goose was slowly diminishing.

Lu Zhan was not the only one who noticed it. Tong Gua seemed to be aware of it, too. He grew increasingly nervous as he continued to attack Lu Zhan.

“I will beat you to death... brother, don't move. Let me help you up!” Tong Gua said as he attempted to pull Lu Zhan up to his feet.

Chapter 128 - The Grudge From A Food Fight

Lu Zhan, who was pulled to his feet, was confused while Tong Gua awkwardly brushed off the dust on him before patting him on the shoulder.

“The ground is too cold. Stand up and talk, brother.”

Upon seeing this, Lu Zhan noticed that something was apparently amiss. After pondering for a moment, his expression began to grow murderous.

He realized that the white Big Goose had once again lost his powers and returned to being a weak chicken.

As he reached this conclusion, Lu Zhan immediately slapped Tong Gua and sent him flying flat on the ground. He then bent over to pick up his sword and close in on Tong Gua.

“Weren’t you very powerful just now? Where did your cockiness go?” Lu Zhan, who had again gained control over the situation, reached out to massage his swollen face as his bloodthirstiness ran rampant.

Tong Gua, who was slammed to the ground, put on an apologetic smile.

“Brother, as the saying goes, relationships are built by exchanging blows and now that we’re even, we’re considered brothers. So, take it easy. I will surely help my brother in the future. My name is Tong Gua the Ghost King, and I am quite useful around Beiqi...”

Slap!

Tong Gua could not even finish his sentence before he was slapped and brought to the ground by Lu Zhan again. Lu Zhan lifted his sword with his right hand.

“Ahhh! Someone’s trying to murder a goose. Save me! You can disgrace the crane but not kill it. I am fine with you hitting me, scolding me, or insulting me, but please, don’t kill me!” Tong Gua who was at death’s doorstep started to scream with his neck craned.

The viewers in the live streaming channel were all rendered speechless once again upon witnessing this scene.

The mighty and impressive image of all Ghost Kings in the minds of the players, which was built up by Rock Ghost King, was completely destroyed by Tong Gua’s coquettish wail.

At this moment, all the players thought that this Big Goose was bringing shame upon the other Ghost Kings.

Without warning, the sword swiftly cut through the air and whooshed toward Tong Gua’s direction. Tong Gua had no choice but to hopelessly close his eyes.

However, Tong Gua did not feel any expected pain after some time. It peeped through one eye to find that Lu Zhan was standing still with indecisiveness written across his face.

[Special Quest: Demand For Surrender]

Quest Description: Request Tong Gua the Ghost King to read out the loyalty pledge to become a new NPC for the game, the pledge is as follows... (500 words omitted)

Quest Rewards: 10,000 account-binding soul coins, one piece of custom-made Epic Level quality weapon (Level 50)

(Note: Account-binding soul coins cannot be traded among players. They can only be used to purchase shop items or at the Cultivation Pavilion and for interaction with NPCs.)

Lu Zhan looked at the quest rewards before averting his gaze to the annoying Tong Gua. He fell into a dilemma.

The rewards of this quest were rather generous. The custom-made Epic Level quality weapon was especially tempting Lu Zhan.

Yet, Lu Zhan felt like he had suffered a big loss if he was to just let this Big Goose off like this.

After some careful consideration, Lu Zhan did not put his weapon away. Instead, he rolled up his sleeves and was ready to get his revenge on Tong Gua for hitting his face before completing the quest.

After some brutal beating, Tong Gua was gasping for air on the ground with its eyes brimming with tears. He knew that his crane life was coming to an end, but never had he expected this day to come.

“Big Goose, do you want to live?” Lu Zhan threatened and placed his sword by Tong Gua’s neck.

“Of course!” Tong Gua became lively again after hearing that.

“Good, just repeat after me and I will spare your life!” a hint of mischief flashed across Lu Zhan’s eyes.

Tong Gua was confused upon hearing this but it nodded earnestly, agreeing to the terms before Lu Zhan regretted them and changed his mind.

“Ahem, listen carefully and repeat after me...”

The dumbfounded Tong Gua immediately repeated Lu Zhan’s every word to save his own life. However, as he continued to articulate each word, the uneasiness in him grew, and upon finishing the last few sentences, Tong Gua cursed bitterly.

“Shit, this is a fucking soul sacrificing pledge. You only want to make me into your ride, you moron!”

Lu Zhan was flustered as he heard this. However, he was the least bothered about the pledge. He quickly rolled up his sleeves before landing another blow on Tong Gua who was already on the ground.

“Are you going to repeat it or not!?”

“Read your ass... OK! I will read it!” Tong Gua was instantly unnerved after noticing Lu Zhan, who was viciously lifting his sword again.

A living dog is better than a dead lion, Tong Gua comforted himself amidst his fury.

Tong Gua looked up at the sky upon finishing the whole soul sacrificing pledge. He was neither happy nor unhappy. He only thought about how miserably he had failed in life as a crane. He thought that it was extremely pitiable.

At that instant, a rift appeared above Tong Gua before it sucked him into it.

On the other hand, Lu Zhan received a notification, saying that the quest was accomplished.

“Special Quest accomplished. You have earned 10,000 account-binding soul coins. The custom-made Epic Level quality weapon will be forged, free of charge, after the birth of the new NPC ‘Tong Gua the Ghost King’. (Please be patient)”

Within the Artifact Channel.

Lu Wu and Bei Li were loathed at the sight of the confused Tong Gua.

Naturally, Lu Wu and Bei Li were very much aware when Lu Zhan encountered him. However, they were taken aback by his embarrassing act.

In fact, it was Bei Li’s idea to demand Tong Gua to surrender.

According to Bei Li, Tong Gua the Ghost King was a very useful character. He was not only the reincarnation of the guardian spirit of the Land of Beiqi, he was also a wonderful caster. In fact, his former student was Beiqi’s number one caster, who did research on the Rune Warrior.

It could be said that Tong Gua the Ghost King was the first caster of Beiqi.

Currently, there were more than a hundred NPCs under Lu Wu but their skills in casting were limited. They were only capable of forging limited weapons by using their soul power with the provided templates, but could not create any personal weapons as that required high proficiency.

That was why Lu Wu and Bei Li targeted Tong Gua and intended to make him a new special NPC.

Tong Gua's skill was also needed to cast the Epic Level weapon that was made as one of the rewards of the previous quest.

“Big Goose, you're truly embarrassing. You've ruined the image of Ghost Kings! You said, ‘You can disgrace the crane but not kill it...’? Shame on you!” Bei Li could not resist the urge to mock him.

Tong Gua had no idea why he appeared in this place. However, he stood arrogantly with arms akimbo after noticing Bei Li.

“Oh... so it was you, Little Li. Why don't you come forward and pay respect to this king!”

A giant hammer formed in Bei Li's hand after hearing that before she viciously swung it at Tong Gua. She greeted it with a smile on her face.

“Little Li greets Tong Gua the Ghost King!”

Boom!

The attack caused Tong Gua to roll his eyes. He trembled, feeling as though his soul was getting smashed out of his body.

Following Bei Li's gesture, a glob of soul power took form in the Artifact Channel. The soul power invaded the body of the dying Tong Gua.

“Lord Tong Gua, is there anything else you need from Little Li?”

Tong Gua who just escaped from death quickly waved his hand, “Little Li, we can talk this out. Put down your hammer first...”

Bei Li nodded obediently and the hammer in her hand disappeared. However, it was immediately replaced by a huge machete that was a hundred times longer.

Tong Gua was flustered.

Similarly, Lu Wu was taken aback, too.

“Do you have a score to settle with him?” Lu Wu asked softly.

“He thought that he was stronger than me and snatched my snacks away from me a few times,” Bei Li’s eyes welled with tears as she recalled the past while the long machete in her hands began to expand.

As expected, snatching Bei Li’s food would result in her grudges. Lu Wu instantly made a mental note on this to prevent himself from upsetting her in the future.

At long last, Bei Li held on to her long machete, after she was convinced by Lu Wu. However, she was still eyeing Tong Gua unkindly and this made him uneasy.

“Big Goose, why have you become so weak?”

Tong Gua glowered after hearing Bei Li’s question and he answered regretfully, “I cultivated the ‘Way of Fate’ and I could have fought with Tao Wu for several rounds when fate was with me. But, when it’s not the right time, I couldn’t even beat a Wandering Soul and I hate it. (gritting teeth)”

Chapter 129 - The New Casting Master

Lu Wu and Bei Li burst out laughing upon hearing Tong Gua's explanation, while Tong Gua gave a grimace.

“Don't mock me. If I can cultivate the Way of Fate to its pinnacle, I will be installed as a deity. Did you know that? Then, I'll be as strong as the Demonic God!”

Bei Li acknowledged his words with a nod. Then, she waved her arm, and immediately a video appeared in the middle of the air. Before long, Tong Gua's cry, originating from the video, resonated across the atmosphere.

“You can disgrace the crane but not kill it. I am fine with you hitting me, scolding me, or insulting me, but please...”

Tong Gua and Lu Wu were both rendered speechless.

“Can you delete it?” Tong Gua pleaded resentfully.

“No!” Bei Li gave a succinct reply.

“Then, can you let me go?” Tong Gua asked expectantly.

“No!”

“Then, can you terminate the soul contract?”

“No!”

Upon hearing Bei Li's answers, Tong Gua stomped his feet in frustration, “What exactly do you want from me now?”

“Stop playing dumb, Big Goose. You should know how much you’re worth. I will give you a choice now. You can either allow me to modify your soul and release you, or I can kill you here!”

Bei Li had before considered to modify Tong Gua’s soul directly. However, Tong Gua’s cultivation had reached the Ghost King Peak Realm, making its soul a solid one. If the modification was done by force, Tong Gua’s soul might chip. The only way was to threaten him to give in.

Tong Gua’s eyes widened as he stomped his feet again after he heard the two options offered by Bei Li.

“Are you really trying to keep me in bondage? Back when the King of Beiqi was around, I was treated as his honored guest! How about this? I’ll be your subordinate and we can forget about this whole soul enslavement? Let’s slow down, lest we do something we all regret!”

A soul modification would be a difficult task even for a god. Tong Gua was not confident at all.

In Tong Gua’s opinion, Bei Li was rather mysterious. She was physically weak, yet she was still deemed as a valuable asset by the King of Beiqi. So, under these circumstances, Tong Gua was afraid that she really did have the strength to carry out the task.

“Do I look like I’m trying to negotiate with you?” the mighty sword in Bei Li’s hand started to take form as she spoke.

“I heard that crane meat is quite scrumptious,” Lu Wu interrupted nonchalantly.

As expected, Bei Li’s eyes sparkled at the mention of food. Tong Gua’s feathers stood up, feeling uneasy being stared at by Bei Li.

As Bei Li slowly lifted the mighty sword, timid Tong Gua immediately begged for mercy.

“Wait, stop! I agree. But, you have to let me know what to do, right?”

Having Tong Gua agreeing to their terms, Lu Wu and Bei Li immediately showed smiles on their faces.

“You will know soon enough. Release your soul and let the power of the artifact fill it.”

As Bei Li spoke, she focused on using the invisible power that flowed out of the artifact to lock Tong Gua in place. The power then infiltrated his body.

“Quit struggling, Big Goose. You wouldn’t want your soul to chip, right?”

Bei Li could not help but warn Tong Gua as she modified him.

Big Goose lay spreadeagled on the floor as he looked at the artifact in the sky with a vacant stare. It seemed like he had lost his confidence in the world and did not want to be bothered.

After the modification went on for half an hour, Bei Li heaved a sigh of relief.

Then, she announced it happily to Lu Wu, “Wu, it’s done!”

Lu Wu nodded and looked toward Tong Gua who was still lying on the floor.

After the modification, Tong Gua flapped his wings before he slowly rose to his feet. Still, there was a hint of fear in his eyes.

“Little Li, how dare you violate the regulations of the three worlds and take control of normal human powers! You... you’re so audacious! Do you know what consequences you’ll have to face if you are discovered?”

Tong Gua had now become an NPC in the game, just like the members of the Wood Spirit Clan. The contents of Battle Online, along with the Reincarnation Contract, which forbade him to reveal Lu Wu, Bei Li and the artifact’s existence, had all been inscribed on Tong Gua’s soul. That was why Lu Wu and Bei Li were not afraid to let Tong Gua learn about this secret.

“You don’t need to worry too much. You’ve already read your Quest Menu and you only need to fulfill your duty. We wouldn’t dare do it if we were afraid of getting caught!” Bei Li said confidently.

Tong Gua was terrified. He knew that if these secrets were exposed, they would receive punishments from the world of the immortals and would be doomed.

Tong Gua took a glance at his NPC menu. It felt like he was trapped in a simulation, having no idea where he would be led to next.

[NPC: Tong Gua (Casting Master)]:

The Ghost King of Beiqi’s Illusion Zone, willingly put himself under the patronage of the Beiqi Army after repenting of his sins. Now, he has become the best caster in Beiqi.

NPC Abilities: Complete random quests assigned by Master Tong Gua, or provide materials along with a high amount of soul coins to forge an Epic Level piece of equipment.

(Note: Provide spiritual materials of King Level or above to forge a Legendary Level piece of equipment.)

Requirements of NPC (self-assessment): Forge five Epic Level pieces of equipment or one Legendary Level piece of equipment everyday. (NPC will be annihilated if the requirement is not fulfilled)

“No way! Five pieces per day? Are you trying to kill me from exhaustion? What if I have no customers that day? Will I be killed? Besides that, forging weapons of such quality would require soul power. Where am I supposed to find that much soul power?”

Bei Li chuckled upon hearing Tong Gua’s reply and proceeded to enter another message into Tong Gua’s mind.

“Holy shit, extracting soul power and turning them into soul coins. There are tons of soul coins in the hands of the players!” Tong Gua’s lips curved

in a smile.

“Do I get any bonuses for forging equipment?” the fear inside Tong Gua began to fade as it was slowly replaced by the desire for soul power.

He knew how precious soul power was. Yet, he did not expect the artifact to be able to extract soul power from dead bodies for personal use.

Even though Tong Gua had reached the Ghost King Peak Realm, soul power was still important to him. It was necessary to enhance his strength.

Bei Li took a quick look at Lu Wu and saw him nodding. Then, she said, “The cost of forging an Epic Level weapon is set from 10,000 to 30,000 soul coins. You can have 200 soul coins as a bonus for every weapon made.”

Bei Li set the requirement of five pieces per day for Tong Gua to prevent him from loafing on the job. Nevertheless, Lu Wu would provide him with the materials. Even if the equipment could not be sold off, they could still be put on sale in the shop. Therefore, nothing would be wasted at all.

Bei Li had also gone through a list of thorough considerations before she allowed Tong Gua to assign tasks for the players.

Even though Tong Gua could make the players run errands with his task-assigning power, he would still need to compensate them with soul coins for the completed tasks.

Bei Li had even set up an NPC surveillance system in the artifact to warrant fairness for the players. It would make sure all players receive a reward that equated to the tasks issued. Besides, tasks issued by an NPC would need to be assessed by the surveillance system. If the worth of the prize did not match the difficulty of the task, the task would have to be revised.

Lu Wu and Bei Li had discussed the system before and this would be the first time they implemented it. Tong Gua would also be the first NPC who could issue tasks.

Of course, this was also simultaneously made to enhance interactions between players and NPCs, thus elevating the thrill of the game.

Tong Gua, who initially had a gleam of hope, pulled a long face when he heard that forged weapons were only worth 200 soul coins.

“You will get 70 percent and I get 30 percent? Don’t you forget that I am a Ghost... fine, I agree!”

Tong Gua, who seemed to be rather resentful, agreed to the terms instantly after he saw the sword that began to take form in Bei Li’s hand.

“But Little Li, what exactly is this artifact? How can it be so powerful? If the King of Beiqi owned this back then, he would have been invincible!” Tong Gua was extremely curious. He was clueless about this object. Not only was it able to link the two worlds of Yin and Yang, but it could also extract soul power.

“Mind your own business. You are just an NPC now. I will build a forge for you in the Mansion of the Dead later. Be prepared to start working. You haven’t accomplished your task today yet!”

Tong Gua’s expression was disheartened after hearing Bei Li’s words. He heaved a sigh of despair. Sigh, beggars can’t be choosers!

“Don’t worry, Big Goose. From now on, you will be our brother. Now that you know the powers of the artifact, do your job well and I will make sure you will live in the lap of luxury every day!” Lu Wu added as he moved forward to pat Big Goose on the shoulder.

“Who is this stupid cat? Your pet? Your mount?” Tong Gua looked at Lu Wu with a disgusted expression.

Tong Gua took a look at Bei Li’s height and then took a peek at Lu Wu, subsequently making a wild guess with confidence.

“It is undoubtedly your mount!”

Bei Li was speechless.

The smile was wiped away from Lu Wu's face as the killing intent expanded rapidly in his heart.

Chapter 130 - The Joy Of Boasting Only Lasted Momentarily

After a series of brutal beatings, Lu Wu left the Artifact Channel nonchalantly, leaving behind Bei Li and Tong Gua the Ghost King, who was lying on the ground gasping for air.

Tong Gua felt helpless. He had never gotten beaten up before. Yet, he had been walloped three times within just a few hours. Three times!

Bei Li giggled as she looked at Tong Gua, who was sobbing silently. She then waved her arm and sent Tong Gua to the Mansion of the Dead.

In the afternoon, the players realized that there was a new building in the center of the Mansion of the Dead, with a plaque hanging outside the building that read Tong Gua's Forge.

The appearance of a new feature would always catch the attention of players. Thus, many players gathered in front of the workshop, intending to find out about what new feature was added into the game.

As the players approached the building, the settings menu of the forge appeared:

[Tong Gua's Forge]:

Settings: Master Tong Gua's residence. He helps players forge customized Epic Level or Legendary Level weapons (Below Level 100).

The players were pleasantly surprised as they read the settings of the forge. However, they soon realized that the doors of the forge were shut tightly. There was no way they could enter it.

The players then noticed a sign that was hung on the window. A few words were scrawled on it:

[Rules and Regulations of Tong Gua's Forge]

1. I will open the forge at any time I want. Do not knock on the door for no reason, or I will thrash you!
2. Do not try to build rapport with me. To me, you all are just weaklings. You are not worthy of my time!
3. Penniless folks stay out of my sight. After all, you will not have the money to pay me.
4. During opening hours, you must shout out 'Master Tong Gua' before you announce what you want.
5. Do not give nonsensical requests when customizing your weapon and also do not try to bargain. Your Lord, Master Tong Gua, is in fact a Ghost King. You should feel honored that you can meet me for free.
6. Tong Gua owns all rights to the rules and regulations stated above. Any opposition will be denied (all appeals will be also rejected).

The players were all dumbfounded as they looked upon the rules set at Tong Gua's Forge.

Is it really fine for an NPC to be so arrogant?

A few players could not be bothered, and started to knock on the door right away. Everyone wanted to see the true face of this Master Tong Gua.

After banging on the door for five minutes, the door burst open! Tong Gua strode out of the room. Half-awake, his eyelids were still heavy.

"Why are you making so much noise? Can't you read the rules?" Tong Gua exclaimed while he tapped the board that was hung by the window.

The players gasped at Tong Gua in shock. Read latest chapters at vipnovel.com

The NPCs they had met before in the game were all courteous and polite. It was their first time meeting an NPC as ridiculous as Tong Gua.

“What are you looking at? Have you not seen a Celestial Crane before!” being surrounded by the players, the upset Tong Gua yelled.

“Big Goose, I have completed my quest. Hurry up and forge an Epic Level weapon for me!” a man pushed his way through the crowd and appeared in front of Tong Gua.

When Tong Gua was just about to throw a tantrum, a notification from the artifact rang in his mind.

“Player Lu Zhan has accomplished the quest and will receive the reward: An Epic Level 50 weapon (player is allowed to choose his own parts).”

Tong Gua, who was about to lose his temper, restrained himself as he saw the notification regarding the quest reward. He lifted his head to look at Lu Zhan, eyes filled with resentment.

If it was not for Lu Zhan, he would not have been forced to become an NPC. More importantly, this little brat had beaten him up before. Yet, he had to be the one to forge a customized weapon for him.

Tong Gua was overwhelmed with sorrow. However, he could not disobey the settings of the artifact. Otherwise, he would be wiped out from the game. Thus, he could only remain obedient.

“OK, get your ass in here!”

Right after Lu Zhan entered the forge, Tong Gua slammed the door shut, and further stunned the players outside the door.

On the third day of Tong Gua’s appearance, a pinned post in the forum caught Lu Wu’s attention.

Assassin_Creed: “Shit, can someone kill this shameless NPC? I can’t stand it anymore! He looks at me with disgust every time he sees me on the streets. Have I annoyed him before or something?”

Peppa_Boar: “I initially wanted him to forge an Epic Level weapon for me, but this bastard wanted to charge me 10,000 soul coins! Besides, when I was about to leave he even called me a broke dick under his breath. I was infuriated (angry emoji)!”

Invincible_Loneliness: “You guys got it easy. Do you know what happened to me? The Big Goose requested to borrow money from me just because he didn’t have money to buy alcohol from the Wood Spirit Clan! I want to strangle him so badly!”

A_Mammoth: “Fuck, I was late to read this post. That bastard has already borrowed 300 soul coins from me. I was trying to earn his favor, so I lent him the money. I’m regretting it immensely. I wonder if he will ever return my money (heartache)?”

Chief_Of_Demolition_Officers: “Thankfully, I’m always around the coast, and have not been to the Mansion of the Dead lately. That’s why I haven’t met this rascal. But, I’m already starting to worry about what I should do if I need to forge an Epic Level weapon in the future. What a headache!”

Crayon_Shinchan: “Tong Gua: You weaklings seem to be talking about me. This face slap is the first warning to you! (Image of Big Goose flapping its wings dishing out rapid face slaps)”

God_Slayer replying to Crayon_Shinchan: “You bastard, delete that image now!”

Crayon_Shinchan replying to God_Slayer: “It is already in my emoji collection so I’m not going to delete it. Bite me if you can (laughing emoji)!”

Lu Wu did not know how to react to Tong Gua’s deeds. He was a Ghost King, and nevertheless, Lu Wu would let him off the hook as long as he could complete his designated tasks.

At that moment, Tong Gua who started all this commotion sat on a cliff by the seas. He sipped the alcohol and enjoyed the sea breeze. He appeared slightly drunk.

“Ah... I’ve missed this. The Wood Spirit Clan makes the best wine. Cheers, brothers!” Tong Gua raised his wine glass.

The two people by his side then stretched out their hands as well. They clinked their glasses and finished their drinks in one go.

“Big brother, I... I can understand how you are feeling. It really sucks to be at fate’s mercy. Fate is just an asshole!” Ye Chen, who was also wasted, said as he held Tong Gua by the shoulder.

“It... it’s worse than that. Back then, I was acknowledged as the strongest Ghost King in Beiqi after all. Look at me now, I am just a blacksmith! I feel miserable,” Tong Gua then held onto Ye Chen’s shoulder as well. They shared similar sorrow.

“You are my brother now. As your big brother, of course I will not treat you badly. Why don’t you learn the Way of Fate from me?”

Ye Chen opened his eyes tipsily upon hearing it, “Way of Fate? Then, I’ll have to follow my fate after I learn it? No way. No way.”

Tong Gua glared at him after hearing his reply.

“Brother, don’t belittle the Way of Fate. Once it’s cultivated, you can become a god, who is as powerful as the Demonic God!”

“Really?” Ye Chen’s eyes widened in disbelief.

“Why would I lie to you? I will teach you the Way of Fate tomorrow. Once it’s cultivated, even Heaven and Earth will be within our reach. Then, we can boast as much as we want!”

Hearing that they could boast heedlessly, the man on Tong Gua’s left seemed rather excited.

Immediately, Tong Gua and Ye Chen turned their heads to look at him.

“Brother, what’s wrong?”

Liu Chai took a sip of his alcohol and revealed a remorseful expression.

“The joy of boasting only lasted momentarily. Now, I can’t even enter the Instance Dungeon. My two months of effort have been wasted...”

Tong Gua and Ye Chen ran out of words to reply to Liu Chai.

“Brother, your boast has certainly cost you greatly. You have our condolences!”

Tong Gua and Ye Chen patted Liu Chai on his shoulder to comfort him.

“Oh, yes. Brother Liu Chai, I heard that you are adept with your punches?”
Tong Gua took another sip of alcohol before he squinted and asked Liu Chai.

“It’s... it’s decent, I guess. I’m not afraid to take on anyone single-handedly!”

“You are also my brother. Since Brother Ye has already started learning the Way of Fate with me, I will lead you to a bright path, too.”

Liu Chai lifted his head. His eyes were misted by drunken stupor, “What do you mean by a bright path?”

Tong Gua lowered his head and pondered for a moment.

“There is a Dungeon Island in the Void Ocean. A champion with outstanding fighting skills lives there. If Brother Liu Chai can impress him with your talent, you might be able to inherit his legacy!”

Liu Chai was immediately moved by the idea, “Big Brother, how strong is this fighting master?”

“He once had a battle with the King of Beiqi, but he unfortunately lost. However, I reckon that he did not unleash his full potential. At the very least, he was far more powerful than me back then!”

“That’s amazing!”

Liu Chai's eyes popped out of his head. He knew that although Tong Gua, who was standing before him, appeared to be a weakling now, he was once the best of the Ghost King Peak Realm.

“He is indeed amazing. However, he has a strange temperament. He doesn't appear like a living thing to me. Instead, he seems more like a puppet. There are no traces of soul power in his body at all. Of course, it's also possible that he conceals it very well. Anyways, he is quite hard to deal with. You must prepare yourself if you're planning to visit him!”

Liu Chai nodded, “I'll go!”

Then, the three of them wrapped their arms around each other's shoulders and enjoyed the wine. Together, they shared their sorrows and shed tears of regret.

Chapter 131 - Descendants Of The Dead

At the Captivity Island in the Void Ocean...

A private Specter Ship sailed towards the island from afar. A figure jumped off the ship as it came closer to the shore and then proceeded to stow the Specter Ship.

"I guess it's here," Liu Chai mumbled, after taking a glance at the map to reaffirm their location.

This island was totally different from the islands that Liu Chai had explored before, as it seemed completely barren. There were no trees, the soil was black, and huge carbonized rocks stood everywhere, seemingly rather desolate.

After scanning around, a castle built with black stones on the mountaintop caught Liu Chai's eye in a flash.

According to what Tong Gua had said, the eccentric Fistfighting Master seemed to be living in this castle. Thus, Liu Chai hurriedly headed for the castle.

The island seemed rather peculiar, showing absolutely no signs of life. There were no beasts along the way as well. Liu Chai easily reached the castle on the mountaintop without hindrance.

The castle doors were wide open. Liu Chai was about to step into the castle, when he realized that there was a skeleton sitting by the castle doors. There were a few lines of words written on the skull.

Liu Chai could not understand the characters. However, with the help of the artifact's analyzing ability, the squiggled words gradually turned comprehensible.

.....

One day, I died.

Those who loved me missed me dearly, while those who hate me were in high spirits.

On the third day after my death, my corpse was buried deep under the ground. Those who hated me looked at my grave and laughed, while those who loved me did not dare to look as they shed their tears.

Three years later, my body had already decayed. My grave was exposed to wind and rain. Those who hated me occasionally mentioned me after tea, while those who loved me used silent tears to reminisce about me late at night.

A hundred years later, my body was no longer there, leaving only my skeleton. Those who hated me vaguely remembered my name but had forgotten my face, while those who loved me had a short silence when they reminisced about me. However, everything started to fade away.

A thousand years later, my grave was deserted. Those who hated me had forgotten about me, while those who loved me, had also lost their memories about me.

I had become a complete nobody to this world.

I worked diligently all my life, yet I could not bring anything from this world along with me. I was persistent throughout my life, yet I could not bring along any vanity or admiration with me. I wanted to cry, yet I could not make a sound; I wanted to repent, yet it was too late!

Love, hatred, relationships, and revenge. They would no longer serve any purpose when facing death. Many years later, they would all be buried under the ground.

.....

Liu Chai felt heartbroken reading those words.

Those words seemed to have a type of power. It was as if there was a hoarse voice narrating his story in the past, having an effect on Liu Chai's emotions.

Liu Chai sighed after looking at the skeleton. Then, he stood up straight and walked into the castle.

At that very moment, a black ray flashed through the eyes of the skull. Then, it disappeared from where it was, and reappeared in front of Liu Chai's eyes, startling him.

“Hello, I'm here to look for someone...”

The skeleton merely remained silent and stared fixedly at Liu Chai. The soul flame in its skull was burning weakly.

Liu Chai felt rather uneasy. He was about to walk around it and make his way in, but the skeleton blocked his path again.

“He... is... already dead...” a hoarse voice sounded in Liu Chai's mind.

Liu Chai was stunned to hear the voice and unconsciously asked, “The Fistfighting Master is dead?”

The skeleton nodded slightly.

Liu Chai was dumbfounded to hear the sudden news. He originally thought he would gain something through his visit here, but unexpectedly, the Fistfighting Master was already dead.

He lifted his head to take another look at the castle, feeling unsatisfied.

Thus, he asked, “Can I have a look inside?”

The skeleton did not reply. Suddenly, the soul fire in its skull blazed furiously, as it grabbed Liu Chai's right hand.

Liu Chai used his left hand to punch the skeleton's jaw in reflex. However, the punch did not cause any damage to the skeleton. Instead, a minus three

sign appeared on top of its head in red.

“The heart of a warrior... haha... a talented young one indeed.”

“What do you mean by the heart of a warrior? Let go of me!” Liu Chai yelled with rage when he felt the pain in his wrist.

“Didn’t you want to learn to fistfight? I can teach you, but you need to promise me one thing,” the hoarse voice of the skeleton sounded again in his mind.

“Didn’t you say he’s dead?” Liu Chai was shocked.

“Do I look alive to you?”

Liu Chai was so dumbfounded he didn’t know what to say next...

Liu Chai thought that it actually made sense. This figure before him was actually dead, completely dead.

“So, you are the Fistfighting Master? The one who had a battle with the King of Beiqi? The warrior who lost?”

The skeleton’s soul fire flickered. Then, it nodded in response.

Liu Chai became excited seeing that the skeleton had revealed its identity. He never thought that he could inherit his powers that easily.

“Come, hurry up and teach me!”

“You have not made your promise. I will teach you after you have done so.”

Liu Chai was dazed, and asked, “What do you want me to promise you?”

“Find Mu Zhiguang’s lost memory...”

“Mu Zhiguang? What do you mean?”

The soul flame in the skeleton's head started flickering again. A message then appeared in Liu Chai's mind, allowing him to understand the meaning behind the name, Mu Zhiguang.

Through this vague message, Liu Chai learned about the Mu Tehai Nation, which was once found within the Void Ocean and was known to have great powers.

It was a powerful existence, which once ruled the Void Ocean at the peak of its power.

The source of this message was a little boy who was kept in prison.

His name was Mu Zhiguang, born in the Reign Scepter, which was the most prestigious family in the Mu Tehai Nation.

Since young, he believed that the power of death was the most evil one of all. The power to control death would make a person fall. Yet, as he grew up, he realized that he was different from the rest of the clan. He possessed the most evil Talent of Death, instead of the clan's Oceanic Power.

Thus, he constantly suffered from anxiety and fear, wondering when he would fall. He might even become a henchman of the evil, and a disgrace to the family.

Just as he expected, when the clansmen found out about his Talent of Death, they immediately locked him up. They had even thought of giving him capital punishment.

The remaining messages were rather blurry and fragmented. However, Liu Chai saw the Mu Tehai Nation confronting a strong deadly force coming from the deep seas.

The evil forces from the depths of the sea were too powerful, thus the Mu Tehai Nation gradually declined upon their invasion.

At that moment, a person stepped forward.

In this country where death was detested, he used the power of death to protect the clan.

The world has inflicted torturous pain on me, yet I return the favor with kindness and love.

Mu Zhiguang led his clansmen to revolt, and made their way to the deep seas to wage war against the deadly force.

The messages started becoming even more blurry. The last thing that Liu Chai saw was a Vortex of Death emerging from the bottom of the sea, pulling the entire kingdom down and tearing the island apart.

It was Mu Zhiguang, who controlled death, that used his powers of death. He successfully retrieved the piece of land where his clansmen were staying from the Vortex of Death.

The entire Mu Tehai Nation was completely torn apart, a once glorious country had collapsed.

However, that was not the end of their misery. Those who survived the Vortex of Death were infected by the Power of Death from the bottom of the sea. Their bodies started to rot, as they lost consciousness and turned into zombie ghosts. When Mu Zhiguang saw what happened, he was extremely heartbroken as he could not save them.

He thought of killing them off to release them from their sufferings. Yet, this kind man could not do it. In the end, he chose to lock them up.

.....

As he began to regain consciousness, Liu Chai lifted his head and took a glance at the castle.

“Are they locked up in here?”

The skeleton shook his head and replied, “This is just spiritual sustenance which I have built based on my memories. I don’t know where they are. I could only remember that my clansmen seemed to be locked up in a castle.”

The soul fire in the skeleton's eyes turned dimmed while saying so.

“You are Mu Zhiguang?”

The skeleton shook his head again and said, “I should be a part of his body. I am not the complete Mu Zhiguang. That is why all I remember are parts of his memory. Yet, I cannot recall everything in the past.

Liu Chai frowned upon hearing the skeleton's explanation.

“What should I do? How do I find him?”

Chapter 132 - God'S Right Arm

“Just as I said, go find the rest of Mu Zhiguang’s body. Retrieve the lost memories and let me know the final answer.”

The skeleton’s reply gave Liu Chai a headache. He was here to learn some fistfighting skills, not to find bodies. This did not match his initial objectives.

“Are you willing to?”

[Inheritance Quest ‘Death’s Child’ Unlocked]

Quest details: Find the remaining body parts of Mu Zhiguang

Quest reward: Unknown

Are you willing to take on the quest?

“Boss, where do you expect me to find it? At least give me some hints. It’s unethical of you to post a task like this,” Liu Chai looked helpless.

The skeleton did not reply to him and merely waited for Liu Chai’s answer.

“Fine, I’ll do it. Teach me the fistfighting skills.”

The soul fire in the skeleton’s head flickered again after Liu Chai agreed. It then shook its head.

“The Power of Death in my body has been exhausted. I reckon that I would not exist for long, so I would not be able to teach you fistfighting skills.”

“Are you kidding me?” Liu Chai responded in shock immediately.

The skeleton shook its head again as its body started burning up. Then, it transformed into an onyx black liquid and rapidly attached itself onto Liu

Chai's right arm.

At that moment, a game notification appeared.

[Gained Incomplete Inheritance: Death's Son]

Inheritance Introduction: Gained the powers of the Death's Son Mu Zhiguang's right arm (Lord's Spirit).

Inheritance Abilities: Gained God's Right Arm (Special Passive), gained Body of the Dead (Special Passive), gained Special Fist Skill (Right Fist), gained Death's Curse (Special Negative State).

[God's Right Arm (Special Passive)]:

Skill Introduction: Mu Zhiguang's special arm that was transformed from his right arm after the exhaustion of the Power of Death. It still had a strong power, although no divine power remained (Internal Residual Consciousness).

Skill Attributes: Right arm gained 100% power increase, gained special skill (Unbreakable Max); gained special skill (Crush Level 3).

Unbreakable Max: The right arm has no durability consumption and cannot be crushed by powers below the God Level.

Crush Level 3: If God's Right Arm is used to attack the enemy's weapons, there would be chances of damaging enemy's weapons (This effect is affected by the user's power and the quality of the enemy's weapons).

[Body of the Dead (Special Passive)]:

Skill Introduction: Death was not the end, but another new form of life.

Skill Attributes: After death, it would transform into the Body of the Dead (50% weakening of all attributes) and continue the battle for ten minutes. The cooling time after that would be 24 hours.

[Fistfighting Skill (Right Fist) Level 1]:

Skill Introduction: Special abilities derived from God's Right Arm.

Skill Ability: Damages caused by all fighting skills increased by 20% (Because I have yet to learn the true powers of the fist, it can only be used on the right arm).

[Death's Curse (Special Negative State)]:

Curse Details: A curse made by Mu Zhiguang's right arm before its transformation. If his request is unfulfilled, God's Right Arm will automatically break apart.

Curse Duration: The next body part must be obtained within 365 days, otherwise the quest will be considered a failure.

[Game message, quest updates]:

[Inheritance Quest 'Death's Son']

Quest Details: Find Mu Zhiguang's remaining body parts and retrieve his complete memory.

Quest Reward: For each body part collected, a part of Mu Zhiguang's inheritance will be awarded.

(Note: Total number of body parts is unknown. Specific details unknown.)

Liu Chai was stunned for a few seconds after seeing the inheritance attributes which he had suddenly acquired.

He held his right arm that was now full of power. He suddenly did not know how to react, he actually gained the Inherited Power so easily.

However, what made him most speechless was that although the quest was to find the remaining body parts, there were no specific quest instructions. The whereabouts were also ambiguous. Besides that, if the task was not completed, the inheritance would disappear, which gave Liu Chai a headache.

It seemed like he could only find Tong Gua to ask about it.

Liu Chai raised his head helplessly to glance at the stone castle in front of him. After pondering for a moment, he made his way in.

Only this time, no one could stop him anymore.

.....

On top of the Cliffs of Desperation, at the same time when Liu Chai received the inheritance...

Suddenly, a weak soul fire appeared in the skull of the skeleton that was sitting next to the pillar pagoda. After moving its mouth a few times, the soul fire went out again.

Meanwhile, the white-haired old man, who was asleep in the wooden house on the mountainside, suddenly opened his eyes.

“Yoo-hoo... it’s getting even more lively, even the successor of Mu Zhiguang has appeared. Tsk tsk... interesting, interesting indeed!”

The white-haired old man closed his eyes again after saying so. Soon, the room was filled with loud snoring sounds.

.....

Liu Chai realized that the castle was completely empty after entering it, there was nothing placed inside at all.

As the rays of light shone in from outside, one could see that many historical records about the Mu Tehai Nation were carved on the walls of the stone castle.

Liu Chai was not interested in them at all and was about to leave, when he suddenly caught a glimpse of a familiar figure on the left wall.

So, he immediately approached the wall to take a closer look.

The bearded face, the sturdy figure, and also the iconic chest hair. Is that not the Sea King?

Liu Chai's eyes widened roundly.

In the mural, the person who looked very similar to the Sea King, was kneeling in front of a blurry figure and seemed to be swearing allegiance to him.

Fuck, the Sea King was a descendant of the Mu Tehai Nation? Liu Chai's eyes widened in surprise.

At that moment, a pair of blue eyes appeared on the Sea King's figure on the mural.

“Who's the one calling me?”

Liu Chai dared not reply and merely remained silent...

“Who are you, why did you call my name?”

Liu Chai was a bit dumbfounded at that moment. He did not know how exactly did the mural link to the Sea King.

Liu Chai did not have a good impression of the Sea King after interacting with the other members of the Ocean Clan. Besides, this person was bound to be the enemy of all the other players. Thus, Liu Chai simply replied without being polite.

“What's wrong? Can't I give you a call for no reason?”

“How dare you! Who are you? Why do you have telepathic communication abilities that is exclusively used by the Mu Tehai Nation?”

“Not only this. Can you see my right hand? I even have your ancestors in my hands!” Liu Chai replied rudely.

“You fucker, you're asking for death. Believe me when I say I'll slap you!”

“Come! If I don’t see you within five seconds, you are just a son of a bitch!”

Sea King, “Fuck you!”

Liu Chai, “Fuck you!”

Both began having a war of words, mocking the other party’s friends, families, and even their dead ancestors.

As the exchange of profanity continued on, the Sea King suddenly paused in shock and became infuriated.

“You’re saying that you have stolen my Son of the Sea?”

“It was me. In fact, I grabbed two of them. I ate them and they were absolutely scrumptious. I even wanted a third one. Do you have more, foolish Sea King? Get me another one to quench my thirst, will you?”

The Sea King exploded in anger. He never thought that the person in front of him was the one who had stolen his treasures.

The Sea King in the Crystal Palace started trembling violently, as wrath overwhelmed him. Intense rage surged within him, as he forcefully slammed the table in front of him.

“Men, call the armies and come with me!”

“Fuck, are you serious?”

“Don’t even think of running away. I know where you are, prepare to die!”

“Remember to bring another Son of the Sea when you come over, don’t make me wait too long!” Liu Chai pointed out his middle finger as he said so. Then, he waved his right arm and swatted the pair of blue eyes away from the air.

“Phew, that was exciting!” Liu Chai ended the conversation and chuckled. Then, he trotted his way out of the stone palace, and began ambling toward

the coast.

“Fleeing after scolding, how thrilling!”

Liu Chai immediately summoned his Specter Ship after arriving at the coast. Then, he swiftly boarded the ship and began sailing toward the Liuli Coast.

Chapter 133 - Oncoming Strike Of The Sea King

Void Ocean, Captivity Island.

The huge sea creatures cried shrilly, as the entire island was covered with them. They were of various colors and surrounded the periphery of the lonely island.

The Sea King was inside the stone castle on Captivity Island, staring at the mural on the castle wall with a serious expression.

He was certain that this was where the signal came from. Yet, he could not find the being that sent the signal, even after searching the entire island.

To his great surprise, these murals actually recorded the past of the Void Ocean's peak of civilization, the Mu Tehai Nation.

The Sea King scanned the mural briefly, before finally laying his eyes on the blurry figure that he was worshipping.

“Mu Zhiguang!”

As the heir to the throne of the Mu Tehai Nation, how could he be unfamiliar with the nation's savior? In the end, he was also the one who passed the throne to him.

However, these were all done against his own will, as it was the aspiration of the nation's people. Thus, he had no choice but to heed their wishes.

This was ultimately the reason that he chose to betray the Mu Tehai Nation and establish new forces by the Void Ocean. His armies greatly increased in strength after the fall of the Mu Tehai Nation, which made him the Sea King that he was now.

These murals made the Sea King recall certain memories.

However, he was confused about something. A person who was not a descendant of the Mu Tehai clan would not have the ability to use their unique communication method. Logically speaking, the descendants of the Mu Tehai Nation should have all been turned into zombie ghosts, except for Mu Zhiguang, who had disappeared. Why did it appear again?

“Is Mu Zhiguang back?” the Sea King’s expression froze suddenly, and his heart could not help but tremble in fear at the speculation.

He knew how powerful the guy who owned the Power of Death was. His powers were godly, and if he went berserk, his power could rival a god’s power. Except for the Guardian Spirit Tao Wu who slept seabed all year long, no one else in the entire Void Ocean could go against him.

However, the Sea King thought that his theory was quite ridiculous.

That person actually traveled to the abyss of the sea to avenge his clansmen, and fought against the Dead Clan alone. Hence, he should have died long ago, and it would be impossible for him to return.

The Sea King took a deep breath to calm his troubled mind. Then, he simply turned around and promptly left.

However, the Sea King did consider the armies’ expedition this time. He could not afford to be sloppy when dealing with the matters of the Mu Tehai Nation. However, since he did not obtain any results from his investigation, he did not want to travel in vain. He jumped onto the giant whale and let out a deafening howl.

“Debt collection, to the Liuli Coast!”

Following that, the huge army of sea creatures turned around and headed for the Liuli Coast, preparing to find Cha Na and ask for Yin souls.

.....

At the Liuli Coast...

Under the dazzling sunlight, the sea breeze was blowing gently. Meanwhile, the sound of waves crashing on the beach, was intertwined with the noisy cries of the seagulls. Everything in front of them was filled with tranquil beauty.

Many leisure players even put up parasols and basked in the sun, as they drank freshly squeezed fruit juice and enjoyed a wonderful holiday life.

Just then, the distant sea suddenly set off a gigantic wave, which rose continuously as it traveled toward the coast.

Countless figures of sea beasts could be seen emerging from the huge wave. The Sea King's army was storming toward the coast menacingly.

The players who witnessed the scene on the coast were absolutely shocked.

However, the players had experiences in dealing with an invasion. This time, they managed to summon other players efficiently. Some had gone to the forum, some entered the live streaming channels, while some others started to announce on the regional channel.

Soon, a large number of players had learned about the news of the invasion at the Liuli Coast. The major guilds began to convene manpower and swarmed toward there as well.

Similarly, Lu Wu and Bei Li found out about the Sea King's invasion and immediately directed their gaze to the Liuli Coast.

“Cha Na!” the Sea King screamed, as soon as he approached the shoreline.

This all-rounding group attack caused the words ‘Blood loss’ to appear in red above the heads of all the players on the coast.

Players who were familiar with the Sea King's loud voice as he approached, quickly retreated and started waiting for support.

The Sea King's roar echoed through the air again.

The Sea King was rather confused when he got closer.

He had already screamed three times, yet Cha Na had not shown up. Could he be hiding?

The Sea King did not understand what was going on. Then, he leaped from the back of the giant whale and headed toward Cha Na's mansion.

When he reached Cha Na's Ghost King Palace, the Sea King was completely astounded by the scene that greeted him.

In front of Cha Na's Ghost King Palace, there was a wooden sculpture erected at its door. It was molded in the shape of Cha Na lying on the ground and sticking out his tongue to lick a pile of feces.

Most importantly, Cha Na's expression on the wooden sculpture looked extremely happy.

The Sea King was dumbfounded, and was confused about what was going on. Could it be that Cha Na had this kind of hobby?

As the Sea King was deep in his thoughts, countless silhouettes suddenly appeared around him. They were all carrying weapons and approaching him slowly, step by step.

"Where is Cha Na?" the Sea King frowned.

"He is dead!" Wu Guoyi who was at the front, answered without hesitation.

"Dead?" the Sea King was stunned momentarily. As he glanced at the wooden sculpture again, he began to believe that it was true.

"How did he die?"

"He was beaten up and killed by us, in a ruthless way," said a player at the back.

"Then, who is in charge of Liuli District now?"

"It would be us, of course!" the players said in complete unison.

The Sea King spread his hands apart and said, “I don’t care who’s in charge of this place. Since Cha Na is dead, you shall be the ones to pay his debts for him! The total amount is 200,000 Yin souls, when will you pay the money?”

“Are you crazy, 200,000 soul coins? Fuck you! Where is the Second Commander, bring out the Italian Artillery, I’m going to blow him up!”

“200,000 soul coins? That’s just worse than a daylight robbery! You’re as greedy as Tao Wu!”

“Where is Tong Gua? Call him over here and give him a double-wing rapid face slap warning. He should know better!”

.....

The players started avidly discussing among themselves, while the Sea King’s expression started to darken.

“Does this mean all of you don’t plan to pay the money?”

“Of course, we will, but can we pay with installments?” Wu Guoyi took a step forward and said with a smile.

“Installments?” the Sea King was dumbfounded, it was his first time hearing this word. “How does an installment work?”

“We’ll give you a single soul coin every year. Since the debt is 200,000 soul coins, we’ll be able to settle the debt in 200,000 years.”

The players burst out laughing when they heard Wu Guoyi’s words, while the Sea King’s face turned red with fury.

“This means that you want to be my enemy now,” said the Sea King with a condescending sneer.

When the players heard him, they tightly gripped their weapons, preparing for an oncoming battle.

Just as a battle was about to break out, a figure walked through the crowd, stepping with the tip of his feet inward. He took a look at Cha Na's sculpture first and froze for a few seconds. Then, he looked at the Sea King.

"Hello... Lord Sea King, what brings you here to the Liuli Coast?"

It was Tong Gua who showed up.

At this point, he had been digitized. He knew that he had an immortal body, so he greeted the Sea King calmly.

"Tong Gua?" the contempt on the Sea King's expression started to fade.

He had heard about the prestigious Tong Gua, he was the strongest Ghost King in the Land of Beiqi besides the King of Beiqi himself. His strength cannot be underestimated, it would not be any weaker than himself.

The Sea King would have no qualms about bullying Cha Na, the Ghost General. However, he would really need to consider the risks if his opponent was Tong Gua.

"Lord Sea King, how did you have the time to visit Beiqi? Did you miss our King of Beiqi?" Tong Gua waltzed to the front of the player with an in-toeing gait.

The Sea King's expression darkened when he heard Tong Gua mention the King of Beiqi. After all, it was no secret in Beiqi that he was insulted by the King of Beiqi before.

"Tong Gua, what are you trying to say!?"

"Nothing. To tell you the truth, Cha Na had always been an eyesore to me, so I killed him a few days ago. Now, Liuli District belongs to me. You have no opinion on this, do you?"

"Yours?"

The Sea King was surprised, but he also had an epiphany. For Tong Gua, murdering Cha Na would be an easy task.

“That’s right, it’s my territory now. Lord Sea King would not think of asking me for Yin souls, would you?”

The Sea King’s expression seemed troubled after hearing the news.

Although he had the confidence to defeat Tong Gua, both of them possessed the greatest strength of a Ghost King. Even if he won, he would have to pay a heavy price. However, it would be embarrassing if he simply left.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu and Bei Li were watching this scene intently. They broke into a cold sweat for Tong Gua, who was simply pretending, as they were afraid that his act would be exposed.

Chapter 134 - Half Ghost Emperor

The Sea King found it rather perplexing that Tong Gua had claimed ownership of the Liuli Coast.

The collection of protection fees had always revolved around the stronger party receiving it from a weaker party. However, when both parties' abilities were evenly matched, that would make it a difficult task.

“Fine, since Liuli is now your territory, I’ll do you a favor. Forget about the Yin souls!”

Tong Gua smiled upon hearing it. However, as he was about to make a reply, the Sea King seemed to be anticipating something.

“Tong Gua, I heard that you’re the incarnation of Beiqi’s Guardian Spirit. I’ve always wanted to know how strong you are. Since I’m here today, how about we have a duel?”

The smile on Tong Gua’s face stiffened after hearing what he said.

“Err... forget about the duel. I’m quite lazy, so I don’t really enjoy fighting.”

“We can’t just forget about it, it’s been a long time since I have encountered an evenly matched opponent. Now that I’ve met you, I must grab the opportunity.”

The Sea King then pointed his finger toward the coast, “Let’s do it by the coast, since it would be inconvenient to fight in your territory.”

Tong Gua swore silently in his heart. If he refused to fight, he would raise the Sea King’s suspicion.

So, he simply coughed and replied, “Lord Sea King, to tell you the truth, I’m consolidating my cultivations recently, to ascend into the realm of

Ghost Emperors. At this stage, it is better if I don't use force.”

“Ghost Emperor?” the Sea King looked surprised when he heard it.

The realm of Ghost Emperors could only be attained by powerful men, who were at the level of His Excellency. Yet, he did not doubt Tong Gua's words. After all, he heard that Ghost King Tong Gua had reached his peak for many years, it would not be surprising if he was already halfway toward becoming a Ghost Emperor now.

“Very well! I shall come and duel with you next time!”

The Sea King seemed rather solemn when he realized that Tong Gua was almost a Ghost Emperor already.

“Sure, next time,” Tong Gua replied calmly.

The Sea King abandoned the thought of challenging him, and slammed his right foot onto the ground to propel his body into the sky.

“Boom!”

“Ah!”

As the Sea King made his landing, he created a massive crater on the ground. Tong Gua, who was standing by the side, lost his balance and fell onto the ground.

Displeased, Tong Gua immediately patted his wings and stood up. However, a drop of cold sweat fell from his forehead, as he realized that the Sea King was floating in the sky and looking confusingly at him.

When the players around them saw what happened, they could not help covering their faces. He almost successfully completed his act, yet he could not balance himself in the end.

Tong Gua merely remained silent as he stared at the Sea King.

Then, he laughingly said, “Lord Sea King, why are you still around? Didn’t I say it already? We will have our challenge next time.”

The Sea King merely kept mum. Suddenly, he lifted his right foot and stamped it in the air.

Instantly, an explosion thundered through the air, as a huge airstream gyrated from the sky and drilled viciously downward.

The players below instantly fell down under the impact of the powerful air currents, and even Tong Gua fell flat on his face.

“Tong Gua! Did you lose the results of your cultivation?” the Sea King could already guess by looking at the situation.

Tong Gua awkwardly rose to his feet and replied, “How could it be? You’re my guest from afar. Would you believe it if I said I was acting to please you when I fell?”

Tong Gua’s explanation made the players around cover their faces in shame again. Did the Big Goose think that the Sea King was an idiot?

The Sea King seemed unconvinced. In order to confirm it, he reached out and grabbed Tong Gua. Tong Gua simply could not resist the overwhelming force and was sucked into the sky.

“You really did lose them. Tong Gua, how did you actually end up like this?”

Tong Gua trembled in fear, but he still stubbornly mumbled in a low voice, “I really... did not lose my cultivation.”

“Tong Gua, it’s the law of the jungle in the underworld, for the strong to feast on the weak. Now that you have lost your cultivation, you would serve as a great tonic. You can’t blame me for it,” the Sea King looked pleasantly surprised.

“So what? Since you have lost your cultivation, then your soul flesh would greatly help me in becoming the Ghost Emperor. Why can’t I devour you?”

while saying so, the Sea King grabbed Tong Gua who was hovering in the air.

Then, the Sea King swiftly zoomed toward the coast, as Tong Gua's sad tears were scattered in the air.

The players below were rendered speechless at this scene...

“Looks like the crisis is gone?”

“Looks like it.”

“That means we will be fine, right?”

“Everyone, dismiss. Go and do what you must.”

After that, the players left, one by one. As for Tong Gua's destiny, they were not worried at all. In fact, they felt rather happy about it.

After all, this unscrupulous NPC had always been fooling them, which made them rather displeased.

The sea creatures at the coast roared and greeted the Sea King upon seeing his arrival.

After jumping onto the back of the giant whale, the Sea King put Tong Gua down. However, his eyes were still full of astonishment.

Although Tong Gua had lost his cultivation, the Sea King believed that Tong Gua was much more precious than millions of Yin souls. He was still the best tonic.

Meanwhile, Tong Gua seemed extremely bitter and stared at the Sea King resentfully.

“Lord Sea King, we're old friends after all. You are too unethical.”

“Unethical? Don't you know the law of the jungle? The weak will always be the prey of the stronger party.”

The Sea King shook his head helplessly, as he suddenly found Tong Gua really embarrassing. Compared to his powerful image as the Spirit Guardian of the Land of Beiqi that the Sea King had remembered, he seemed completely different now.

The Sea King waved his arm, causing the seawater by the coast to condense and form a huge wave, as the entire sea creature army retreated from the coast.

Many players, who came to watch the scene on the coast out of curiosity, saw this and waved farewell happily at Tong Gua from a distance.

Tong Gua's resentment grew as he secretly grit his teeth. Don't let me go back, or I will surely seek revenge!

Tong Gua suddenly felt a warm current in his body while he was angry. Then, a layer of green energy appeared on the surface of his body, so he kept staring.

Tong Gua was in tears when he felt that he had regained his powers. He could feel that this time, he had achieved half of a Ghost Emperor's power.

Tong Gua's appearance gradually changed.

Then, he turned over and stood on the back of the giant whale, as he leered at the Sea King mockingly.

“Sea King, I treated you with courtesy, yet you were so aggressive. Don't blame me for being cruel this time.”

The Sea King turned his head around in confusion to look at Tong Gua. He could not understand how Tong Gua could suddenly change, even though he was on the ground gritting his teeth a while ago.

“Take my Celestial Crane Kick!”

Tong Gua's launched both of his feet and ruthlessly kicked the Sea King's face. The Sea King was immediately launched from the back of the giant whale, like a cannonball.

After regaining his senses, the Sea King instantly slammed his palms backward to stabilize himself in the air.

However, Tong Gua's arrogant laugh echoed from behind.

“Sea King, you little punk, eat my double-wing face slap!”

The Sea King turned around immediately and roared, thrusting a powerful punch at his opponent.

Although it was a mighty punch, it could not penetrate the green energy around Tong Gua's body, merely creating a few ripples.

Tong Gua sneered loudly as he fluttered his wings.

“Tong Gua's first move, Celestial Crane Wing Attack!”

His wings instantly transformed into thousands of phantoms, constantly hitting the Sea King's face just like spinning wheels.

This force was extremely overpowering. The Sea King yelled and wanted to resist, but the Shield Oceanic Power around his body broke in less than three seconds as the attacks rained on his face.

“Roar!” at this moment, the Sea King slammed his right arm forward and hit Tong Gua again.

Although the attack caused no damage, the Sea King managed to escape Tong Gua's thousand-winged combo using the thrust.

However, before the Sea King could stabilize his body in the air, Tong Gua fluttered his wings and appeared in front of him again.

“Tong Gua's second move, Crazy Fling!”

Tong Gua held the Sea King's arm and threw him over his shoulder. Then, he instantly flew and caught up with the Sea King, before grabbing his arm again and flinging him over his shoulder.

As he was thrown around continuously, the Sea King's figure turned into a blurry rotating shadow that was constantly rolling in the air.

“Tong Gua's third move, Phantom Kick!”

Tong Gua kicked the Sea King around in the air like a ball using his rapid movement.

The Sea King felt bitter as he was being beaten up. Is it really fun for you to pretend to be weak? So he was really acting when he fell last time. Why didn't I appreciate it, I regret it now...

The feeling of being beaten up reminded him of the King of Beiqi, as his heart suddenly felt heavy.

The players who saw the scene on the coast were stunned. Some players immediately opened the streaming forum and broadcast the fight.

Soon, a large number of players entered the live broadcast channel. They were all surprised when they saw the scene.

“Is Big Goose so amazing? He could actually beat a Ghost King?”

“When this guy was drunk previously, he told me that someone like the Sea King wasn't worthy of being his opponent at all. He even mentioned beating up all the Ghost Kings in the Land of Beiqi before, he was not lying after all...”

“Big Goose really put up a good act this time. Sure enough, you can't mess with those who leave it to fate, as exemplified by Ye Chen.”

Chapter 134 – Half Ghost Emperor

The Sea King found it rather perplexing that Tong Gua had claimed ownership of the Liuli Coast.

The collection of protection fees had always revolved around the stronger party receiving it from a weaker party. However, when both parties' abilities were evenly matched, that would make it a difficult task.

“Fine, since Liuli is now your territory, I’ll do you a favor. Forget about the Yin souls!”

Tong Gua smiled upon hearing it. However, as he was about to make a reply, the Sea King seemed to be anticipating something.

“Tong Gua, I heard that you’re the incarnation of Beiqi’s Guardian Spirit. I’ve always wanted to know how strong you are. Since I’m here today, how about we have a duel?”

The smile on Tong Gua’s face stiffened after hearing what he said.

“Err... forget about the duel. I’m quite lazy, so I don’t really enjoy fighting.”

“We can’t just forget about it, it’s been a long time since I have encountered an evenly matched opponent. Now that I’ve met you, I must grab the opportunity.”

The Sea King then pointed his finger toward the coast, “Let’s do it by the coast, since it would be inconvenient to fight in your territory.”

Tong Gua swore silently in his heart. If he refused to fight, he would raise the Sea King’s suspicion.

So, he simply coughed and replied, “Lord Sea King, to tell you the truth, I’m consolidating my cultivations recently, to ascend into the realm of Ghost Emperors. At this stage, it is better if I don’t use force.”

“Ghost Emperor?” the Sea King looked surprised when he heard it.

The realm of Ghost Emperors could only be attained by powerful men, who were at the level of His Excellency. Yet, he did not doubt Tong Gua’s words. After all, he heard that Ghost King Tong Gua had reached his peak for many years, it would not be surprising if he was already halfway toward becoming a Ghost Emperor now.

“Very well! I shall come and duel with you next time!”

The Sea King seemed rather solemn when he realized that Tong Gua was almost a Ghost Emperor already.

“Sure, next time,” Tong Gua replied calmly.

The Sea King abandoned the thought of challenging him, and slammed his right foot onto the ground to propel his body into the sky.

“Boom!”

“Ah!”

As the Sea King made his landing, he created a massive crater on the ground. Tong Gua, who was standing by the side, lost his balance and fell onto the ground.

Displeased, Tong Gua immediately patted his wings and stood up. However, a drop of cold sweat fell from his forehead, as he realized that the Sea King was floating in the sky and looking confusingly at him.

When the players around them saw what happened, they could not help covering their faces. He almost successfully completed his act, yet he could not balance himself in the end.

Tong Gua merely remained silent as he stared at the Sea King.

Then, he laughingly said, “Lord Sea King, why are you still around? Didn’t I say it already? We will have our challenge next time.”

The Sea King merely kept mum. Suddenly, he lifted his right foot and stamped it in the air.

Instantly, an explosion thundered through the air, as a huge airstream gyrated from the sky and drilled viciously downward.

The players below instantly fell down under the impact of the powerful air currents, and even Tong Gua fell flat on his face.

“Tong Gua! Did you lose the results of your cultivation?” the Sea King could already guess by looking at the situation.

Tong Gua awkwardly rose to his feet and replied, “How could it be? You’re my guest from afar. Would you believe it if I said I was acting to please you when I fell?”

Tong Gua’s explanation made the players around cover their faces in shame again. Did the Big Goose think that the Sea King was an idiot?

The Sea King seemed unconvinced. In order to confirm it, he reached out and grabbed Tong Gua. Tong Gua simply could not resist the overwhelming force and was sucked into the sky.

“You really did lose them. Tong Gua, how did you actually end up like this?”

Tong Gua trembled in fear, but he still stubbornly mumbled in a low voice, “I really... did not lose my cultivation.”

“Tong Gua, it’s the law of the jungle in the underworld, for the strong to feast on the weak. Now that you have lost your cultivation, you would serve as a great tonic. You can’t blame me for it,” the Sea King looked pleasantly surprised.

“So what? Since you have lost your cultivation, then your soul flesh would greatly help me in becoming the Ghost Emperor. Why can’t I devour you?” while saying so, the Sea King grabbed Tong Gua who was hovering in the air.

Then, the Sea King swiftly zoomed toward the coast, as Tong Gua’s sad tears were scattered in the air.

The players below were rendered speechless at this scene...

“Looks like the crisis is gone?”

“Looks like it.”

“That means we will be fine, right?”

“Everyone, dismiss. Go and do what you must.”

After that, the players left, one by one. As for Tong Gua’s destiny, they were not worried at all. In fact, they felt rather happy about it.

After all, this unscrupulous NPC had always been fooling them, which made them rather displeased.

The sea creatures at the coast roared and greeted the Sea King upon seeing his arrival.

After jumping onto the back of the giant whale, the Sea King put Tong Gua down. However, his eyes were still full of astonishment.

Although Tong Gua had lost his cultivation, the Sea King believed that Tong Gua was much more precious than millions of Yin souls. He was still the best tonic.

Meanwhile, Tong Gua seemed extremely bitter and stared at the Sea King resentfully.

“Lord Sea King, we’re old friends after all. You are too unethical.”

“Unethical? Don’t you know the law of the jungle? The weak will always be the prey of the stronger party.”

The Sea King shook his head helplessly, as he suddenly found Tong Gua really embarrassing. Compared to his powerful image as the Spirit Guardian of the Land of Beiqi that the Sea King had remembered, he seemed completely different now.

The Sea King waved his arm, causing the seawater by the coast to condense and form a huge wave, as the entire sea creature army retreated from the coast.

Many players, who came to watch the scene on the coast out of curiosity, saw this and waved farewell happily at Tong Gua from a distance.

Tong Gua's resentment grew as he secretly grit his teeth. Don't let me go back, or I will surely seek revenge!

Tong Gua suddenly felt a warm current in his body while he was angry. Then, a layer of green energy appeared on the surface of his body, so he kept staring.

Tong Gua was in tears when he felt that he had regained his powers. He could feel that this time, he had achieved half of a Ghost Emperor's power.

Tong Gua's appearance gradually changed.

Then, he turned over and stood on the back of the giant whale, as he leered at the Sea King mockingly.

“Sea King, I treated you with courtesy, yet you were so aggressive. Don't blame me for being cruel this time.”

The Sea King turned his head around in confusion to look at Tong Gua. He could not understand how Tong Gua could suddenly change, even though he was on the ground gritting his teeth a while ago.

“Take my Celestial Crane Kick!”

Tong Gua's launched both of his feet and ruthlessly kicked the Sea King's face. The Sea King was immediately launched from the back of the giant whale, like a cannonball.

After regaining his senses, the Sea King instantly slammed his palms backward to stabilize himself in the air.

However, Tong Gua's arrogant laugh echoed from behind.

“Sea King, you little punk, eat my double-wing face slap!”

The Sea King turned around immediately and roared, thrusting a powerful punch at his opponent.

Although it was a mighty punch, it could not penetrate the green energy around Tong Gua's body, merely creating a few ripples.

Tong Gua sneered loudly as he fluttered his wings.

“Tong Gua's first move, Celestial Crane Wing Attack!”

His wings instantly transformed into thousands of phantoms, constantly hitting the Sea King's face just like spinning wheels.

This force was extremely overpowering. The Sea King yelled and wanted to resist, but the Shield Oceanic Power around his body broke in less than three seconds as the attacks rained on his face.

“Roar!” at this moment, the Sea King slammed his right arm forward and hit Tong Gua again.

Although the attack caused no damage, the Sea King managed to escape Tong Gua's thousand-winged combo using the thrust.

However, before the Sea King could stabilize his body in the air, Tong Gua fluttered his wings and appeared in front of him again.

“Tong Gua's second move, Crazy Fling!”

Tong Gua held the Sea King's arm and threw him over his shoulder. Then, he instantly flew and caught up with the Sea King, before grabbing his arm again and flinging him over his shoulder.

As he was thrown around continuously, the Sea King's figure turned into a blurry rotating shadow that was constantly rolling in the air.

“Tong Gua's third move, Phantom Kick!”

Tong Gua kicked the Sea King around in the air like a ball using his rapid movement.

The Sea King felt bitter as he was being beaten up. Is it really fun for you to pretend to be weak? So he was really acting when he fell last time. Why

didn't I appreciate it, I regret it now...

The feeling of being beaten up reminded him of the King of Beiqi, as his heart suddenly felt heavy.

The players who saw the scene on the coast were stunned. Some players immediately opened the streaming forum and broadcast the fight.

Soon, a large number of players entered the live broadcast channel. They were all surprised when they saw the scene.

“Is Big Goose so amazing? He could actually beat a Ghost King?”

“When this guy was drunk previously, he told me that someone like the Sea King wasn't worthy of being his opponent at all. He even mentioned beating up all the Ghost Kings in the Land of Beiqi before, he was not lying after all...”

“Big Goose really put up a good act this time. Sure enough, you can't mess with those who leave it to fate, as exemplified by Ye Chen.”

Chapter 135 - Return To Origin

The silhouettes of Tong Gua and the Sea King continuously clashed at one another as they fought in the sky.

Tong Gua was filled with satisfaction and excitement, feeling as though he had come back to life again.

Fighting others is very satisfying and exciting, after all!

However, the Sea King, who was being beaten up, felt as though his bones were about to break.

He had tried to retaliate, but even a powerful Ghost King like him was no match for Tong Gua, who was halfway through his Ghost Emperor class. Both of their powers were on different levels, so he could not defend himself against Tong Gua's attacks.

When the Sea King was about to use his strongest attack and summon the Sea Spirit, Tong Gua suddenly stopped attacking him.

After that, his body suddenly absorbed the green energy. As he floated midair with his legs crossed and his eyes tightly shut, his body slowly began to drift downwards.

“Tong Gua's Ultimate Attack, Return to Origin!”

As Tong Gua's body was descending from the sky, a drop of sweat fell from his forehead, while his heart pounded endlessly.

Hearing that it was an Ultimate Attack, the Sea King was extremely shocked as he originally wanted to use his as well. He seized the opportunity and dodged sideways, feeling toward the horizon.

“Sea King Army! Retreat!”

At that moment, Tong Gua sneakily peered at him with one eye.

Seeing that the Sea King was retreating in fear, Tong Gua's arrogance was ignited again.

“Little Sea King, don't run away! Wait for me to focus my power and face my Ultimate Attack!”

The Sea King did not even turn his head when he heard this. He flew even faster and instantly disappeared into the horizon.

The Sea King Army below was overcome by fear when they saw their King running away. The soldiers desperately forced their sea beasts to hurry, as they followed after the Sea King.

“Splash! Glug!”

Tong Gua suddenly fell into the water. As his body slowly sank into the depths, bubbles of air broke through the water surface...

Other players held their breaths in silence...

A second later, Tong Gua's head resurfaced above the water, frantically flapping his wings against the water's surface.

“Help me! I don't know how to swim, someone quickly please help me!”

Looking at Tong Gua struggling in the sea, the other players that were watching the live stream covered their faces simultaneously, as they all had a similar thought.

This was so embarrassing!

For the players on the coast, they seemed speechless. After exchanging quick glances with each other, they went their separate ways, leaving behind the flailing Tong Gua as the sun set.

.....

The threat of the Sea King's attack was neutralized, leaving Lu Wu and Bei Li at a loss for words.

However, they had witnessed Tong Gua's pretending skills before. Thus, they could not help but feel relieved. Judging by the current level of the players' ability, it was too early for them to try and defeat the Sea King.

However, the Sea King's appearance instilled a strong feeling of danger in them. Thus, they fervently discussed the methods to develop Oceanic Power in the forum.

As soon as the battle ended, a certain fan professionally brought up the First Law of the game on the forum.

[The Law of Unpredictable Pretense].

In this post, the professional gamer used Ye Chen and Tong Gua as examples in his detailed analysis, before ultimately arriving at this conclusion.

Unpredictable chance = Pretense!

When one looked at Ye Chen's successes, one could learn something from it. If the time was right, then it would be the time to put on an act.

In no time at all, the Law of Unpredictable Pretense gained immense popularity on the forum.

This type of post was even acknowledged by many other gamers. Someone even went so far as to create a Society of The Mystery of Unpredictable Pretense and spent all day discussing the feasibility of this unpredictability.

Apart from those people with nothing to do, there was another pinned thread that caught Lu Wu's attention.

[Today, I Found Something Unbelievable].

The original poster of the forum thread was a current student. In the morning, he was at the dojo busy practicing Taekwondo with his

roommates.

At the time, one of my friends got into a conflict with another Taekwondo student, and they actually prepared to fight it out for real.

Then, my friend was beaten soundly. (Didn't know whether to cry or laugh, honestly!)

However, when I was watching them fight, no matter what was happening, I still felt that their fighting techniques were really weak (perhaps I have this feeling because I have seen many pro-gamers' live streams). Something suddenly came over me and I was about to help avenge my friend (when I entered the fight, I did feel a bit guilty).

I had never fought before and I was not good at fighting. However, since I had already made up my mind, what else could I do? All I could think of were the player killing skills I had learned from the forum, as well as how to use the skills in the game.

In the beginning, I was kicked twice by that rascal and soon lost my advantage. This made me really mad and I was going to give it my all. So, I used the Assassin's Shadow Steps and dodged his attacks. After that, the rascal couldn't even land a kick on me, I was running circles around him.

You guys may not believe what I saw, but I really beat that guy using that method! (I tired him out!)

On the way home, my friends kept looking oddly at me. (Ha ha!)

But after finishing the fight, there was one thing on my mind. It seemed that although we cannot truly use the skills from the game in real life, these battle skills could still be useful.

Just like the Assassin's Special Skill, Shadow Step.

In the game, if this special skill was used, the player's avatar would suddenly become light as a feather. Their steps and movements would be untraceable.

But if used in real-life situations, even though the full effects of the ability might be absent, the nimble footwork would enable one to become extremely agile during fights. This fighting method of retreating in order to advance was really useful.

If you don't believe me, maybe you should put it to the test for real.

(If you get beaten up by others, please don't come after me!)

The appearance of this post instantly garnered great attention from the gamers.

Crayon_Shinchan: "If the original poster has any conscience, can you please come and pay my hospital bill, I'm at the hospital watching TV right now. (Amused Face)"

Strike_Gold: "It's not unusual, this sort of game is made very realistically. If you usually spend a lot of time fighting outdoors, I guarantee you that in real life, your fighting ability will become stronger."

Peppa_Boar: "You're making a fuss out of nothing, haven't you noticed that a lot of pro-gamers are skilled fighters in real-life? If their real-life fighting skills can be adapted into gameplay, then naturally, you can do it too. Of course, this doesn't apply to casting skills. (Amused Face)"

Xueli_The_Strongest: "Come on~ As a Xueli with more than two months of gaming under my belt, I have actually gotten a lot stronger in real life, too. I'm going to try out my skills on my boyfriend tonight. Hehe~"

Broke_Trash: "I feel that everyone has gone off-topic here, the example that he brought up was the use of Shadow Steps. In other words, this sort of ability from the game can be merged with reality. (Apart from casting abilities)"

A_Mammoth: "I can only say that the game is made with great care and detail, but this isn't unusual. For the old Wuxia Adventure games, the characters' skills were all based on real-time recording inputs of real Wushu exponents."

Taoist_Zombie_Hunter: “This game has many easter eggs and hidden opportunities, it’s also intertwined with real life. It depends on your luck, whether you can get one or not. I managed to uncover an easter egg using my real-life inside knowledge. How lovely~ That’s it for now, I found a treasure in the Nightmare Zone and I’m preparing to search for it!”

Crayon_Shinchan in reply to Taoist_Zombie_Hunter: “OMG, you’re the corpse that obtained that eastereEgg? Quick, send me your attributes chart, or I’ll report you to the police!”

Taoist_Zombie_Hunter: “Mr. Big Troll, if you mess with me again, believe me, I will dig your ancestral grave (Amused Face)”

Crayon_Shinchan in reply to Taoist_Zombie_Hunter: “So fierce!”

Taoist_Zombie_Hunter in reply to Crayon_Shinchan: “Do not disturb! I’m in the process of digging up graves! Once the player vs player arena opens I’m gonna be famous!”

.....

Lu Wu briefly kept an eye on the gamers’ discussion about the possibility of using in-game skills in real life, but he felt that no trouble would arise.

According to what Bei Li had said, although the gamers could use a similar type of these skills in real life, they lacked cultivation. Thus, it was impossible for them to use the skills that actually required cultivation.

Most importantly, they were not cultivators. Hence, other than just the shape of those skills, they were clueless about the energy channeling that was needed during the usage of skills. Thus, using them perfectly was impossible.

Chapter 136 - The Big Treasure

Beiqi, Nightmare Zone.

A silhouette was loitering suspiciously near Nightmare City, with iron shovels in both hands and a gunny sack tied on his waist.

After circling Nightmare City once, Hu He took a compass from his pocket. It was made according to the instructions in the ancient records. He glanced at it for a while, before stretching his hand behind and waving at something.

Something sickly thin appeared from behind him. However, the head of the deformed creature was exceptionally large. It immediately walked forward and took the iron shovels from Hu He's hands. Then, it vigorously dug at the side of the city wall.

From the zombie-finding compass, Hu He could tell that there was definitely a corpse of an immensely strong person within Nightmare City. Its Zombie Energy Value was so strong, its strength greatly outweighed Cha Na's. Hu He's power would definitely increase tremendously if he obtained it.

Although he had thought of entering through the city gates, a Zombie Poison Formation had been placed at the city gates. He barged in twice, but his attempts were futile. The only solution left was for Hu He to find another way.

With the help of the zombie spirit of Cha Na's immense power, a tunnel through the city wall was soon created.

Hu He glanced at the hole, and checked the Zombie Energy Value shown on the compass again, before going through the tunnel.

After entering it, Hu He was surprised when he found that the sky of Nightmare City had numerous coffins floating in the air. Each coffin was tied together by a connecting rope, while the entire city seemed completely

empty. Furthermore, the doors of all the large buildings were closed, while pieces of burnt golden paper were strewn all over the streets.

Although this was a terrible sight to behold, Hu He had already prepared himself mentally for it. Thus, without panicking, he brought out his compass again, and began to search for the source of zombie energy in the city.

After determining the location, Hu He hunched forward and began making his way to the center of the city.

As he was walking, he began to feel a little chilly. It felt as though a gust of evil wind was blowing around him, as pieces of the golden paper on the ground fluttered about in the air. The floating coffins shook slightly from the blowing wind, creaking noisily as wood came and brushed against each other.

Hu He shivered slightly, he felt that the place was too bizarre.

However, it did not affect his desire for the powerful corpse, as he continued onward with quickened steps.

After an entire journey on edge, he finally arrived at the central zone. A gigantic blood-red coffin caught his eye, as his digitized compass dinged repeatedly, indicating that the zombie energy was off the charts.

“This is a big treasure!” Hu He’s eyes glowed brightly.

However, he did not open the coffin immediately. Instead, he walked around the blood coffin twice, and made Cha Na’s zombie spirit touch it several times, to ensure that there was no danger before approaching it.

As he stood next to the blood coffin, he patted the gunny sack and summoned three Zombie Skeleton Warriors from it. Then, Hu He pointed a finger at the blood-red coffin and said...

“Open it!”

Upon hearing the command, the Zombie Skeleton Warriors and zombie spirit of Cha Na immediately approached the blood coffin and began to push the coffin cover.

To Hu He's surprise, the blood coffin's cover was extremely secure. It did not budge an inch, even though it was violently pushed by four zombie spirits.

Hu He felt puzzled, because other than the three Zombie Skeleton Warriors, he knew that the zombie spirit of Cha Na was extremely powerful. His strength could match the top Rune Masters in the game. In fact, he might be even stronger. Even so, they could not open the coffin cover, it must be extremely heavy.

Still, Hu He did not feel discouraged. After collecting his thoughts, he raised the iron shovels in his hand and began to smash the coffin cover.

As Hu He was smashing the blood coffin, Hiderigami who was lying in it and recovering from his injuries, suddenly opened his eyes. Then, he slowly closed them again.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

The crashing sounds kept coming from above, causing the deeply asleep Hiderigami to open his eyes again.

A string of Power of Blood Qi began to flow out of Hiderigami's body, and headed toward the coffin cover. However, before it reached the coffin cover, it quickly dissipated.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

The cover was being struck endlessly. Hiderigami widened his eyes, he really wanted to kill the rascal who was disrupting his slumber.

However, due to the battle with the Evil God's clone, he suffered heavy injuries and the Power of Blood Qi within him was almost depleted. Currently, he could hardly move.

“Why is it so hard?” after spending nearly all day smashing at it, Hu He wiped his sweat away and bent over to place his ear on the cover of the coffin.

He seemed to have heard something moving inside it.

A moment later, he was certain that he had misheard it, and merely sat on the coffin cover, as he fell deep into his thoughts again.

If he gave up now, he would not be satisfied. However, the coffin cover was too hard to open with his current abilities.

After thinking for a while, Hu He’s eyes brightened, as he opened the shop interface and scrolled through the special tools inventory.

[Shorthand Iron Shovel (White)]: Digging tool

Tool Attributes: Hardness 1, Damage 1

Price: 1 Soul Coin

[Fine Iron Shovel (Blue)]: Digging tool (Can be used as a weapon)

Tool Attributes: Hardness 3, Damage 3

Price: 15 Soul Coins

.....

Hu He scrolled through the list of tools, before stopping at a golden iron shovel.

[Gold Shovel (Purple)]: Special tool made by Beiqi’s best blacksmith.

Tool Attributes: Hardness 10, Damage 12

Tool Special Attributes: Sharpness Level 3

Price: 100 Soul Coins (Warning, this item is a limited item, there are only five left.)

Hu He had a headache while looking at the item prices. However, he grit his teeth and purchased it. Immediately, a gold shovel appeared in his hand.

“Open it for me!” Hu He held the Gold Shovel and vigorously hacked the blood coffin.

“Clang!”

The sound of metal clashing against metal thundered upon each impact. However, Hu He gladly noticed that the Gold Shovel created a tiny dent.

Even though the effect was not tremendous, Hu He knew that there was a possibility. He immediately passed the Gold Shovel to zombie soul Cha Na, who began smashing the coffin open.

However, Hu He felt a little frustrated as the smashing went on. Even though the Gold Shovel could damage the blood coffin, it was taking too long. If this continued, it would take forever to open it.

Seeing as the shovel was a limited item, once it broke, the market would have one less Gold Shovel. He could take advantage of its rarity in the future. Hence, he grit his teeth and bought three more Gold Shovels from the shop. Then, he gave them to the other zombie spirits and ordered all four of them to continue opening it. On the other hand, Hu He merely sat by the side, as he opened the game’s built-in forum to pass time.

“Clang clang clang! Bang bang bang! Ding ding ding!”

The sound of metal clashing endlessly reverberated through the air.

Hiderigami, who was still lying inside the blood coffin, opened his eyes widely in annoyance, feeling as though he was going crazy.

He could not fall asleep with the noisy ruckus. Furthermore, the Power of Blood Qi inside that was slowly healing his body, was continually disrupted by the incessant knocking.

“Splurt!”

Hiderigami vomited a lump of regurgitated Blood Qi from his mouth, splattering it all over the inside of the blood coffin.

“Cough cough!” his body’s worsening condition made Hiderigami begin to cough uncontrollably.

“Wait!” Hu He had a sharp hearing, and quickly stopped the zombie spirits from continuing. He approached the blood coffin again, and moved his ear closer to listen closely.

“Bang, bang! Is anyone there?”

Hu He asked as he knocked twice on the blood coffin.

A moment later...

As he did not hear any reply, Hu He pointed a finger at the blood coffin and ordered, “Continue smashing!”

“Wait... hold on! Cough, cough!” Hiderigami’s weak voice echoed from the blood coffin.

“My goodness, the corpse has come to life!” Hu He’s eyes widened in disbelief. Then, he knocked on the coffin twice again and asked, “Are you the one speaking?”

“Cough, cough... that’s right, it’s me, can you stop banging?”

If Hiderigami had enough energy to open the coffin cover, he would have immediately devoured the people outside.

Chapter 137 - A Turtledove In The Magpie'S Nest

Hu He was momentarily dumbfounded when he learned that there was a living being in it.

According to the ancient records of the Zombie Spirit Sect, incidents of fake zombies or zombie mutations were quite common. However, finding a zombie that could talk was never found in the ancient records. This discovery greatly astonished Hu He.

After mulling it over, Hu He could not help but ask, “Are you alive or are you dead? If you’re dead, I will dig you up!”

When Hiderigami heard it, he really wanted to jump out of the blood coffin and wring that person’s head off his neck.

“Little brother, there’s nothing valuable in this blood coffin, stop trying to smash it. I’ll tell you a place with hidden treasure, so quickly leave here,” Hu He seemed determined to open the coffin, so Hiderigami could only tempt him away.

“That won’t do, I don’t want any treasure, my target is this old corpse – you!”

Hearing this, Hiderigami involuntarily spat another mouthful of bloody mist.

Even when he fought the Demonic God’s clone, he did not feel as disgruntled as he did now. Since he had exhausted his Blood Qi to heal his head, he could not use his powers for now. However, he wanted nothing more than to jump out and strangle Hu He to death.

“Do you have anything else to say? If there’s nothing else, I’m going to continue. All you need to do is continue lying down.”

The bloody mist in Hiderigami's eyes began to swirl.

“Wait a minute... since you want corpses, let me tell you a little more about this place. There are 3,000 corpses of the Ghost Supreme Commander Level.”

It was a much more effective bait. Hu He, who was going to continue opening the coffin, was obviously tempted by his offer. He immediately slapped the blood coffin and asked, “Where is it, quickly tell me!”

A flash of sly satisfaction appeared in Hiderigami's eyes.

“Can you see the palace beside us? Underneath it, there are 3,000 corpses of the Ghost Supreme Commander Level, leave now.”

Upon hearing this, Hu He shifted his gaze toward the gigantic palace behind the blood coffin.

“Hmm, after I dig you out, I'll work on them. Thanks, my brother!” Hu He patted the blood coffin as he spoke. Then, he took a few steps back, and pointed his finger at the blood coffin.

“Smash it!”

In the ancient records, it was written that the people from the Zombie Spirit Sect must not have any compassion for the corpses. Since they were in this line of business, they had to adhere to the rules. Once the excavation had started, it must be completed. This rule was deeply imprinted on Hu He's mind.

Hence, a cacophony of deafening banging thundered again. Hiderigami was still lying in the blood coffin, as absolute irateness overwhelmed his emotions. He vomited mouthfuls of Blood Qi that were regurgitated from the noisy racket.

Meanwhile, Hu He was squatting next to it, as he scrolled through the forum.

“Hey, Little Brother, this blood coffin can't be dug.”

A voice suddenly echoed from Hu He's side, and he jolted in shock. As he turned his body around, he noticed a stout man squatting next to him.

"Who are you? Are you in this line of work, too?" Hu He warily asked, as he stood up.

"Me? I'm Little Sha, but I'm not a Zombie Forgemaster like you," the chubby man extended his hand, seemingly friendly.

Hu He was a little confused, but he still shook his hand.

"Then, what are you here for? And, why can't this blood coffin be dug out?"

Little Sha massaged his meaty cheeks and replied, "Do you know who is inside there?"

"Does it matter?" Hu He suddenly said.

Little Sha was speechless momentarily...

"The one inside is Hiderigami, the fiercest zombie of the Ghost Emperor Realm!" Little Sha said under his breath gravely.

Hu He's expression froze as he asked, "Is it really Hiderigami?"

"Of course it is! Hiderigami is recovering from his wounds after his battle with the Demonic God's clone."

"Dig, dig even faster! It's actually Hiderigami!"

Hu He's expression became even more enthusiastic. His biggest goal as a Zombie Forgemaster was to discover powerful people like Hiderigami and the Demonic God.

Upon seeing this, Little Sha could no longer be at ease.

"But that's Hiderigami!"

“Hmm, I actually hoped that it would be the Demonic God. However, Hiderigami is also equally excellent!” Hu He said with a happy expression.

Little Sha was speechless again...

“Aren’t you afraid?” Little Sha was completely stunned.

“What is there to be afraid of? At worst, I’ll just die,” Hu He said calmly.

As a player, the fear of dying did not exist. Especially since Hu He specialized in zombie-forging, he often roamed the different graveyards in Beiqi. He had died many times already. Hence, death was a common occurrence for him, and naturally made him unafraid of it.

“You’re a fierce one! The Zombie Forgemasters are certainly fearless,” Little Sha’s face brimmed with great admiration.

“However, I still need to remind you, Hiderigami chose to heal his wounds here because there is a Yin Soul Eye under the coffin. He’s using the pure Yin Zombie Energy from the Yin Soul Eye to heal his wounds. At the same time, it also acts as a seal. If you damage the blood coffin that is on it, the suppressed Evil Yin Soldiers will escape and create havoc in the Land of Beiqi.

Little Sha shook his head furiously as he said it, as though he could not bear to imagine it happening.

Hu He’s expression darkened when he heard it, as he asked, “Is it really that serious?”

Little Sha solemnly nodded and replied, “It will be even worse. A long time ago, the Evil Yin Soldiers caused the Land of Beiqi to suffer many years of misery.”

“I was wondering why you are so knowledgeable about this, who are you really? Before Hiderigami came here, why didn’t the seal break without the Yin Soul Eye suppressing it?” Hu He asked with widened eyes.

Upon hearing his question, Little Sha pointed at a black coffin nearby.

“That coffin is mine. I was the one suppressing the Yin Soul Eye originally. When Hiderigami came, he moved my home away and wanted to occupy the Yin Soul Eye. I was really angry and fought with him, but he knocked me into the air with merely three blows. Luckily, he was heavily wounded and didn’t have the spare energy to worry about me. Hence, I was able to survive,” Little Sha said with a grateful expression, as though he had escaped the jaws of death.

“You are a Zombie Spirit that has the Spirit Wisdom Manifestation?” Hu He’s eyes widened.

The ancient records stated that forged zombie spirits could absorb Yin energy from the heavens and the earth to grow. At later stages, the strong and powerful zombie spirits could even manifest Spirit Wisdom, and become completely new spirits.

However, this was actually the first time that Hu He had ever seen a zombie spirit with the Spirit Wisdom Manifestation.

“That’s right, I am also something that Zombie Forgemasters like you created.”

“How strong are you?” Hu He’s expression gradually became more excited.

“I’ve been at the peak of the Ghost General level for many years, but I haven’t been able to break through it. It’s so saddening!” Little Sha massaged his chubby cheeks sadly.

“Then, you are the governor of the Evil Nightmare City, the Evil Ghost General?” Hu He digested this information in shock.

“That’s right! After the King of Beiqi conferred the rank of Ghost General on me, I was given the responsibility to suppress the Yin Soul Eye,” Little Sha said laughingly as he continued massaging his cheeks.

Upon hearing this, Hu He glanced at the blood coffin and grabbed Little Sha’s shoulders. Then, he said with a tempting expression,

“Brother, why don’t you help me smash this coffin? Then, you can continue to suppress your Yin Soul Eye, and I can get Hiderigami. Isn’t this killing two birds with one stone?”

“But, if he comes out, we won’t be able to defeat him,” Little Sha was evidently disgruntled.

“Eh... brother, if he really could do it, he would have jumped out and beaten us already. He must be extremely weak now, so we need to take advantage of his sickly condition and take his life! If we miss this opportunity, we won’t have the chance when he recovers.”

“Cough, cough!” at this moment, the sound of Hiderigami choking came from the blood coffin.

“Do you hear that? Hiderigami doesn’t even have the strength to speak now. If you help me to ruthlessly end his life, we can both be in a win-win situation! It’ll be perfect!”

Little Sha seemed convinced by Hu He’s explanation, but he still looked doubtfully at Hu He and uttered, “Will this really work?”

“It will definitely work!” Hu He sounded extremely sure of himself.

Little Sha’s heart wavered when he heard Hu He’s confident exclamation.

Even though he was extremely terrified of Hiderigami, Hiderigami was in a period of weakness, just as Hu He said. It would really be an invaluable opportunity to attack him now.

“Alright! I’ll help you smash it!” Little Sha ultimately replied, while gritting his teeth.

Chapter 138 - New Downloadable Content 'The Invasion Of Evil'

When Hu He heard that Little Sha was willing to lend a hand, he beamed with great joy. After all, he was at the Ghost General Level and was very powerful. Hence, he immediately took a Gold Shovel from one of the Zombie Skeleton Warriors and passed it to him.

“Brother, let’s get on with it, the time for revenge.”

Little Sha nodded solemnly, but he did not take the Gold Shovel. Instead, he walked directly to the front of the blood coffin, and smashed the coffin’s cover with his fist.

“Bang!”

The strike was extremely powerful, even the ground tremored on impact. Other than the zombie spirit of Cha Na, the other three Zombie Skeleton Warriors were flung into the air.

It was also extremely effective, as he managed to leave a fist mark on the cover of the blood coffin.

“Keep it up!” Hu He shouted excitedly when he noticed this.

“Bang!”

He punched again, landing his fist exactly on the fist mark. The coffin’s cover shook violently, as numerous cracks appeared on it.

Hu He was beside himself with excitement. This Ghost General’s skills were indeed extraordinary. With only two blows, the blood coffin seemed as though it was going to shatter.

“Walk a tad further away, I’m focusing my power!” Little Sha said this with a serious countenance.

Hearing this, Hu He hurriedly led the zombie spirits away to the back.

Little Sha’s body suddenly exuded a dense layer of zombie energy, which instantly gathered on his fist.

“Open!”

Following Little Sha’s roar of anger, he heavily pounded the blood coffin, with his right fist that was filled with zombie energy. When the zombie energy came into contact with the blood coffin, it immediately burst open. The spreading zombie energy began to corrode the blood coffin, while making a hissing sound.

“Crack!”

Fine cracks appeared on the cover of the coffin. After the explosion, it revealed the body of Hiderigami, who was lying in the blood coffin.

Seeing this, Hu He immediately walked a couple of steps forward toward the blood coffin. Then, he peeked in.

Hiderigami had his eyes wide open and was angrily glaring at him.

“It really is Hiderigami!”

Hu He had seen Hiderigami’s appearance during his fight with the Demonic God. Hence, he could recognize the person now.

“Evil General, my body has already been tied to the Yin Soul Eye. If I’m moved from the blood coffin, this seal will definitely be broken!”

Hiderigami seemed to know that Hu He was someone that he could not reason with, so he directed his gaze at Little Sha instead.

Little Sha’s face seemed anxious when he heard it.

“He has beaten you before!” Hu He immediately turned round to tell Little Sha.

“But...”

“He has beaten you before, you need to get revenge! Don’t listen to his nonsense!” Hu He began to fan the flames of dissatisfaction because he was afraid that Little Sha might stop him from taking Hiderigami away.

“If I take Hiderigami away, you can return home!”

As he said this, Hu He had a little idea. The zombie spirit Cha Na walked forward and hugged Hiderigami’s huge head. Then, he began to drag the person out.

“Evil Ghost General, you will regret this! If the Yin Soul Eye seal is broken, the Evil Yin Soldier will run rampant across Beiqi. All the guilt and wrongdoing will be yours to bear.”

Hu He noticed this, and quickly gave some instructions to the other three zombie spirits. Then, he walked forward and helped the zombie spirit Cha Na to slowly move Hiderigami out of the blood coffin.

“Thud!”

Hiderigami’s body fell to the ground. Hu He smiled widely, as he was relieved that this trip was not fruitless. He had truly uncovered a big treasure.

However, a clear sound of shattering glass echoed from beneath the blood coffin. Then, the blood coffin began to expel thick and heavy Black Zombie Energy.

The zombie energy quickly coalesced, and rushed to the sky, forming a gigantic Zombie Energy Pillar. Endless painful wailing sounded from inside it, while grotesque faces occasionally floated to its surface.

Hu He was stunned when he saw it. However, Little Sha suddenly cradled his head, as he squatted on the floor, with a face of utter despair.

“We’re done for, we’re done for! Hiderigami wasn’t lying to me, he really did use his body as a medium to connect to the Yin Soul Eye, in order to absorb zombie energy. Now that his body has been moved away, the Yin Soul Eye has been completely destroyed.”

Suddenly, a game notification sounded in Hu He’s mind.

[Attention all areas, Player Hu He has broken the Yin Soul Eye Seal, the suppressed Evil Yin Soldiers have now been released, activating new downloadable content.]

[New Downloadable Content ‘The Invasion of Evil’]:

Content: 40,000 years ago, in a quest to forge the strongest zombie spirit, a crazy Zombie Forgemaster used the Yin Soul Manifestation Pond as his source of energy, and created a Yin Soul Eye that could release a large amount of zombie energy. Used to sustain zombie souls, this dense zombie energy could be used to strengthen the zombie spirits, and manifest weak inkling consciousness within them.

This weak inkling of conscience gradually turned evil under the gradual irrigation of zombie energy. Thus, an entire evil zombie spirit army was created.

After obtaining immense power, they devoured that crazy Zombie Forgemaster, and made their way out of the Yin Soul Eye, bringing tragedy and misfortune to the Land of Beiqi.

They craved blood and flesh, hungered for devouring their prey, and thirsted for massacring everyone!

Evil Yin Soldiers Introduction: Oddities manifested due to the zombie spirits being flushed with large amounts of zombie energy. Apart from having an extremely strong defense, they are also competent in the Evil Ghost Arts.

Introduction to the Ranks of Evil Yin Soldiers (from lowest to highest): Evil Yin Soldier (Level 80), Evil Zombie Spirit (Level 120), Evil Ferocious

Spirit (Level 150), Evil Iron Commander (Level 200), Evil Zombie King (Unknown)

[Accommodation System Officially Activated, Shop Items Update Notification]:

Added items are as follows:

[Mahogany Small House (Upgradeable)]:

During the stage of Evil Brutality, the entire Land of Beiqi would suffer from extremely violent attacks and the outside world would be filled with danger. This type of house is molded from mahogany imbued with spirituality and can resist the attacks of ordinary Evil Yin Soldiers.

Surface area: 20 square meters.

Price: 100 Soul Coins.

[Townhouse Talisman]:

The Townhouse Talisman is specially created to repel zombie-type beings. If placed outside the house, it will prevent Evil Yin Soldiers from coming closer. (Ferocious Spirit Level and below)

Price: 200 Soul Coins.

[Spirit of the Door God (Can be upgraded)]:

Fully-formed Door God that can guard the house, comes with three main upgrade trees, and hundreds of different branches from each tree.

Three Main Upgrade Trees: Ghost Breaker (Combat Type, Price: 100 Soul Coins), Ghost Arts (Spell Type, Price: 200 Soul Coins), Ghost Mountain (Defensive Type, Price: 300 Soul Coins)

.....

The sudden activation of this new downloadable content and the appearance of a new accommodation system immediately created a huge sensation throughout the forum.

Crayon_Shinchan: “Fuck, I haven’t even finished upgrading my ship, now we suddenly need to upgrade houses as well. It’s that bastard Zombie Forgemaster, didn’t you just announce that you dug out a treasure? Is this the surprise that you dug out for us? I won’t say more, all areas should issue a warrant for this person, kill him with no mercy!”

Xueli_The_Strongest:” I’m dumbfounded, just now I also saw his reply thread about him excavating a treasure. Lo and behold, it’s a huge surprise indeed. I agree with the warrant for this person (Gritting teeth)”

Invincible_Loneliness: “Everyone, let’s not quarrel now. We should prepare to defend ourselves. The brothers by the coast return to the Mansion of the Dead now! Let’s prepare the first line of defense, the creatures are approaching!”

Peppa_Boar: “This bastard Zombie Forgemaster is really troublesome. Are you trying to make the game harder for me? You suddenly throw this survival mode at us, I really want to murder you!”

A_Mammoth: “Actually, I recently came across a new island, and was preparing to improve the deserted land. Now, it looks like I won’t be able to do so. Let’s immediately return to defend the base camp. Send a warrant out for this person, kill him if you ever see him! (Grits teeth)”

.....

At this moment, even Hu He himself was utterly confused.

He raised his head to stare at the evergrowing Zombie Energy Pillar in the sky, and suddenly felt that he seemed to have caused a huge pandemonium.

Suddenly, the Zombie Energy Pillar came into contact with the sky ceiling, causing it to disintegrate instantly, raining uncountable Evil Yin Soldiers on the Lands of Beiqi like falling meteors.

“There’s not enough time, run faster!” Little Sha pulled Hu He and flew upward into the sky.

“Wait wait, Hiderigami! We haven’t taken Hiderigami yet!” Hu He kept stretching out his hand at the body of Hiderigami during his flight, as his heart was filled with reluctance.

“We don’t have enough time. Hiderigami’s body is so heavy, you can’t bring him with us. Don’t kill yourself,” Little Sha immediately scolded him as he increased his speed as he shot upwards.

Seeing this, Hu He miserably patted the zombie storage bag. The four bodies of zombie spirits transformed into black mist and traveled into the bag. However, Hiderigami’s body gradually drifted further away.

The big treasure was gone... Hu He’s eyes were brimming with tears.

Chapter 139 - The Nation's Enemy

Actually, the appearance of the new content was something that had been pre-determined by Lu Wu and Bei Li.

However, this was also activated as a last resort.

Lu Wu noticed that Hu He was smashing the coffin.

However, Lu Wu's policy was to never interfere and allow the players to act freely. Even though he was gritting his teeth hard as he watched, he held his urge in and let them be.

However, in Lu Wu's opinion, the brutality of the Evil Yin Soldiers had its pros and cons.

One of the advantages was that there would be an increase in creatures for the players to level up with. After all, each time an Evil Yin Soldier was killed, players could collect both experience points and soul coins.

With the huge influx of players, the overall speed of leveling up had decreased. Since they were unable to expand the maps, there was a serious lack of creatures to be farmed in the Land of Beiqi.

This was especially so for the Ghost Mountains. Every day, there were at least a million players trying to level up there. With the appearance of the Evil Yin Soldiers, this problem could be solved.

However, the disadvantage was that the Land of Beiqi would probably be invaded on all fronts.

These Evil Yin Soldiers were extremely powerful. Even if they were not as terrifying as the Sea King or the Rock Ghost King, it would be an uphill task for the current players to defend against their oncoming attacks.

In order to solve this problem, Bei Li found some design drawings in the equipment depot, and created some molds of items that could help defend against the Evil Yin Soldiers. Then, he placed these in the shop to help the players.

However, Lu Wu was not worried about the current situation of the players. After all, this was a matter for the entire Land of Beiqi, not merely the players. For example, the Rock Ghost King, the Nine-Headed Snake King, and the other factions of Beiqi might be invaded, too. The burden of invasion was shared equally.

At the same time, in order to quickly resolve this threat, Lu Wu specially announced three missions to increase the competitiveness of the players.

[Main Quest: Protectors of the Homeland]:

Quest Requirements: Defend the Mansion of the Dead and prevent it from being invaded by the Evil Yin Soldiers. (Universal Mission)

Quest Period: Until the end of the Evil Apocalypse.

Quest Rewards: Blue Title (Protectors of the Homeland), Reward: 20 Soul Coins

[Side Quest: Evil Butcher]:

Quest Requirements: Kill Evil Yin Soldiers (0/10), Evil Zombie Spirits (0/5), Evil Ferocious Ghosts (0/1)

Quest Rewards: One mahogany house

Point Accumulation Quest: Evil Natural Enemies

Quest Requirements: Form a small party (minimum 10 players), hunt and kill monsters of Evil Ferocious Ghost rank and above. The reward is additional points.

Quest Requirements Part 2: All parties that participate in this point accumulation quest can register their names at the Mansion of the Dead.

Parties that have been formed cannot be disbanded during the quest period. The kills of monsters of Evil Ferocious Ghost rank and above, from each member of the party, can be included in the party's total points. Finally, parties that rank in the top 3,000 will be given special rewards.

Top 3,000 Parties Quest Rewards: Red Title (Evil Natural Enemies), 1,000 Soul Coins (per party)

Top 10 parties on the server will be given additional special rewards:
Special Door Gods (Drawing Force)

The appearance of these three quests immediately piqued the enthusiasm of the players. Some players that were already at the Mansion of the Dead began to publicly advertise for members to form parties, in preparation to hunt and kill the evil spirits.

With the new invasion, items such as the mahogany houses and talismans became hot-selling items in the shop and their stock was replenished in great amounts.

However, after some thought, Lu Wu added another setting.

In the safety zone at the center of the Mansion of the Dead, players were prohibited from building mahogany houses. However, Lu Wu did not implement the rule in the wild. After all, when hunting and killing, players would use up their physical energy and needed safe zones for short breaks. Thus, these mahogany houses would act as shelters.

The area of the evil spirit's invasion was extremely large. After the Yin Soul Eye was shattered, the entire Land of Beiqi was filled with wandering souls. Large numbers of Evil Yin Soldiers were running rampant and countless spirits were completely destroyed.

Many players in the wild had no idea what had happened. Some were even killed by the spirits falling down from the sky, causing them to disconnect from the game.

The entire forum began to fill with activity, it could be said that the disaster that Hu He created greatly angered all the players.

Hu He instantly became the server's most wanted person. Some rich players even issued posts with rewards of soul coins, stating that they would reward anyone that killed Hu He once and presented a picture proof.

.....

The root of the problem, Hu He and Little Sha were squatting together inside a hole in the burial grounds.

"It's over, it's over, we're done for, I've made a huge miatake," Little Sha hugged his chubby head, as he squatted on the ground crying.

He thought of how this quest was issued by the King of Beiqi, and how each of the great factions of Beiqi had vowed to supervise him.

However, this matter was ruined now, so this meant that he was about to be chased after by all the factions in Beiqi.

When he thought of this, Little Sha felt that he would die for sure.

Hu He was looking at all the posts on the forum. They were filled with sinister and murderous intent, causing him to look terrified as he mumbled, "It's all over!"

On this treasure-hunting trip, not only was he unable to obtain Hiderigami, but he had also become the nation's enemy. This made him extremely aggrieved.

After mulling it over, he opened a post and weakly tried to reply with one sentence.

"I didn't do it on purpose. (Crying)"

Immediately, there was an influx of comments below it.

“What a fellow, tell us your address. See if I don’t kill you a hundred times! You dare to cause trouble, but you don’t have the guts to stomach the consequences?”

“The main character has finally appeared, that’s wonderful. Hurry up and come to the Mansion of the Dead, we have gathered an army of over a million people to welcome you. Come here quickly (Slight smile)”

“Where are you right now? Tell me quickly, I will never reveal it. Quickly direct message me to coordinate, brother. All of them want to kill you, only I want to protect you (honest and sincere gaze)”

“Brother, your actions are really excellent. The entire server has to clean up your mess! How amazing! Give you a perfect score!”

“I’ve sharpened the knife, the only thing left is you. Brother, come home, I don’t believe that you won’t return to the Mansion of the Dead. Have you seen the latest quests, especially the Party Quest, you can only obtain it from the steward of the Mansion of the Dead (Smile)”

“After discussing it, everyone has decided to kill you into submission. Doesn’t that make you happy! Aren’t you amazed! Aren’t you surprised!”

.....

Looking at the replies from all the players, Hu He’s eyes filled with tears as he hurriedly closed the forum. He was worried that he would drown himself in his own saliva.

It was certain that he had become an unforgivable target. What could he do now? This game did not allow the players to change usernames, nor could one delete and re-register. He was utterly doomed.

One had become the common enemy for all players, while one had become the common enemy of all the factions of Beiqi. They would surely have to live in fear and constantly hide in the future. The thought of it made them feel extremely miserable, and they could not help but wail bitterly.

Meanwhile, the looming catastrophe also awakened the 3,000 Ghost Commanders who were deeply buried beneath the palace in Nightmare City.

They breached the palace, levitated into the air, and came together in midair to make a gigantic black Hexagram Formation.

When they noticed the arrival of the Ghost Commander Army, large amounts of evil spirits began to float upward and rushed at them with bloodthirst.

“Open!”

At this moment, one of the Ghost Commanders’ leaders shouted a command. Then, a ray of blinding light immediately beamed from the formation, as 3,000 Ghost Commanders flew from it at full speed.

No matter how strong the spirits in their path were, they were no match for the Ghost Commanders’ formation. It forcefully broke a pathway through them, before increasing its speed and disappearing from the Nightmare Zone, as it moved toward the Cliffs of Desperation.

In a blink of an eye, the black Hexagon Formation appeared at its destination, rapidly landed next to a wooden house at the mountainside.

Noticing the disruption outside the house, a white-haired old man drunkenly opened the door and peered outside. Suddenly, he realized that 3,000 Ghost Commanders were neatly lined in rows before him.

“What are you doing?” the white-haired old man was a little confused.

“Your Majesty, the evil spirits are causing an apocalypse. Hence, we have been awakened, do you wish to battle?”

“It’s none of your business! Go back to sleep!”

The white-haired old man swept his gaze across the ranks of the Ghost Commander army, rolling his eyes as he reprimanded them. Then, the

wooden door slammed shut with a bang, leaving an army of wide-eyed and thunderstruck Ghost Commanders behind him.

Chapter 140 - The Civilian Players' Fury

On the second day after the Yin Soul Eye Seal was broken...

Evil spirits were wandering everywhere in the Land of Beiqi, while the majority of the players took refuge in the Mansion of the Dead, as they transitioned from progression mode to survival mode.

Currently, the players could only go out in small parties to fight; traveling solo was simply suicidal.

Other than a few exceptionally professional players, not many players could fight the spirits alone. A lot of new players had even grouped together in parties of over a hundred people before going out to guarantee their own safety.

At this stage, the players were both pleased and unsatisfied with the current situation.

Even though there were endless creatures to kill, waves of attacks would occasionally rain on the Mansion of the Dead, causing the rate of deaths to become exceptionally high. Therefore, the shop's mahogany houses and other items became must-have items. This allowed Lu Wu to earn a huge sum of money.

At the same time, Lu Wu finally released the long-awaited players' rankings and the raiding parties' rankings leaderboard.

[Players' Ranking Leaderboard]:

Number 1: Ao Jian: Level 82, Character Class: Ten Swords Demonic Sect

Number 2: Qi Ming: Level 79, Character Class: Ghost Monster

Number 3: Feng Yuxiu: Level 79, Character Class: Five Elements Warlock

Number 4: Su Xiaoba: Level 79, Character Class: Five Elements Warlock

Number 5: Gu Yu: Level 78, Character Class: Demonic God's Apostle

Number 6: Qing Dou: Level 78, Character Class: Five Elements Warlock

Number 7: Liu Gan: Level 77, Character Class: Mage

Number 8: Ye Xue'er: Level 74, Character Class: Cursed Apostle

.....

The leaderboard allowed the players to know the levels of the current top-ranking players during this season.

In order to increase the functionality of the ranking leaderboard, Lu Wu would even give rewards for those who made the leaderboard quarterly.

For the players in the Top 100 of the leaderboard at the end of each quarter, they would receive a blue Pioneer title as a reward (valid for 30 days).

A second ranking was also introduced to allow the players to compare the points of each raiding party.

[Raiding Parties Points Scoreboard]:

Number 1: Demolition Officers Team 1 (100 people): 321 points

Number 2: Great Dragon Guild Team 1 (100 people): 320 points

Number 3: Myth Team 1 (100 people): 302 points

Number 4: Demolition Officers Team 3 (100 people): 298 points

Number 5: Avengers Team 1 (100 people): 298 points

.....

It was obvious that after the invasion of the evil spirits, compared to the relatively stable players' ranking leaderboard, the competition in the raiding party scoreboard was much more fierce.

At any point in time, the ranking could change when a raiding party killed a high-level spirit in the wild.

For the final reward, the guilds began to play their best again.

At this stage of the invasion of evil, Bei Li had also begun to burn the midnight oil, as they had exhausted their supply of soul coins to create a new building type called the Zombie Forging Room.

After an entire night, the Zombie Forging Room finally emerged at the border of the Mansion of the Dead's safe zone.

[Zombie Forging Room]:

Specific Functions: Players can collect dead evil corpses as raw materials, and pass them to the steward of the Zombie Forging Room to obtain Zombie Spirit Points. With enough zombie spirits, players will be able to use the Zombie Forging Room to forge evil beings into a one-time subordinate.

The forging room aimed to increase the game's playability and more importantly, rationalize the game resource mechanics.

The concept of the Zombie Forging Room was originally from Lu Wu, as he felt that leaving the residual corpses of the spirits in the wild was too wasteful. Hence, he asked Bei Li if it was possible to collect and reuse them.

Bei Li immediately patted her chest and replied affirmatively. Soon, she created the Zombie Forging Room.

The principle of the Zombie Forging Room was extremely easy. First, one needed to collect the residual corpses of the evil spirits. Then they had to use the Zombie Forging Room to process and purify them in order to obtain

zombie spirit points. Finally, the zombie spirit points could be used to create digitized spirits, like forging a one-time pet that would listen to all instructions (and then disappear after death).

Of course, Lu Wu would charge a fee to forge evil spirits at the Zombie Forging Room. The higher the level of the spirits, the required zombie spirit points for forging and the service fee would also be much higher.

For the players who liked playing as a summoner, the introduction of this mode filled them with immense excitement.

In fact, players could be seen offering high prices for corpses in the safe zone at the Mansion of the Dead. After they had collected an entire sack of evil corpses, they would send it to the Zombie Forging Room to process them into one-time subordinates.

However, the processing of the evil spirits in this mode was not profitable. Ten corpses of similarly ranked spirits needed to be forged to accumulate enough zombie spirit points to forge a digitized evil subordinate of equal rank.

However, this brought excitement to many players, as they could sell the evil corpses for coins as well.

All of the new content made the players feel bitter and happy at the same time. They were bitter because they couldn't stop spending soul coins, and they were happy because the various gameplays created by this new mode were very interesting.

Since it was exceptionally difficult to survive in the wild now, it allowed many players to experience the anxiety and thrill of a terrifying apocalypse.

.....

In the burial grounds, two silhouettes were painstakingly making their way forward.

After walking past the Northern part of the burial grounds near the Mansion of the Dead, both of them suddenly curled in and hid behind a huge rock.

Before their eyes, Gu Hui and others from the Myth Guild were surrounding and battling fiercely with a Level 150 Evil Ferocious Spirit.

Although the raiding party comprised of a hundred people, the Evil Ferocious Spirit was truly strong. Gu Yu and the others could not do much against it at the moment, and could only keep grinding away to wear it down.

Luckily, the Evil Ferocious Spirit was battling instinctively and did not have any real desire to fight. Under the teamwork of Gu Yu and the others, the raiding party did not suffer any serious losses or damage.

“What’s the matter, should we hide further away?” Little Sha asked a little nervously.

“Alright!” Hu He resolutely answered.

“Wait, wait...” Hu He suddenly stopped Little Sha from running away.

“You are a Ghost General, what are you afraid of? No matter how many people there are, they still can’t beat you!”

“Oh, that’s right!” Little Sha suddenly replied.

Hu He felt like he wanted to cover his face, as he wondered which Zombie Forgemaster forged an extremely timid yet ridiculously strong zombie spirit like Little Sha.

“So, what should we do now?” the utterly hapless Little Sha asked again.

“Let’s hide for now, avoid confrontations at all costs, and safety first!”

Thus, they squatted behind the gigantic rock, listening quietly to the clashing sounds of magic and flesh meshing with the bloodthirsty yelling from the players.

Sun Qi, who was busy treating his party member, furrowed his brows, and looked at the gigantic rock.

“Boss, there’s an evil corpse over there, I can smell the thick scent of zombie energy!”

“Go and see, but don’t be ambushed. We need to deal with this first,” after he had finished speaking, Gu Yu disappeared in a flash, appearing behind the Zombie Ferocious Spirit and forcefully threw a punch at him.

When Sun Qi noticed this, he immediately descended from the air and walked toward the gigantic rock.

Sun Qi was extremely careful to be safe, as he jumped onto the gigantic rock from the side and peered over the edge.

Six pairs of eyes instantly met each other, as the three of them were all astonished.

“Zombie Forgemasters!”

“Dog!”

“My God, a White Phantom!”

The three people shouted shockingly in unison.

“Shush, keep quiet, dog,” Hu He’s face was adorned with an apologetic smile, as he lowered his voice to speak.

Sun Qi solemnly nodded. Then, he looked to the sky and shouted loudly, “Boss, the bastard Zombie Forgemaster is here. Hurry up you guys, I’ve caught him!”

“Run!”

Hu He wanted to flee immediately, but a murderous intent flashed in Sun Qi’s eyes, as he bit Hu He’s arm. No matter how hard Hu He tried, he could not free himself from Sun Qi.

To be honest, the ones who hated Hu He the most were most definitely the civilian players. As one himself, Sun Qi's eyes began to redden.

He still had not obtained the coins to upgrade the ship, but he needed to purchase a house and upgrade it as well. Besides, he would need to upgrade his door god, too. This troublemaker must not be allowed to exist under the same sky as me!

When the parties of the Myth Guild that were attacking the Evil Ferocious Spirit heard the words Zombie Forgemaster, they were thunderstruck. Then, all of them rushed to the gigantic rock and gathered around it, paying no more attention to the Evil Ferocious Spirit.

Chapter 141 - Accomplished The First Killing Attempt

Upon witnessing the scene, the expression on Little Sha's face changed. When he was about to run away, Hu He used one of his hands to grab Little Sha, saying, "Big brother, let's leave together!"

Just as Little Sha wanted to drag him up, he realized the formation and appearance of many shadows around the boulder. One of the shadow formations was the Demonic's God clone of the defeated Hiderigami.

The color drained from Little Sha's face immediately as he muttered, "Good luck, brother!" Then, he swiftly turned around and fled, vanishing from sight in a blink of an eye.

A dignified Ghost General is scared off just like this?

Hu He was heartbroken, Fuck, I wonder if he could still remember the oath that we used to pledge in the cave, promising to share sufferings and happiness together.

When the people in the Myth Guild came across the most wanted person on the server – Hu He, their facial expressions turned ferocious. They approached him at a fast pace.

This caused Hu He's heart to pound vigorously.

He knew better than anyone else that he could not die at this stage. If he was dead, then he would only respawn in the Mansion of the Dead. He could imagine the horrifying scene of being killed continuously by other players and not being able to leave the safe zone.

"Argh, dog, please let go!" Hu He slapped on the dog's head, trying to free himself from the bite so that he could escape.

Sun Qi groaned and the bite became increasingly tighter.

Having no other choice, Hu He patted his zombie storage bag to summon four zombie spirits in his hands. Three of the four Warriors of Wreckage rushed toward the crowd in the Myth Guild. At that instant, the zombie spirit named Cha Na stretched out his arm to grab the upper and lower jaw of Sun Qi's dog mouth and he started using force.

Upon seeing Cha Na, the zombie spirit, Sun Qi immediately widened his eyes, causing his mouth to open up due to the immense force that was exerted.

“Fuck you!” Hu He who was freed from the constraint, released a forceful strike with his foot, causing Sun Qi to rise high in the air. Subsequently, he extended his hand to make finger gestures during his incantation and said, “Burst!”

The three zombie spirits which were approaching the Myth Guild exploded instantly with smoke and pervaded the air. Hu He seized his golden opportunity to run away as fast as lightning toward the east.

“Cough, cough! Such a bad smell...”

Once the people in the Myth Guild escaped from the dense smoke, they noticed that the dog was standing on the ground with his eyes wide open while Hu He was nowhere to be found.

“Where is he, dog?” Gu Yu questioned hurriedly.

“Boss, this brat is freaking audacious!” Sun Qi was already taken aback, leaving him open-mouthed.

“What do you mean? I am asking you the direction he ran toward,” Gu Yu was startled.

“Boss, do you know what I saw just now? It was Cha Na. The skull of Cha Na, the symbol of our Christmas Battle Event was stolen by this bastard!”

Sun Qi remained motionless and expressionless as though he was immobilized out of astonishment.

“The skull of Cha Na?”

At first, Gu Yu was confused and before long, he revealed an astonished expression in his eyes as well.

“This bastard is really crazy! I bet this person must be tired of living for him to do that.”

Thinking up to this point, Gu Yu immediately turned on the guild live chat in order to allow a player in the Mansion of the Dead to check if the skull of Cha Na on the city gate was still in place.

One minute later, the members of the guild uploaded a screenshot to the guild channel.

Those who had seen the screenshot were left dumbfounded.

In the photo, a wooden-carved skull of Cha Na was used to replace the original one in the Mansion of the Dead.

If it was not for Sun Qi who had realized it, no one would have found out about it even if they walked in and out all the time. At this moment, everyone was feeling strangely heart-broken.

“Oh my god! This brother is such a cruel character. He must be dreaming of ascending to heaven!”

“Chase, make sure to chase after him. If we do not make him submit, I have no idea what other off-limit things he will be up to.”

After that, Gu Yu instructed Sun Qi to lead the way. The whole Myth Guild search party went after Hu He following like maniacs, swearing to eliminate this malignant player.

At this instant, Hu He’s face was written with trepidation as he ran away crazily. He knew from the dog’s expression that the fact he’d stolen the

skull of Cha Na could not be hidden anymore. If he did not escape this time, he would surely be done for.

He fled for his life along the way. However, as he turned around, he was frightened by the sight of a group of assassin players trailing close behind him, utilizing their Shadow Steps.

“Oh my god!” Hu He hoped badly that he could have more pairs of legs so he could run even faster.

Just as Hu He wanted to proceed to escape after crossing over a boulder that was blocking the road, he suddenly felt a sense of heaviness in his body. It seemed as though he was dragged to one side by a driving force.

Hu He felt the urge to resist as his body touched the ground. However, at this moment in time, he came across an elegant and handsome man shaking his head seriously at him.

“Swish! Swish! Swish!” the group of assassins who turned on their Shadow Steps swept over their heads.

Once the man was certain that the assassins were far gone, he waved his hand at Hu He, saying, “Follow me!”

Hu He was a little baffled. Although he was uncertain of the reason why this person had come to his rescue, he still chose to tag along with him.

After crossing the crooked paths within the heap of boulders with the man, the man stopped in his tracks when they reached the empty space surrounded by the boulders.

“You’re safe now!”

Hu He was moved and he could not stop expressing his gratitude, “Brother, I truly appreciate your help!”

“Don’t mention it! I feel that you’ve done nothing wrong. After all, it’s just a game. To be happy is the most important thing,” Murphy patted on Hu He’s shoulder and smiled as he uttered.

“What a close confidant!” Hu He grabbed Murphy’s hand promptly, showing a face full of excitement.

At this point, he finally discovered that someone could actually understand him. How lucky of him to have a like-minded comrade among the players!

“Haha!”

At this moment, the sound of a sharp weapon piercing the body resonated through the atmosphere. As Hu He’s body trembled, he turned around, looking in disbelief. He realized that a cute young lady with long hair cascaded down her shoulders was smiling while stabbing his back with a dagger.

“I...”

Puff! The young lady removed the dagger with a smile and inserted it again.

“Brother, save me!”

Hu He thought he was tracked down by the members of the Myth Guild. Hence, he kept turning his head over, trying to seek help from Murphy, only to realize that Murphy was the one who lifted his dagger and stabbed him in the chest.

Puff!

Hu He’s face was totally perplexed. He could not understand why his initial benefactor was trying to murder him right now.

“Backstab!” a gentle shriek of the young lady from behind reverberated around the empty space. Then, a critical strike of scarlet red words appeared above his head.

His vision started to blur...

“Why?” before death, Hu He fixed his gaze at Murphy as he asked in despair.

“It’s just a game. To be happy is the most important thing but you upset us...” Murphy replied in a smile.

“Now I know...”

Hu He’s body fell to the ground with a loud thud.

At this moment, he felt restless. His gaming experience was by far the worst for him. His sworn brother who was a Ghost General left him behind, and his so-called benefactor laid his hands on him. This world is full of conspiracy. I have no idea how a pure and innocent person like me could survive in the future.

“Little Pomelo, quickly take a screenshot!” the male assassin, Murphy promptly told the young lady.

Upon hearing that, the young lady nodded and utilized the function of the camera. She took three shots of Hu He’s dead body.

Later, both of them squatted down next to each other and began to upload the photo of Hu He’s murder to the forum.

[Killing target, Zombie Forgemaster, waiting for the reward...]

Crayon_Shinchan: “Congratulations! Congratulations on your first attempt in killing! (Reward: 0.01 soul coins)”

Peppa_Boar: “Such a refreshing feeling. Let’s wait for him to respawn in the Mansion of the Dead! (Reward: 20 soul coins)”

Xueli_The_Strongest: “Wah, the malignant guy is finally killed. I was so infuriated when I saw people discussing this guy who stole the skull of Cha Na in the forum. I’m surprised to find out that this guy was murdered so fast. Give you a like! (Reward: 1 soul coin)”

Ye_Xueer_is_the_cutest: “Bravo! The whole world is searching for him right now. The first person attempting to kill him must receive a like from me! (Reward: 100 soul coins)”

Broke_Trash: “I don’t mind the fact that he has created the invasion of the evil apocalypse. But I have never thought that he would dare to steal the symbolic item of our battle event, the skull of Cha Na. This is a big deal! Good shot! I’m poor but I’ll still give out a reward. (Reward: 10 soul coins)”

Grasshopper_Captain: “No point saying much, keep your reward nicely. (Reward: 10 soul coins)”

Watermelon_Taro: “This is my effort from laboring for money. It’s little, hope you don’t mind. (Reward: 3 soul coins)”

After the screenshot of Hu He’s death was uploaded, the forum became active. Obviously, everyone was elated.

From this, one could tell how much the players hated this malignant player.

At this time, Hu He quit playing the game, took off his virtual reality headset, and stared at the screen blankly with his hollow eyes.

He seemed to be able to imagine the scene of him being enveloped by the players’ army within three hours.

Chapter 142 - Twin Souls

Lightning flashed and thunder rumbled in the sky along with a downpour.

The trees in the forest swayed vigorously due to the strong wind, forming a rustling sound as they hit each other. It sounded like weeping or probably more like it was recounting a tale.

On the muddy ground, two slim and weak figures snuggled together. The howling wind caused them to tremble and they leaned closer to each other.

At this moment, the boy's thin shirt was torn apart. The back part of his body had a shocking wound. With his skin torn and flesh being exposed, blood ran down his back quietly, forming a tiny stream on the muddy ground.

The color drained from the boy's face. His lips quivered due to the excruciating pain and he pursed his lips to prevent himself from bawling in agony.

"Little Pomelo, I think I am about to die," the boy murmured weakly to the girl in his embrace.

"It won't happen. We promised to escape together and you even said that you are going to tie the knot with me," the girl's face revealed her hope for a wonderful future life. However, deep in her eyes, it was visible that she could not make sense of the situation before her.

Upon hearing that, the boy twitched his pale lips and reached out his hand to caress Little Pomelo's face.

"You must escape from here. Promise me to live your life well."

"Alright, let's get out of here together!" the girl asserted.

A huge amount of blood continued to ooze out. The boy could no longer withstand it, hence he began to gasp for breath.

At this moment, he was so desperate to carry on living his life and to be able to be by Little Pomelo's side to grow older with her and spend his entire life taking care of her.

However, his life seemed to have come to an end at this juncture.

I am not willing to give up... I only hope that... Little Pomelo will be able to escape from here... after I am dead... I beg for your mercy, God...

The boy's vision turned blurry and his head hung low. At this point in time, he seemed to have heard the voices of those people. A scene of the world of blue in the cultivation pool emerged in his eyes.

“What a perfect body experiment... it is something so rare in this Dharma-ending age... in this regard, your serial number will be 410 from now on.”

“Having a stable life form... included a trace of extrasensory perception... let's see if it's possible to awaken the special characteristics of his body composition... such a pity, it seems like we have failed this time... 410 you'd better not die... you need to at least last for ten experiments...”

“This is your roommate. Her name is called 423. Both of you'd better not get into a fight, or else you'll know the consequence of it...”

“This is such a shocking discovery... 423! Perhaps we can rely on the special characteristics of her body composition to study the secret of cultivation... you are indeed more powerful than the useless 410...”

“Hahaha... 423... the special characteristics of your body composition have been awakened... you have successfully been integrated with the extrasensory perception... hahaha... we are about to succeed!”

“It's so unexpected to know that the useless 410's special characteristics of body composition have also been successfully stimulated... such a shocking

surprise... both you and 423 will become our babies in the laboratory next time..."

The memory before death was leaping and flashing like a film in reverse. Other than the experiments that frightened him, a gentle and soft voice of a girl popped up in his mind.

"410, will we die here?"

"Please don't address me, 410. I have a name, call me Murphy!"

"To be honest, I am not called 423 either. My name is actually Little Pomelo."

"Why do you keep staring at me?"

"I can't see you, I can only feel your presence. Hee-hee."

"Murphy, why do they want to treat us like this? I feel so painful, very painful!"

"Little Pomelo, hang in there! They said you will surely be successful, you won't die!"

"Murphy, I feel like I can't bear with it anymore. It seems like I'm going to die soon. I'm in great despair!"

"Little Pomelo you must persevere. I will surely bring you out of this place!"

"Seriously?"

"I promise!"

"Okay, I believe in you!"

"My mum told me to get married to a man I'm fond of when I grow up, so Murphy I just want to tell you that I like you!"

“Once we have escaped from here, I will marry you!”

“Yes, we will certainly get out of here together.”

“Little Pomelo, I can feel that my body is getting stronger. I believe we can leave here soon, very soon!”

“But Murphy, why is my strength not getting stronger? I can only sense as though I have become two of me. It’s so weird!”

“Probably, because I am a boy, hee-hee.”

“Murphy, are we serious about escaping? But I don’t have a clear vision so I can’t see the road clearly. What to do?”

“I’m your pair of eyes!”

“It’s good to have you!”

Not knowing how long it had passed, Murphy felt as though something was crawling on his face. He slowly opened his eyes to find Little Pomelo sweeping her strand of hair on his face.

“I’m not dead?” Murphy asked in his husky voice.

“Murphy, we will share a life in the future. You are me, and I am you. We will never get separated again!” Little Pomelo held Murphy’s hand as she giggled.

“How did you do it?”

“Because I don’t want to let you die. Your body slowly turned cold and I almost cried my heart out. I keep telling myself that you must not die, then the other me just entered your body. So, now we share a life together!”

As Little Pomelo was speaking, she stretched out her hand to pinch his cheek.

“Do you feel pain?”

Sensing the slight pain emerging from his cheek, Murphy revealed a smile on his face. He knew for sure that they were together this time.

“So painful, I must pinch you back!” Murphy smiled as he pinched her cheek.

“No way, Murphy, you bully me! I want to pinch you back as well...”

Two bodies who shared a life held their hands together as they stepped out of the forest, moving toward a whole new life.

In such a cruel world, they were determined to survive.

They used to be bullied, experienced hunger and were even cheated before, but they still lived a happy life because they had each other’s company.

They thought of going home, returning to their parents’ sides. However, on their journey back home, they realized that both of them could not separate from each other. Hence, other things were no longer important anymore.

He was her pair of eyes that could show her the way, brightening up her initial world of darkness.

She was his life that could come to a halt for him, ready to be his gentle harbor.

Out of coincidence, Murphy knew about the existence of a game named Online Battle and realized that this game was like a real world. Hence, he used up all his savings to buy two sets of virtual reality devices, thinking of bringing her in to the real world.

“Murphy, I am getting angry now. You used up all the money and we are going to starve to death soon!”

“Little Pomelo, I heard that one can earn money through this game. I won’t make you starve. You need to know if you get hungry, I will certainly be hungry as well.”

“I am so sad to realize that you always feed me just to ensure you don’t starve yourself.”

“That’s right so you’ll have to make sure to fill your stomach up all the time.”

“Alright, I’ll listen to you this time.”

In order to understand clearly about this game – from ways of earning money to the most profitable character class, Murphy will frequent the forum to seek advice from the experienced players, hoping to get some help.

After receiving a useful hint from Crayon_Shinchan, they found out that assassin players could earn the most money.

After coming into contact with the game content, this was the first time that Little Pomelo had ever experienced a world full of colors. This had resulted in her being deeply into it and once she knew that Murphy chose the position as an assassin, she followed suit. This was all due to the fact that she wanted to earn money with him and work hard together for their happiness.

Thereupon, the game had serial killer couples that accepted Reward Quests.

The strange soul of Murphy and Little Pomelo had indeed attracted the attention of Lu Wu. Hence, he asked Bei Li for more information.

According to Bei Li’s explanation, their souls have actually combined with each other and formed an inseparable existence called twin souls.

As Lu Wu was curious, he used to ask a question related to how long they would stay that way.

Bei Li replied, “It will last longer than eternity. Even if they were to be reincarnated and reborn, they are fated to be together forever.”

Out of curiosity, Lu Wu paid attention to these two individuals.

There was once during the sunset by the sea, Lu Wu witnessed the scene of both of them holding hands and slowly got out of sight with only a trace of a shadow that came into view.

Chapter 143 - How To Maintain The State Of Combat

The safe zone of the Mansion of the Dead, Beiqi.

A dense crowd of people gathered around the resurrection point, waiting patiently for the presence of the hated player.

After waiting for about three hours, a figure that everyone anticipated had finally appeared at the resurrection point.

Once he entered the game, Hu He was taken aback after witnessing a large group of players gathered together there waiting for him. He revealed an awkward smile on his face and quickly quit the game, vanishing from sight.

Everyone was speechless.

“Damn it! Did he just run away? He didn’t even allow us to vent our anger!”

“Idiot, I thought of asking him to return the skull of Cha Na. What’s the point of waiting when he’d just run away like this?”

“I don’t believe this brat will ever get back online. C’mon, it’s time to fight...”

Therefore, the players started keeping their guard up and Hu He did appear at the resurrection point a few times within this period. However, Hu He would go offline when he found that the group of people there still hadn’t dispersed.

After enduring for half a day, Hu He reappeared again, but this time he did not go offline. Instead, he fixed his gaze at everyone with a dispirited expression on his face.

“Hello everyone, don’t you find it boring?”

Upon hearing that, some players fetched their chessboards and started playing chess, some players fished out their tea set and began making tea, while others gathered together to play poker cards. All sorts of entertainment were available and no one seemed to have the thought of leaving.

Hu He was dumbfounded at the sight of this. He swore in his heart. What a way to play this game! So, they seriously want to confine me in the safe zone.

Looking at this, the only choice he had was to wait until they exceeded their time limit to be online in order to escape secretly. Hu He felt sad to even think about it.

At this moment, a group of people was approaching from afar.

“Hey brothers, it’s time to change shifts. Go ahead and complete your quest if you have one and go hunting if needed.”

Once the people surrounding the resurrection point heard that, they packed their things and rose to their feet. One after another left and a new batch of people sat around the resurrection point.

Hu He was utterly out of words.

“Just give up. Every major guild has come into a consensus to be on duty for turns of 24 hours without resting at all. Are you prepared to surrender?”

Gu Yu from the Myth Guild walked a few steps forward and proceeded toward the resurrection point to pat on Hu He’s shoulder.

“Isn’t it interesting?” Sun Qi asked as he sat by the side of Gu Yu’s leg and gnashed his teeth.

“It’s so immoral for you all to do that!” Hu He was overwhelmed with sorrow and anger.

“Immoral?” Gu Yu was left stunned upon hearing that. It seemed a bit awkward to hear a word coming out from a person who had dug his own tomb.

“Where was your morality when you stole the skull of Cha Na and replaced it with a wooden-carved one?” Sun Qi who was beside Gu Yu grit his teeth as he retorted.

Hu He waved his hand, indicating that he was extremely dejected. He sat down at the resurrection point without saying a word. He kept looking into the eyes of Gu Yu and the others, making it seem like he was trying to convince them of his sincerity.

“Oh yeah, tomb-digging guy, what did you dig, causing you to be in such great trouble?” Gu Yu and Sun Qi asked out of curiosity as they were playing chess.

This made Hu He recall Hiderigami of whom he almost laid his hands on. He could not help but heave a deep sigh.

“I nearly obtained Hiderigami and almost became the most invincible player. If I possessed Hiderigami, I would never be afraid of anyone and I could do whatever I liked. I was so close!” as he mentioned it, he used both his index finger and thumb to make a gesture, indicating a very short distance.

“Hiderigami!” upon hearing it, Gu Yu felt refreshed all of a sudden.

Even though his Demonic God’s Apostles were the strongest in the inherited character class, the disadvantage of his character class was that the progress of development was not systematic. Hence, if he could not develop himself in the long term, then he would certainly be surpassed by latecomers.

Hiderigami was the key to his class development and also his most important task at hand.

“Where is Hiderigami?” Gu Yu questioned hastily.

“He’s in Evil Nightmare City. He was trying to recuperate through energy intake from the seal. I wasted a lot of energy to dig him out. Who knows how the fragile seal just broke apart. I feel infuriated just thinking about this,” recalling the past provoked Hu He’s rage.

“How did you get into the place?” Gu Yu was astonished.

He led a few people to go in with him a few times but they were all blocked by the Zombie Poison Formation. They all died even before entering the place.

“Have you been there as well?” Hu He was startled.

“Quick, tell me! How do you get in?” Gu Yu asked eagerly.

As he listened to this question, Hu He seemed to have thought of something, hence he chuckled as he uttered, “One needs to possess a certain skill to get into the city. Since you’re not part of our zombie forging community, for sure you don’t know how to be flexible. It’s very hard to enter but if you bring me along, I can help you to get in.”

Hu He’s statement caused Gu Yu to have conflicted feelings.

He finally found out about the way to enter Evil Nightmare City, but it seemed like this awful player was the only one who knew the way. As a result, it left him wondering what he could do.

“Brother, if you want to enter the place, you need me. You can think about it first. I can obviously see through the desire in your eyes,” as Hu He knew that the possibility was high, he grinned from ear to ear.

“Boss, we can’t let go of this guy. If not, our guild will be done for!” Sun Qi interjected promptly to discourage the seemingly interested Gu Yu from having such a thought.

Gu Yu certainly knew the repercussions. Now, the major guilds came to an agreement to take turns in defending the area so if he released him without authorization, he would surely be besieged.

It was so rare to see hope for class development, hence he did not want to give up too easily.

After much consideration, Gu Yu created a live chat group and added Chen Ziyu, Wu Guoyi, Lu Zhan, Liu Chai, and other leaders into the live chat channel.

Gu Yu: “Fellow brothers, I have something to discuss with all of you!”

Ye Xue'er: “What's the matter?”

Chen Ziyu: “I'm in the midst of killing a ferocious spirit. I'll talk to you later!”

Liu Chai: “Same question, what's up?”

Seeing that the leaders from each major guild were already in the group, Gu Yu started to explain his intention.

Gu Yu: “Fellow brothers, I have something to discuss with all of you! Can I borrow the most-hated player for a bit? I guarantee that I won't let him run away!”

Ye Xue'er: “No!”

Liu Chai: “No +1”

Wu Guoyi: “No +2”

Chen Ziyu: “No +3”

Gu Yu felt a headache when he saw the replies of disapproval from all of them.

But he was not ready to give up the chance for class development. Therefore, upon further deliberation, he tried to explain again and come clean about his difficulty for class development. Without Hu He, it was unlikely that he would be able to accomplish it successfully.

Upon witnessing Gu Yu's sincere manner, the leaders of the major guilds began to hesitate.

As the saying goes, strike the iron while it's hot. Hence, Gu Yu proceeded to promise some benefits and assured the rest that he would surely send him back to the safe zone when they were done. After all his efforts, they finally agreed reluctantly to let him borrow Hu He for a short period of time.

After receiving approval by the major guilds, Gu Yu heaved a sigh of relief. He then averted his gaze toward Hu He.

“Let's go, bring me to Evil Nightmare City, but to ensure you don't run away or go offline, you need to maintain your state of combat.”

Upon hearing Gu Yu's statement, Hu He showed a surprised look on his face while thinking of how foolish it would be to not escape.

However, once he heard Gu Yu mention maintaining the state of combat to prevent him from going offline, he was stunned for an instant.

“How can we maintain a constant state of combat?”

“Simple, let the dog bite you along the way!”

Both Hu He and Sun Qi didn't know what to say.

Chapter 144 - Hiderigami Plug

At the outskirts of Beiqi's Evil Nightmare City.

The Myth Guild led by Gu Yu was slowly making their approach.

The current area around Nightmare City was undoubtedly where evil raged the craziest. In order to avoid attracting the attention of evil spirits, Gu Yu did not bring along with him the entire guild. Instead, he only brought about a few dozen of their most elite players.

As they got nearer to Nightmare City, Gu Yu and the others also noticed a Zombie Energy Pillar which was shooting up to the sky like a smoke signal. At the peak of the Zombie Energy Pillar, dark shadows were continuously falling from it.

Those who saw this could not help but turn their heads and glare at Hu He.

Hu He gave an awkward smile. He stretched his hand out and shook Sun Qi who in turn increased the grip of his teeth which was still clamped on his arm.

“Guy who plays with corpses, how do we get in?” asked Gu Yu who had turned to look at Hu He when they were at the city gates.

“Ahem. The layout of the area around this city gate is fake. It is actually a Zombie Poison Formation. Once a person enters, the zombie poison will penetrate his body and he will most likely die. Thus, we need to take special measures.”

When Gu Yu heard this, he felt that this kid actually had some tricks up his sleeve.

“Therefore, we will have to make our way through there!” as he spoke, Hu He pointed at the hole which he dug previously at the side of the city wall.

No one realized how easy it could have been.

“That’s it?” Gu Yu was shocked.

“Yes,” Hu He nodded.

“Kill him and send him back!”

When the guild’s subordinates heard this, they all lifted their huge blades and approached Hu He.

The veins on Hu He’s forehead were pounding, “Wait, please don’t. It’s very dangerous inside as it’s all littered with traps. Without me, you guys will never be able to get very far.”

“Are there really traps in there?”

“Yes, there are a lot of traps in there. Danger is basically everywhere!” Hu He appeared very serious.

“Alright. You lead the way. Get in!”

Then, the gamers from the Myth Guild followed Hu He as they all squeezed one by one into the hole below.

After they went through the hole, they all realized that the entire Nightmare City was covered with zombie energy. There was a very thick layer on the ground to the point where it reached their knees. Their vision was also blocked by the thin zombie energy sinking from the sky. They could only see things which were about ten feet away from them. From afar, evil low growls were even more frequent than before.

“Big Boss Gu, I’ve already helped you find Hiderigami so can you let me go now?” Hu He turned his head and asked.

“We’ll talk after we find him!” Gu Yu gave him a glare.

Hu He sighed. He then took out a pouch of powder from his bag and gave it to Gu Yu, “Big Boss Gu, this is Loose Zombie Powder. I used a part of Cha

Na's head to make this. Once you coat yourself with this, evil will not be able to notice you.”

“Oh right, don't use too much of it as I only have this pouch,” Hu He said with pain laced in his voice.

When Gu Yu heard this, he accepted the Loose Zombie Powder and poured some out to be applied on his body. Then, he gave it to the person next to him.

[Used Loose Zombie Powder. Buffer shall remain for 30 minutes!]

“You do know some things. You must be a grave robber in real life too, right? It must have also been your ancestors' job, or else how could you have created this class?” Gu Yu asked out of curiosity.

When Hu He heard this, he merely chuckled in reply.

According to the ancient book, those who forged zombies were far more vicious than grave robbers as digging up someone's ancestral tomb was a common occurrence. Moreover, when they were fighting against enemies, they would secretly go to their enemy's ancestral tomb and dig up their ancestors to forge zombie spirits out of them before fighting them head on.

Although Hu He had never felt the feeling of controlling ancestors to beat up their descendants, the thought of it was enough to pleasure him.

After everyone had applied the Loose Zombie Powder, Hu He was shocked to see that Gu Yu had thrown the leftovers into his own private space.

“Big Boss Gu, that is mine...” Hu He said with pain in his voice.

“I know. I'm just afraid that you will run away after this. When all this is done, I will return it to you. Do you not believe me?”

“I do!” Hu He grit his teeth.

Then, Gu Yu and the rest followed where Hu He pointed to begin their path toward the center zone of Nightmare City.

Due to the effects of the powder, during Gu Yu and the others' journey, although they met with a lot of evil spirits, they all avoided them when they smelled their scent and did not make a move toward them.

“Why does this Loose Zombie Powder have this effect?” Mo Lingtian who was right behind Gu Yu could not contain his curiosity any further and asked.

“This powder was made through grinding Cha Na's head. I added in some spiritual materials which I found in order to imitate an evil scent. After applying this, those brainless spirits will think of us as evil as well. Moreover, we would be high level evils, so naturally they would not make a move on us.”

When Mo Lingtian heard this, he nodded. However, the way he looked at Hu He changed. After all, which normal person would research these things?

After arriving at Nightmare City's center zone, Hu He's heart was beating fast. Now, what he was most afraid of was that Hiderigami would be gone.

Actually, he also had his own selfish reasons for bringing Gu Yu here.

What Gu Yu wanted was to kill Hiderigami while what he wanted was Hiderigami's corpse. Both their aims could be said to not be in conflict with each other.

If he could truly obtain Hiderigami's corpse, then even if he had to be killed and brought back to the city, he would be willing.

His thoughts were simple. After obtaining Hiderigami's corpse, he would return to the city to concentrate and study meticulously in order to forge Hiderigami's corpse into a zombie spirit.

When that time comes, he could leave the safe zone whenever he wanted. No one could stop him even if he wanted to go out with a handstand.

After pushing away the thick fog, the familiar bloody coffin appeared before everyone's eyes.

Hu He took a few careful steps toward it. He nervously peeked his head out to look within it.

However, when he saw what was inside, Hu He was shocked.

All he saw within the bloody coffin was his sworn brother Little Sha lying peacefully within.

At this moment, Gu Yu and the rest walked forward as well. They, too, peeked their heads to look within. When Gu Yu saw Little Sha who was within the bloody coffin, his expression changed.

“Big Boss Gu, don't be too hasty!” Hu He could sense a murderous aura, hence he quickly placed his hands on Little Sha's head before giving it a strong shake.

When he felt someone shaking him, Little Sha opened his sleepy eyes and looked at Hu He in confusion.

“Good brother!” life was gradually returning to Little Sha's eyes.

If it wasn't because he couldn't beat him, the current Hu He really wanted to start a fight with him. Why did the word brother sound so cheap when it came from his mouth?

“Brother Little Sha, where is Hiderigami? Where did Hiderigami go?”

When Little Sha heard this, he sat up slowly from the bloody coffin, revealing a hole at the bottom of the coffin. Everyone could see that Hiderigami was stuck inside and that he was glaring at them with his head raised high.

Everyone was perplexed.

He took Hiderigami as a cushion?

A common thought appeared in everyone's head, and that was that this kid known as Little Sha was really brave!

“Brother Little Sha, quickly pull Hiderigami out. We need him urgently,” Hu He said with bright eyes.

“No! No!” Little Sha shook his head.

“Why?”

“I've turned Hiderigami's body into a plug to block the Yin Soul Eye. Although this cannot stop the flow of zombie energy, it still has some effect. If you pull him out, the seal will be completely destroyed.”

They were confused, “Hiderigami? Plug?”

“You're not afraid that he would ingest the zombie energy and recover?” Hu He could not help but ask.

“No. After all, I'm still here. The more zombie energy Hiderigami absorbs, the more I will absorb from him. I can guarantee that he will not recover!” as he spoke, Little Sha rubbed his chubby cheeks.

“Is there no room for negotiation?” Hu He was still slightly unwilling to take this as an answer.

Little Sha shook his head once again.

When Gu Yu saw this, he quickly cast a look at those behind him. The members of the guild then immediately understood what he meant and surrounded the bloody coffin.

Chapter 145 - Listen To My Explanation

Chapter 145: Listen To My Explanation

Looking at Gu Yu who was about to take action, Hu He swiftly turned around and stopped him.

Gu Yu and others were not aware of Little Sha's ability. However, how could they not? Little Sha might look chubby and harmless, but the capability he revealed when breaking open the coffin still remained fresh in Hu He's memory.

As Hu He saw the suspicious look on Gu Yu and the others' eyes, he lowered his voice as he spoke, "Hehe, he is a Ghost General, so guys, don't look for trouble!"

Upon hearing it, Gu Yu and others quickly turned on Observation Mode.

[Evil Ghost General (Ghost General Peak)]:

Character Details: The masterpiece of the crazy Zombie Forgemaster. He can still maintain his consciousness after absorbing a great amount of zombie energy and the evil spirit so he is known as the Master of Evilness. He was later summoned to surrender to the King of Beiqi and was conferred as an Evil Ghost General. He has been guarding the Yin Soul Eye Seal in Evil Nightmare City for about 40,000 years.

Looking at the Analysis Menu, Gu Yu and the others widened their eyes and slowly released their weapons at hand.

This is too powerful, we can't bear to offend... can't bear to offend!

"What do we do now?" the depressed Gu Yu looked toward Hu He as he asked.

Hu He stretched out his hand to swing his left arm which was bitten tightly by Sun Qi.

“Boss Gu, take it easy. Believe in me!”

Hu He who was grinning ear to ear gazed at Little Sha. He then opened his mouth, saying, “Brother Sha, are we still brothers?”

“For sure we are brothers. We have become sworn brothers in the cave, certainly, we are brothers for life,” Little Sha replied straightforwardly.

Upon hearing this, Hu He gave out a smile, “Big brother, I believe you must be willing to lend a helping hand when it comes to the matter of vital importance to me.”

“That’s for sure!”

“Give Hiderigami to us!”

“No way!”

“Please give him to me, if not I will be a dead man. You’ll never see me again,” Hu He pleaded in sorrow.

“Still no way!”

Just as Hu He did not know what to do, Gu Yu shoved him away and looked toward Little Sha with a smile, saying, “Brother Little Sha, do you know what this is?” Gu Yu fetched out a bead condensed with the zombie spirit point from his personal channel.

[Zombie Spirit Bead]: This is obtained after purifying the evil zombies in the refined morgue. The zombie spirit point on the inside is up to 542 points.

Looking at the zombie spirit bead, Little Sha showed his look of desire as he rubbed his hands.

“It looks so delicious.”

Gu Yu nodded, "It's indeed tasty. Since fate has brought us together, why don't I just give this to you?"

Little Sha nodded hastily, "You'll also be my brother in the future. Quickly hand it over to me!"

Upon seeing his reaction, Gu Yu passed the zombie spirit bead to Little Sha.

Little Sha experienced a surge of excitement. He swallowed the zombie spirit bead once he had taken it from Gu Yu and revealed a sense of satisfaction.

Seeing that Little Sha got hooked on that, Gu Yu fetched out another zombie spirit bead from his personal channel.

"Brother, are you done eating? I still have more!"

"Quick, give it to me now!" Little Sha opened his mouth in amazement.

Without hesitation, Gu Yu handed another zombie spirit bead over to Little Sha.

As he watched Little Sha swallow the bead, Gu Yu thought that he should strike while the iron's hot.

"Brother, I still have lots of them, do you want them all?"

Little Sha nodded instantly.

Right after consuming two zombie spirit beads, he was surprised to find that his cultivation of Ghost General Peak showed signs of improvement. He was filled with desire for the zombie spirit beads in his heart. As someone who was simple-minded, he did not realize that Gu Yu was actually trying to set a trap for him.

"I left the rest of my beads outside the city. We can go collect them together."

“How about Hiderigami?” Little Sha revealed a doubtful expression on his face.

As Hu He realized the plan of Gu Yu, he quickly opened his mouth, saying, “Big brother, I can help you to keep an eye on this place. As your brother, I’ll make sure to guard this place well.”

“I thought you wanted Hiderigami?” Little Sha looked confused.

“Even if I longed for Hiderigami, I’ll still need your approval before I can get him. So, feel free to go and collect your beads. I’ll discuss further with you when you get back.”

“Alright!” Little Sha replied instantly with joy.

“C’mon, let’s go and get the beads,” Gu Yu said to Little Sha after casting a glance at Hu He.

Little Sha nodded his head and then grabbed Gu Yu’s shoulder.

“Let me take you there!”

He took hold of Gu Yu as he was speaking. The two figures soared into the air toward the outside of the city.

As the two figures vanished from sight, Hu He quickly summoned the zombie spirit of Cha Na to proceed and embrace the skull of Hiderigami. He then exerted great force trying to pull it out.

The rest of the people from the Myth Guild felt the urge to help out. However, at this point in time, Gu Yu’s voice resounded in the live chat channel.

“Brothers, please don’t help, please don’t!”

“Why are you just standing there? Faster come and help!” Hu He yelled as he was trying to drag Hiderigami with all his might.

“Ouch! My stomach hurts!”

“Same thing here, my stomach really hurts. Perhaps we are poisoned by the zombie poison.”

“Ouch, ouch, ouch! Me too, my stomach is aching so badly.”

Hu He was dumbfounded to find the people from the Myth Guild squatting down while holding their tummies. He then turned his gaze toward the only person who was still standing, Mo Lingtian.

“I... I also have a stomachache,” Mo Lingtian smiled awkwardly as he gradually crouched down with his head lowered and hands clasping on the head.

Aren't you having a stomachache? Why on earth do you still have time to squat down with your head lowered and hands clasping the head?

Hu He then averted his gaze to the dog who was biting his left arm.

“Ouch, I have a toothache!” the dog mumbled while sobbing.

“I don't care anymore!” Hu He's eyes only had Hiderigami at this time. He used up almost all his energy just to slowly pull Hiderigami out from the cave below the blood coffin.

“Bang!” the ground trembled as a result of Hiderigami's enormous body landing on the ground.

At this moment, the blood coffin changed into twelve spinning beads. Then, these beads started to shake, slowly floated up in the air and suddenly shrank and collided with each other.

“Boom!” a dense surge of zombie energy approached, causing everyone to narrow their eyes.

“Buzz! Buzz!”

The twelve beads spun in a counter-clockwise direction, soar into the sky and exploded when they reached high up the sky. These beads were similar to meteors as they fell upon the same direction of the Land of Beiqi.

Promptly, as everyone was still under amazement, a total of twelve Zombie Energy Pillars from afar shot up to the sky.

[Server Warning: The Evil Seal has been damaged by the player, Hu He, causing the emergence of twelve new Zombie Pillars. Other players, please be cautious as the outside world is extremely dangerous!]

[Game Notification #1: The situation of evil invasion deteriorates and the Zombie Pillars need to be ruined to crack the case of invasion this time. Take note that every Zombie Pillar is guarded by an Evil Ghost General at the initial stage of its ability!]

[Game Notification #2: The Mansion of the Dead is most likely to encounter the invasion of the Evil Army on a large scale. All players, please be ready to defend yourself!]

As these twelve Zombie Energy Pillars appeared, a bigger scale of Evil Yin Soldiers fell upon the ground like raindrops. Many players in the wild were attacked under a state of confusion. They were all killed by the Evil Army, transformed them into rays of light and instantly removed them from the game.

At this moment, it dawned on Mo Lingtian and the others of their boss's effort. They felt lucky to escape from being included in the list of the Server Announcements. What a close call!

The initial smile on Hu He's face when he thought he had successfully obtained Hiderigami froze instantly.

After that, he turned his shoulder over to stare at the people from the Myth Guild in grief and fury.

“I don't know. I'm not part of it, I'm not!”

“It's also none of my business. Don't you see that the message only stated your name?”

“That’s true, this is a living thing, too. You can’t put the blame on us. If we were not having a stomachache, we would surely help you out.”

“Yes, yes, this is part and parcel of life. We can’t resist it. My condolences to you.”

“Brother, endure your grief. Embrace a new life with a smile on your face!”

Hu He felt as though he was going to explode in rage at this moment.

Am I done for this time? I have caused one huge commotion after another. Do I still have a foothold in this game?

“Ahhhhh, I don’t care anymore!” thinking of this, Hu He’s eyes reddened and he averted his gaze toward his one and only hope, Hiderigami.

Just then, a shadow landed from the sky. He ran clumsily toward the side of the blood coffin, looking rather hopeless as he turned facing out.

“Big brother, please listen to my explanation!”

Chapter 146 - Plan To Annihilate Their Clan

Chapter 146: Plan To Annihilate Their Clan

Big Brother, Please Listen To My Explanation!

Looking into Little Sha's bloodshot eyes, Hu He hurriedly defended himself.

"Explain yourself!" Little Sha's hands slowly clenched into fists.

"Hiderigami started it first!"

"Right after you left, Hiderigami suddenly began to move. He rose to his feet before he escaped from the hole. I wanted to stop him. Unfortunately, I am not capable of doing it with my ability."

"Besides, I also suspect that Hiderigami has been concealing his strength. He's not as weak as he appears. He's been looking for an opportunity. After our big brother left, Hiderigami must have thought that it was his chance to run away. Therefore, he released all his remaining power at once."

Hu He explained with a somber expression, coupled with a few relevant gestures, as if what he said was the exact truth.

Little Sha was glued to the ground upon hearing Hu He's story. Confused, he turned to look at the members of the Myth Guild.

Mo Lingtian and the rest immediately answered with a nod.

"Really?" Little Sha struggled to believe their words.

"No, it's not real..." Hiderigami, who was still lying on the ground, could not hold back any longer.

All of a sudden, the air was filled with awkwardness.

“Big brother, do you believe Hiderigami, who has attacked you, or me?” Hu He questioned furiously.

The innocent Little Sha was stuck in a very difficult position, not knowing who to trust.

After pondering for a moment, Little Sha lifted his gaze to look at Hu He.

“I trust you. You’re my brother!”

Upon hearing Little Sha’s answer, Hu He was immediately relieved.

“Idiot!” Hiderigami, who was still lying on the ground, was flabbergasted as he heaved a sigh of disappointment.

“Do you see it now, big brother? He’s insulting you!” Hu He seized the opportunity to fan the flames of hatred.

“Hiderigami, you tried to harm me. I’ll fight with you!” appearing enraged, Little Sha was ready to charge toward Hiderigami.

At this moment, Gu Yu, who was standing aside, acted before Little Sha could, as he rushed to Hiderigami. He lifted his fist and began to thrash Hiderigami.

After landing a few punches on Hiderigami, Gu Yu turned and glanced at Little Sha.

“Let me handle this, brother!”

As he finished his work, he continued to attack Hiderigami mercilessly.

However, Hiderigami had an extremely strong body. Despite the fact that Hiderigami was very weak now, Gu Yu’s strenuous punches did not even leave a mark on Hiderigami’s skin.

“Aren’t you tired?” Hiderigami asked in an indifferent manner.

“Tired, my ass!” Gu Yu, who refused to admit defeat, activated the state of evil body. Immediately, all his attributes were boosted significantly before he landed another powerful punch on Hiderigami.

Being in the evil body state, Gu Yu was burning in a crimson fire. A horn slowly grew from his forehead.

Upon witnessing this scene, Hiderigami and Little Sha’s eyes popped out of their heads.

“Demonic God!” they exclaimed in unison.

Hiderigami was especially astonished. Although he knew that he was currently very weak, he was not afraid that he would be killed at all.

After all, he was a zombie. He had been focusing on cultivating his physical body. With his strong physical body of Ghost Emperor Realm, he was confident that no one, including Little Sha, could break his superficial defense.

However, at this moment, fear could be seen in his eyes.

The person he was the most afraid of across the entire Land of Beiqi was undoubtedly the Demonic God.

The existence of the Demonic God was beyond the Ghost Emperor Realm. He was a true God whose name was recorded in the Underworld God List.

Hiderigami had learned about the god’s true strengths from his previous fight with the Demonic God’s clone. Although it was only a clone, Hiderigami was no match for it. If the Great Emperor of Dong Yue did not stop them toward the end of the fight, he believed that he would not have stayed alive until today.

As a result, Hiderigami was swamped by the fear of death when he, once again, witnessed the power of the Demonic God.

Being under the fearful eyes of Hiderigami and Little Sha, Gu Yu continued his arduous attack.

As time passed, Hiderigami had recovered from shock and appeared rather indifferent now. Read more chapter on vipnovel.com

“Huff!”

After a good ten minutes of assault, Gu Yu was panting as he finally stopped his actions.

“Aren’t you tired?” Hiderigami repeated his question in an unsympathetic manner.

Feeling exhausted, Gu Yu wiped off his sweat.

Hiderigami’s strength was beyond his imagination. He had drained every bit of his energy, yet Hiderigami remained absolutely unharmed.

Gu Yu got to his feet before he turned to look at Little Sha, “Is there a way to kill him?”

“No!” Little Sha’s answer was succinct and straightforward.

“Then, why did you say that you were going to fight with him?” Gu Yu was bewildered.

“I was merely saying words. He is the elitest of the Ghost Emperor Realm and has been focusing on cultivating his physical body. There’s no way for me to break his defense. The best I can do is to land some punches on him to vent my anger.”

Upon hearing that, Gu Yu pulled a long face. Then, he turned to look at Hu He.

“What about you? You have been studying about dead bodies. Do you have any idea how to defeat him?”

“Not now. We have to find a quiet place first. The Loose Zombie Powder on us is going to expire soon. Let’s leave this place immediately. I’ll see if I can temper him with my inherited skill,” Hu He answered excitedly, knowing that it was his time to perform when Gu Yu asked for his opinion.

Gu Yu was flustered by Hu He's answer. Yet, he seemed to have run out of other options. Therefore, he could only nod and agree to Hu He's suggestion.

He waved his hand and said, "Please help and move Hiderigami away."

"Beep! Beep! Beep!"

At this moment, Gu Yu realized that he was unexpectedly added into a live chat channel.

Chen Ziyu: "Boss Gu, please explain! (angry emoji)"

Ye Xue'er: "Didn't you say that you'll send him back here immediately?"

Liu Chai: "It's complete turmoil out there. Boss Gu, we're waiting for your explanation!"

Wu Guoyi: "Where is he? Where's the player you borrowed?"

Being questioned by the others, Gu Yu was immensely perturbed.

He quickly explained, "Brothers, I'm so sorry. I've accidentally lost him. I didn't expect the player to be so shameless that he'd destroy the seal and jeopardize Beiqi. I will bear the responsibility. I'll provide you with an explanation later. I'm trying to hunt him down and I'll get back to you all soon..."

Then, Gu Yu exited the live chat channel.

Although he had provided an explanation, Gu Yu was wretched, knowing that he would have to spend a huge amount of soul coins to compensate the other guilds. However, he had no choice but to spend the soul coins in order to achieve his class development.

Besides the guild leaders who were affected, the forum was in a state of tumult as well.

Crayon_Shinchan: “Didn’t the player stay in the safe zone? Who can explain what happened?”

Xueli_The_Strongest: “Apparently, Boss Chen knows what happened. However, he refused to tell me when I asked him. Sigh~ It seems like something strange happened.”

Watermelon_Taro: “This common player has fainted in the toilet due to excessive crying. Our lives are so tough. I hope this survival mode can end as soon as possible. Anyone wants to join me in destroying the Zombie Energy Pillars?”

Peppa_Boar: “You guys are so cowardly. The air is full of evil now. It’s a good time to earn some points now. For those who have been complaining about their lack of points, it’s time for you to work.”

Crayon_Shinchan replied to Peppa_Boar: “That’s right. Our Fourth Disaster Army is not afraid of evil! We should start making an arrangement for the evil spirits. (laughing emoji)”

Broke_Trash: “Let’s do it. It’s time to carry out our plan to annihilate their clan (laughing emoji)!”

Chapter 147 - The Fire Of Revenge

Chapter 147: The Fire Of Revenge

The invasion of the evil spirits had reached a worrisome stage when the seal was completely broken.

All the players who were exploring with their respective parties, were either ambushed and killed by the Evil Troopa or struggling to survive as they made their ways back to the Mansion of the Dead.

Many players were taken aback by the significant yet unexpected increase in the difficulty of the survival mode.

Now, Hu He's reputation as the malignant player had been made famous across the server. He was deemed by the players as an antagonist who was more terrifying than the Ghost King, and had become public enemy number one in the game.

However, the increase in the difficulty had also united the players once again. They began to assemble at the safe zone of the Mansion of the Dead to discuss how to destroy the Zombie Energy Pillar and how to survive through this crisis.

After the discussion, the players decided that it was time for the Beiqi Army of millions of soldiers to go to war again.

At this moment, the members of the Myth Guild, who destroyed the seal, together with Hu He and the rest, were carrying Hiderigami's body as they headed for the Cliffs of Desperation.

Everyone seemed excited when they arrived at the cliffs.

They found a secluded place after they left Evil Nightmare City for Hu He to temper Hiderigami.

Initially, Hu He was extremely confident. However, he began to despair after multiple attempts.

As his character class had been digitised, there was a progress bar on top of him as he tempered the dead body.

When he tempered the skull, the value of the progress bar was slowly increasing.

However, when he tempered Hiderigami, he made absolutely no progress. Although he had applied all the methods that he'd learned from the ancient books, with his current ability, he could never temper Hiderigami, the elitest of the Ghost Emperor Realm.

Eventually, Hu He gave up as he could not even break Hiderigami's defenses, let alone temper him completely.

In fact, he had thought of collecting some herbs that were mentioned in the ancient books to help with the tempering. Yet, his idea was denied by Gu Yu.

Gu Yu reckoned that, with the players' current abilities and Hiderigami's strong physique, there was no way the players could defeat him.

Yet, he knew there was a certain place to bring Hiderigami to. At that place, it would no longer be an issue to break Hiderigami's defense.

Having to carry Hiderigami's heavy body, they were worn out. During the journey, Little Sha had also helped them a couple of times. However, they still had no idea how to carry Hiderigami up the mountain. The journey was thrilling as Gu Yu and his crew were surrounded by innumerable lingering evils. Without the help of the Loose Zombie Powder, they could have been easily swamped by evil.

When they were halfway up the mountain, Gu Yu waved his hand, gesturing the team to take a rest.

Upon getting the signal, the team immediately let go of Hiderigami's body, causing it to fall violently onto the ground.

He took a peek at the Attributes Menu and noticed the red alert on their endurance. Gu Yu wiped off his sweat before he took out some food from his personal channel.

“Have some food, everyone. Our endurance has turned red and we still have a long way to go.”

The rest of the team followed suit and took out their food. They found a place to rest before they began to fill their stomachs.

“Boss, apparently there's a hut and it seems occupied!” the guild members exclaimed as they discovered the white-haired old man's hut.

Knowing the place rather well, Gu Yu nodded before he strode toward the hut.

The dog saw what was happening, immediately released its bite grip on Hu He, and followed closely behind Gu Yu.

When he arrived at the front door of the hut, Gu Yu gave it a thought before he reached out to knock on the door.

“Old man, are you there?”

A moment later, the door was slowly opened before the disgusted face of the white-haired old man was revealed.

“Young boy, you're bored and want to hike again?”

The bulging veins on Gu Yu's forehead throbbed and pulsated.

“I happened to pass by and wanted to pay you a visit.”

“Now that you've seen me, can I shut my door already?”

The white-haired old man's mean reply had taken Gu Yu aback. He regretted deeply having knocked on the old man's door for no good reason.

“Hey! Isn't this the dog? Why? You want to have another fight with me?” the white-haired old man suddenly noticed Sun Qi's presence.

“I'm not afraid of you! The one who gets drunk first is the loser!” Sun Qi, who refused to take things lying down, snapped at the old man.

Upon hearing this, Gu Yu glared at Sun Qi, “Drink the wine and see what will happen.”

Sun Qi was immediately intimidated by Gu Yu's words. He vaguely remembered how he infuriated Gu Yu the last time he was drunk.

Although Sun Qi wished to taste the white-haired old man's wine again, he understood that they had more important business to attend to. Therefore, he had no choice but to give up the wine.

At this moment, a silhouette appeared at the doorstep. Little Sha stared at the white-haired old man, appearing stunned.

“I think I've seen you somewhere before!” Little Sha, who seemed startled, exclaimed.

“Where?” the white-haired old man narrowed his eyes.

“I've no idea and I can't recall anything. However, my instinct tells me that I should be afraid of you.”

Little Sha raised his quivering hand as he spoke, as if he was trying to prove his statement.

Both Gu Yu and Sun Qi were rendered speechless.

“Can you guys stop acting like fools? Have the evil spirits polluted your brains with their zombie energy?”

The white-haired old man stared at Little Sha as though he, who was still quivering and appearing extremely frightened, was a madman.

“They’re real fools!” a disappointed sigh came from the distance.

Everyone turned to find the source of the voice, only to see Hiderigami, who was still lying on the ground, looking in their direction.

When the crowd was dispersed, Hiderigami could finally take a good look at the white-haired old man’s face. Immediately, Hiderigami put on a somber expression.

“You...”

Slap!

A clear and loud slap resonated across the atmosphere. The onlookers were shocked to find a red slap mark on the cheek of Hiderigami, who was supposed to be indestructible.

The slap, which appeared out of nowhere, had absolutely stunned Hiderigami. When he finally regained his composure, he seemed enraged.

“You...”

Slap!

The shadow of another palm was born out of thin air before it struck across Hiderigami’s cheek mercilessly, causing his head to reel.

At that moment, the white-haired old man’s voice rang in Hiderigami’s head.

“Do you believe that I’ll kill you if you make another heedless statement?”

Although Hiderigami was furious for being threatened, he remained quiet, knowing that this old man truly had the ability to kill him.

He knew that the old man, just like himself, had also achieved the Ghost Emperor Realm. Therefore, he might not even be able to defeat the old man even if he was at the peak realm.

Gu Yu and the rest were stunned by the scene, not knowing where the slaps came from.

As they pondered the questions, they turned to gaze at the white-haired old man.

The white-haired old man wore a solemn expression.

“It seems like the power of the Demonic God. I reckon that the Demonic God’s seal has become loose.”

Gu Yu was flustered.

He then asked in a skeptical manner, “It’s really the Demonic God?”

“I suppose it’s the Demonic God. Otherwise, how did the energy come from nowhere?” the white-haired old man experienced no flushed cheeks and palpitation as he lied, as if he was merely stating the fact.

The old man’s statement further confused Gu Yu. Although the shadow of the palm appeared when Hiderigami was staring at the white-haired old man, it seemed like the languid and weak old man did not have the ability to hurt Hiderigami physically.

“Anyway, don’t disturb me. I need to sleep now. There are evil spirits everywhere out there. So, stay on your guard.”

The white-haired old man took a glance at the crowd and his eyes eventually fixed on Hiderigami. He gave Hiderigami a menacing glare before he returned to the hut and conveniently shut the door behind him.

A grin appeared on the white-haired old man’s face after he entered the hut.

“The evil spirits, Mu Zhiguang, and Hiderigami have all appeared. It’s getting merrier now. I am anticipating a good show! Hehe!”

At that instant, Gu Yu and a few others approached Hiderigami who appeared nervous and awkward.

They asked, “Who slapped you?”

Hiderigami did not answer their question. Yet, there was a hint of rage in his eyes.

Seeing that he was receiving no reply, Gu Yu did not dwell on it. He waved his hand and immediately the others went forward to carry Hiderigami’s body before they continued their journey to the peak.

After they walked on the mountain road for half an hour, they heard an old hoarse voice in their heads.

“Hiderigami!”

Hiderigami widened his eyes in vigilance the moment he heard the voice that he was rather familiar with. It was from the person whom he was most afraid of — the Demonic God.

“Haha! You actually have the guts to come here. Hahaha!”

It was a hysterical laugh.

“Demonic God, my boss, I’ve carried out the task that you assigned to me. Yet, I failed to kill him. Therefore, I’ve brought him to you,” Gu Yu quickly explained.

“Good job! You didn’t disappoint me. Hahaha!”

Then, a black fog appeared beneath their feet and they immediately lost their balance. The clouds around the mountains ran past their sight as they rode on the black fog and headed for the mountain peak speedily.

Hiderigami was perturbed.

Although the Demonic God had been sealed, they were in his territory and he God could, more or less, release some of his energy. He would be

doomed if he was brought to the peak of the mountain.

“Roar!”

Hiderigami’s face was flushed red as he put in a strenuous effort to release the original Power of Blood Qi from his blood core. He had to escape from the restraint of the black fog even if he had to break his blood core.

However, when he finally released his Blood Qi, it was immediately subdued by the black fog.

“Hiderigami, stop struggling. There’s no way for you to run away from me since you’re already here. Nevertheless, you’re merely a weakling.”

Being called a weakling by the Demonic God, Hiderigami was not furious at all. Instead, he was overwhelmed by immense fear.

Within a blink of an eye, they had gone through the clouds and arrived at the mountain peak. Then, the black fog was dispersed.

At this moment, in front of the pillar pagoda that was built on the mountain peak, a pair of crimson eyes, which were concealed by the black fog, was glaring at Hiderigami.

“Hiderigami! Hiderigami! Hiderigami!”

The overlapping voices resonated in everyone’s head. Some voices were mumbling, some were yelling, and some were roaring. The voices triggered their negative emotions before the crowd fell to the ground, one after another, with a stoned expression.

However, the crowd was merely affected by the lingering negative emotions. The main target of the negative emotions was Hiderigami, who was already lying on the ground.

At this instant, the bloody sea within Hiderigami’s head was raging with furious waves. The laugh of the bloody boy continued to ring by his ear. He felt like a lonely yacht that was sailing the bloody sea and would be engulfed by the bloody waves at any time.

His fear was growing.

Under the attack of the Demonic God's negative emotions, the fear within Hiderigami was continuously being magnified. He grimaced in pain. Eventually, he could not endure it any longer and began to cry in agony.

“Hahaha. Hiderigami, look how pathetic you are. What happened to your egoistic self who used to be able to manipulate death? You once told me that being weak is a sin. Look at you now, weakling. Hahaha!”

After sensing the fear within Hiderigami, the Demonic God began to laugh hysterically.

He had been waiting for this day for a very long time. He almost thought that he would never be able to take revenge.

This moment was what kept him hopeful as he suffered through the innumerable days within the seal.

The Demonic God was extremely satisfied and pleased as he watched Hiderigami who was shivering in fear.

Despite the fact that they were only suffering from the lingering negative emotions, the players could not deal with it anymore.

Gu Yu begged, “Demonic God, please stop the energy. We can't take it any longer!”

The Demonic God did not answer. He turned to stare at Gu Yu with his crimson eyes silently yet menacingly.

Then, the negative emotions started to fade. Their faces were no longer pale. Yet, there was still a bit of fear that remained on their faces.

They felt as though they had just returned from death's doorsteps.

Among them, Little Sha was suffering the worst. Not only his hands, but his whole body, was quivering.

Witnessing the power of the scariest demonic deity of the Land of Beiqi, his heart almost stopped. This time, he did not even have the strength to run away. He squatted down as he massaged his cheeks, appearing as though he was going to die of fear.

They heard that Gu Yu addressed this man as the Demonic God and had already figured out who the owner of this pair of crimson eyes was. Nevertheless, they had watched the video of the fight between Hiderigami and the Demonic God.

However, save for Gu Yu and the dog Sun Qi, the others only understood the power which was presented by the Demonic God's clone.

“Demonic God, is the mission considered accomplished?”

“Yes, it's accomplished. After we kill Hiderigami, I'll teach you the secret to develop the Blood Seed.”

Gu Yu was happy as he heard the Demonic God's answer. He knew that this was his opportunity to grow stronger.

At this moment, a man appeared bashfully beside Gu Yu.

He asked, “Can I have his body after you kill him?”

The crowd remained quiet and curious.

Everyone, including the Demonic God, had their gaze fixed on Hu He.

They were rendered speechless by this man who was obsessed with dead bodies.

“Are you a descendant of the Zombie Forgemasters?” the Demonic God threw a glimpse at Hu He and he immediately unearthed Hu He's background.

Hu He giggled as he scratched his head.

“Sure!”

Hu He was overjoyed upon listening to Demonic God's answer. Yet, Gu Yu was astounded.

He had seen a part of the Demonic God's memory and understood how much hatred the Demonic God held against Hiderigami. He reckoned that the Demonic God would certainly dismember Hiderigami, and did not expect the Demonic God to willingly hand the body of Hiderigami to Hu He.

“Temper it into a zombie spirit and forbid it to rest in peace. That's such a great idea! He can't die so easily. This idea is surprisingly good!”

The Demonic God's reply had answered Gu Yu's doubt. He instinctively turned to look at the gleeful Hu He.

When this boy obtained Hiderigami's body, he might not be able to do anything to the dead body currently. However, if he succeeded in the future, Gu Yu could not imagine how powerful this player would become.

An indestructible body would be turned into a terrifying zombie spirit. Then, he would be basically peerless.

However, as the Demonic God had agreed and Hu He had helped throughout the mission, Gu Yu did not want to go against them.

He said, “Demonic God, do it now!”

The Demonic God, once again, shifted his gaze back to Hiderigami, who seemed extremely agonized and terrified.

The mountain peak briefly quaked before Hiderigami was enveloped and swallowed by a crimson fire.

The fire was extremely domineering. The skin of Hiderigami of the Ghost Emperor Realm immediately split open. Meanwhile, his blood, which was oozing out of his skin, continued to fuel the flare.

“Aaahhhhhh! Demonic God!” the physical pain had awakened Hiderigami's consciousness. He opened his crimson eyes and glared at the Demonic God.

“Enjoy the gift I prepared for you. I’ve been waiting for this day for a very long time. I didn’t expect to be able to hand it to you personally.”

After the Demonic God finished his words, a blood pattern appeared beneath Hiderigami’s body. A cross with many metal chains slowly materialized at the center of the blood pattern.

“Let me feel your fear before you die. Ha!”

The burning metal chains ensnared Hiderigami and tied him to the cross.

The flare continued to rage as the shadow of the Demonic God slowly appeared behind the burning cross...

Chapter 148 - Class Development

Chapter 148: Class Development

The Demonic God had spent millions of years to prepare the fire of revenge. At this instant, the angry fire was finally blazing as it ignited and engulfed Hiderigami's body mercilessly.

The burning flame stuffed the negative emotions into Hiderigami's head, causing him to cry in agony. His soul was broken by the fire before it turned into smoke and left his body. Then, his soul was absorbed by the Demonic God's shadow.

Gu Yu and the rest were shocked by the scene.

However, they were puzzled as the flame did not harm Hiderigami's physical body and they didn't feel any heat from the fire. However, Hiderigami seemed to be getting increasingly weaker within the fire.

"His soul is burning! Is this how gods deal with their enemies?" upon witnessing the scene, Little Sha was terrified.

The fire continued to rage and Hiderigami could feel that he was at death's door.

At that moment, Hiderigami could see his heyday, when he led the zombie troops to the war, in the raging fire.

His lips curved into a smile as he mocked himself.

Despite the fact that the commoners respected him as if he was a fiery God, he failed to become God and had to live humbly like the ants.

Crack!

His soul was completely broken at this moment. The reputable drought demon, who used to loiter around the underworld, had now been utterly defeated.

“I’ll collect your soul and often replay the scene before you die to watch your fearful face. I think I’ll never feel lonely again...”

The shadow of the Demonic God slowly faded off before the burning cross broke and turned into shining stars.

Thud! Hiderigami’s body fell to the ground.

Hiderigami no longer showed any sign of life. Upon seeing that, Hu He went forward to grab one of Hiderigami’s arms before saving it into his personal channel.

“Young boy, you have done a great job! This is what I promised you!”

At this moment, the pillar pagoda began to shake as a force emerged abruptly. Everyone was suffocated by the pressure, as though they were trapped within a cave.

Messages popped up in Gu Yu’s mind.

The artifact turned automatically as it digitized all the messages. Then, the messages appeared in the form of an Analysis Menu in Gu Yu’s brain.

[Bloody Body of the Demonic God (First Stage of Class Development)]:

Class Description: Players will obtain a gift from the Demonic God after accomplishing the mission assigned by him. Then, the first level of class development will be completed.

[Blood Qi]: The skill can release the player’s basic energy. After the player’s energy is exhausted, it will recover by two percent for every minute. Players can consume the Blood Qi to boost the recovery of their energy.

Class Ability: the Demonic God's Blessings, Evil Body, Flame of Blood, Sucking of Blood, Evil Eye Stare, Growth of Blood, and Blood Core.

[Demonic God's Blessings (Special Passive)]: With the blessings of the Demonic God, a god listed on the Underworld God List, players' health will recover by two points for every second.

[Evil Body (intermediate)]: Activate this skill and it will consume 35 percent of the player's Blood Qi. Meanwhile, all the attributes of the player will be increased by 180 percent and the effect will last for 30 minutes. At the same time, the derivative abilities of the player can be released.

[Flame of Blood (First Stage)]: Players will be able to summon the Naraka flames and burn a large area, with the player as the locus. The damage can be done within a radius of 25 meters. This skill can only be used when Evil body is activated, and will consume 30 percent of the player's Blood Qi.

[Sucking of Blood (First Stage)]: Within a radius of 25 to 50 feet, all blood can be absorbed into the player's body after this skill is activated and help to recover the player's Blood Qi points and health points. This skill can only be used when Evil Body is activated, and will consume 10 to 45 percent of the player's Blood Qi.

[Evil Eye Stare]: After the Evil Eye Stare is activated, all the targeted opponents who exchange gazes with the player will be affected by negative emotions. The opponents will usually experience confusion, weakness, and other discomfort. This skill can only be used when Evil Body is activated, and will consume 40 percent of the player's Blood Qi. (The effect may differ depending on the target's willpower.)

[Growth of Blood (Golden Growing Skill)]: Every time the player kills an advanced creature with abundant Blood Qi, the player will be rewarded with two to eight random attribute points of the creature. (The higher the level of the blood core, the higher the limit of the attribute points.)

[Level-one Blood Core (0%)]: The Seed of the Blood Method has unlimited potential. (The player will gain more experience points as the player collects Blood Qi during the Growth of Blood.)

Gu Yu was overjoyed after he read the Attributes Menu and the method to develop his character class, knowing that his efforts were not in vain.

With the class development, not only would his skills improve, but he had also discovered the potential and the future development of his character class.

He was especially thrilled to learn about the Growth of Blood, the Golden Growing Skill. Nevertheless, he felt as if he had hit a jackpot when he found out that he could earn attribute points by killing the creatures of Blood Qi.

“Demonic God, where can I find creatures of Blood Qi?” Gu Yu lifted his gaze excitedly as he asked.

“As long as you can kill an elite of Ghost Commander level and above, you can, more or less, absorb their Blood Qi. However, the best choice is definitely creatures of Blood Qi, like Hiderigami.”

Upon listening to the Demonic God’s explanation, Gu Yu replied with a firm nod.

Facing the invasion of the evil spirits, there were monsters of high levels everywhere and also plenty of Ghost Commander level spirits. Gu Yu was very excited to flaunt his newfound strength.

“Fine, young boy. You’ve helped me as I took revenge. Therefore, you can seek help from me if you face any doubt during your cultivation. For now, get lost!” the crimson eyes began to fade away before they disappeared into the pillar pagoda.

“Boss, did we win or lose?” Sun Qi asked curiously.

“We’ve earned a great profit!” Gu Yu answered with a grin on his face.

Sun Qi put on a grin after he heard that they had earned a profit. Knowing that he had contributed to the quest, he was expecting a handsome reward.

“Shit. Boss, the malignant player has escaped!” the guild members suddenly exclaimed.

Gu Yu turned around and realized that Hu He, who was previously standing there, had vanished from sight.

“Damn!” Gu Yu’s good mood was instantly ruined.

“This player...” Gu Yu could already imagine the headache that would haunt him later.

However, this was not a safe zone and they should not stay here for long. After a brief consideration, Gu Yu waved his hand.

“Let’s leave this mountain and return to the Mansion of the Dead. It’s time to shed some blood for them.”

Upon listening to Gu Yu, Sun Qi heaved a sigh of relief. Initially, he thought that he would be condemned by Gu Yu. However, Gu Yu was apparently in a good mood and Sun Qi was lucky to have escaped punishment. Visit web novel. live If You like manga , comics

Following Gu Yu’s lead, they headed for the Cliffs of Desperation.

After Gu Yu and his team left, the white-haired old man appeared at the mountain peak.

He strode toward the pillar pagoda before he reached out to slap on it.

“Does revenge feel good?”

“It’s not bad!” the crimson eyes of the Demonic God reappeared.

“I can sense that the ruthlessness in you has faded off. I reckon we will be freed soon. That’s worth celebrating,” the white-haired old man stretched his body as he giggled.

“Are you not afraid that I’ll kill you when I get out?”

“If you don’t have ruthlessness in you, then I’ve accomplished the mission she gave me. Following her orders, I’ll have to let you out. However, with our close relationship, are you apathetic enough to kill me?” the white-haired man spoke in a melancholic tone as he patted the pillar pagoda.

“That’s your promise to her and it has nothing to do with me. Since you’re the guard of the seal, you are my enemy, too.”

“If that’s the case, I will not release you.”

“Go away!” the Demonic God’s voice resonated across the atmosphere once again.

The white-haired old man giggled as he disappeared into the distance.

Approximately half an hour later, another silhouette appeared at the mountain peak. The owner of the silhouette was none other than Hu He.

He nervously studied his surroundings. After he was certain that he was alone, he burst out laughing.

“Indeed, I’ve successfully escaped. All of you will idolize me when I finish tempering Hiderigami!”

In the future, he would be able to bring along Hiderigami to fight the Rock Ghost King and defeat the Sea King in the future. Thinking about how the other players would admire him after he won the fight, Hu He was pleased with himself.

After Hu He left the mountain, the crimson eyes of the Demonic God showed up again. He stared at the path Hu He took, appearing astonished.

“How did he make it? Is this the power of reincarnation?”

Hu He was wary throughout the journey as he occasionally checked his surroundings to prevent himself from being ambushed by Gu Yu. He took six long hours before he finally left the mountain.

Hu He wore a broad smile as he stared at the green mountain forest in the distance, feeling as if he had just been reborn.

From now on, the sea is mine to swim and the sky is mine to fly. I will be the hero of the future and my existence will be omnipotent.

“Backstab!” at that moment, a gentle cry came from behind. Hu He was stabbed at his back when his guard was down.

“Pfft!”

The sharp dagger penetrated his back muscle before Hu He turned around, disbelief plastered on his face.

Just as he expected, the attacker was the adorable female assassin.

“It’s you again...”

“Pfft!”

At that instant, Hu He felt a sharp pain in his chest.

“Brother, this is not how you play the game...”

Hu He stared at Murphy, the smiling assassin who was standing before him, he had an urge to cry, thinking about how he fell into the hands of these two again.

“You’re worth a lot of money...” Murphy was smiling ear to ear.

“Weapon strengthened! Backstab strengthened!”

A silver gleam was immediately cast over the dagger in Little Pomelo’s hand before she charged forward with the strengthened stab.

[-198 critical hit]

Wearing an agonized expression, Hu He slowly fell to the ground.

“Life is full of ups and downs and surprises. You’ll have to learn to deal with it,” Little Pomelo took out a notebook, flipped through the pages before she quoted herself in a charismatic tone.

His vision turned black and white. As he expected, the two killers began to take pictures of him after they killed him, and uploaded it to the forum.

After he exited the game, Hu He quickly logged into the forum. Indeed, many players had commented on the thread posted by the assassin couple.

Hu He became more resentful when he saw the picture of his dead and despaired face that was uploaded to the forum by the assassins.

Why didn’t they filter the photo?

Why!?

[Another successful kill. We’re waiting to be rewarded. We are also accepting assassination missions with guaranteed efficiency!]

Crayon_Shinchan: “That’s great! The malignant player has been killed! We can’t let him out of the safe zone ever again! I’ll give you a like! (Tip: 0.1 soul coin)”

Watermelon_Taro replied to Crayon_Shinchan: “You’re so stingy!”

Crayon_Shinchan replied to Watermelon_Taro: “(rage emoji)”

Xueli_The_Strongest: “You’re so skillful! You did both the first kill and the second kill. Are you a killer in real life? (laughing emoji) (Tip: 10 soul coins)”

Invincible_Loneliness (Gu Yu): “You’re destined to die. Hahaha! (Tip: 588 soul coins)”

Watermelon_Taro replied to Invincible_Loneliness: “Big Daddy!”

Instant_Coffee: “Bro, are you taking new jobs? I have an enemy. I’ll pay you 30 soul coins after you kill him! (Tip: 10 soul coins)”

Ganiran: “Please watch him carefully! I’m really afraid now. Two times, I’ve been killed by the evil spirits, which came out of nowhere, when I was hunting in the wild. I have the urge to cry every time I recall the incidents. (Hiding my face) (Tip: 20 soul coins)”

Broke_Trash: “You’re so strong. Brother, since I’ve tipped you, please don’t accept any mission that requires you to kill me. (Tip: 30 soul coins)”

Looking at the amount of soul coins that continued to increase, Little Pomelo laughed gleefully.

“Murphy, we are rich now!”

“Yes. I hope he can continue to be on the run. Then, we will utilize your skills to track his location, and earn more!” Murphy said as he ruffled Little Pomelo’s hair.

They exchanged looks as they giggled.

Chapter 149 - The Construction War

Chapter 149: The Construction War

Beiqi, at the periphery of the Ghost Mountains.

There were innumerable evil spirits loitering around the massive Zombie Energy Pillars. Within them, an evil spirit, with its head lifted, was breathing the zombie energy as it continued to absorb the energy into its body.

At that moment, the earth began to quake. The spirits turned to look at the source of the quake.

A crowd of players came into sight.

The players followed Wu Guoyi's order and stopped in their tracks when they saw the Zombie Energy Pillar.

The players in the livestream channel had reached a staggering number of 2.3 million. The main objective of the expedition was to destroy the nearest Zombie Energy Pillar to the Mansion of the Dead.

Recently, the players had been mercilessly abused by the evil spirits. Therefore, they were all rather grudgeful. When Wu Guoyi and his team were trying to recruit people for the expedition, the players were eager to join, wanting to show the Beiqi Army's strength.

“Brothers, we will launch the attack following our plan. The warriors will raid them directly, while the assassins can linger around and kill the remaining spirits. The mages can stay at the back and showcase their skills. The other unique character classes can help according to their respective skills and categories.”

Seeing the innumerable amount of evil spirits that began to charge toward them, Wu Guoyi lifted the greatsword in his hand.

“Fall in!” they were about to show evil who would bring the world the real calamity.

“Roar!” the players howled in synchrony.

Then, the mages took a step forward before they began to simultaneously summon the Yin soldiers. Right at that moment, uncountable Yin soldiers were brought to the surface before they climbed out of the ground and formed a blockade of a skeletal army before the troop of players.

“Attack!”

Under Wu Guoyi’s command and the mages’ manipulation, the Yin soldiers charged toward the evil spirits.

The warriors quickly followed behind the skeletal Yin soldiers and lunged forward.

The Evil Apocalypse and the Fourth Disaster had their first large-scale conflict.

A war had erupted. Not long after the confrontation commenced, the skeletal army, which was acting as a blockade, was immediately defeated and fell to the ground. Following that, the warriors, who were all ready to fight, performed a Groundbreaking Slash upon receiving Wu Guoyi’s command.

The red energy arrived in the form of a massive wave before it swamped the evil spirits at the front line and sent them flying.

However, the players were not done yet. At that moment, many water balls took form in the sky before they gathered above the evil spirits, fell onto them and bashed them mercilessly.

Knowing that they had the upper hand, the players were excited.

The amateurs, who had never joined a large-scale battle before, were especially elated. They had previously watched videos of the Beiqi Army's expeditions, but this was their first time participating in one.

“Roar!”

At that moment, the evil, which was hidden in the Zombie Energy Pillar, let out an angry howl, causing the Zombie Energy Pillar to shudder. Unnumbered evil spirits appeared above the players before they rained down behind them.

Upon witnessing this scene, panic was immediately plastered on Wu Guoyi's face before he shouted into the live chat channel.

“Assassins, please return to take care of the evil spirits. Meanwhile, mages, please stay vigilant.”

The mages were busy dodging the raining evil spirits. In the meantime, some Five Elements Warlocks, knowing that they could never run away, quickly activated the gold state. Meanwhile, the assassins promptly acted upon Wu Guoyi's command and rushed to the back of the array.

Under Wu Guoyi's lead, the troop of players continued to amend their military tactic. They wiped out the evil spirits at the back of the array before they returned to being aggressive and focused on attacking their enemies.

At that moment, a gigantic silhouette escaped the Zombie Energy Pillar and soared into the sky before it rushed toward the troop of players.

“Everyone, stay vigilant! The Ghost General is here! Brace yourselves!”

Boom!

Immediately after the Evil Ghost General appeared, the array, which was formed by the warriors, was disrupted. Many of the players were killed.

Yet, the players did not fret. Once again, they gathered together and charged toward their enemy.

The players had even defeated Cha Na who was an elite Ghost General. Therefore, they were not afraid of the evil spirit, who was merely a beginner among the Ghost Generals.

All of a sudden, they began to attack the Evil Ghost General heedlessly, assaulting him with overwhelming energy and turning it into a light man.

The Evil Ghost General could not endure such a fierce attack for more than five minutes before it nervously escaped the crowd and returned to the Zombie Energy Pillar.

The players were extremely satisfied by the outcome of their raid.

Their joy lasted for merely a few seconds before the Evil Ghost General, once again, escaped from the Zombie Energy Pillar and soared into the sky before it lunged toward the players.

The players were astonished to discover that the wounds on the Evil Ghost General had completely healed.

“Fuck. That’s cheating! How can it heal just by inhaling two breaths of Zombie Energy?”

“I’m going to report this! This is unfathomable!”

“I think we should destroy the Zombie Energy Pillar first. Otherwise, we would never be able to kill all the monsters. If we aren’t quick enough to kill them, they will just revive again.”

When the players were discussing their strategy, they attacked the Evil Ghost General with their respective skills.

Similarly, the Evil Ghost General did not last for more than a few minutes before he hastily returned to Zombie Energy Pillar to recuperate again. The players were significantly troubled. They reckoned the Evil Ghost General was cheating.

They forced the Evil Ghost General back to the Zombie Energy Pillar again. However, unlike the previous times, the Evil Ghost General did not rush

back into action. Instead, it stayed within the Zombie Energy Pillar as it howled to the sky.

The players seized the opportunity to get closer to the Zombie Energy Pillar.

They had finally learned the fact that, only by destroying the Zombie Energy Pillar, they could remove the Evil Ghost General's source of healing. Then, they could regain the upper hand in the battle again.

At that moment, two black meteors struck across the sky and landed beside the Zombie Energy Pillar. Then, two puffs of black smoke signals rose into the sky, forming two huge new Zombie Energy Pillars.

The players were astounded as they saw innumerable evil spirits fall from the top of the Zombie Energy Pillars. Then, two Evil Ghost Generals materialized from their respective Zombie Energy Pillars.

“Fuck!”

Upon witnessing the scene, Wu Guoyi cursed instinctively.

According to their stratagems, they were supposed to attack their enemy in sequence. However, the players were caught off guard by the evil spirits' unusual retaliation that went beyond their expectations.

Three novices of Evil Ghost Generals were as powerful as an entire Evil Troop. This put Wu Guoyi in a critical situation.

After he reconsidered the situation, Wu Guoyi thought it was necessary to amend their strategy. Otherwise, the players would soon be worn out, having to fight against Evil Ghost Generals, who had a stronger healing power.

“Everyone, we'll execute Plan B! The construction war!”

Upon receiving Wu Guoyi's command, the warriors moved forward, while the mages and assassins stopped in their tracks. They took out the

mahogany hut from their personal channel and tossed it to the ground. Immediately, many mahogany huts materialized behind them.

“Summon the Door God!”

Many shadows appeared in the sky above the mahogany huts as the players slowly retreated.

“Warriors, stay behind the hut and summon your mahogany huts as well.”

The warriors followed Wu Guoyi’s order and promptly retired.

The formation was instantly ruined before the evil spirits howled as they pounced toward the troop.

Yet, the Door God struck an attack by throwing one after another ball of energy toward the evil spirits, who were approaching the players, and sent them flying.

The warriors, who were retiring, quickly summoned their mahogany huts to expand their defensive formation.

This was the players’ last resort to fight evil — the construction war!

This was suggested by a professional player when they were discussing how to confront the evil spirits.

The Door God summoned by the mahogany huts had the strength to suppress the evils. Meanwhile, the mahogany huts were unyielding and were able to endure the attack of the evil spirits. Stationing Door Gods at the frontline as their first defense, with the players releasing their strengths at the back, they would certainly become an impregnable and sturdy opponent.

At that moment, that one professional player’s idea was proven useful in actual combat.

Many Door Gods formed a blockade and stopped the flock of evil spirits at the periphery. There was no way the spirits could break the barrier formed

by the Door Gods.

Chapter 150 - Monster-Killing Bot

Chapter 150: Monster-Killing Bot

The blockade formed by the Door Gods was unyielding. Seeing that the evil spirits were forced to retreat, the players cheered gleefully.

“Brothers, those who have enough soul coins to spare, please level up your Door God. We are depending on our Door Gods to win the war!”

After Wu Guoyi spoke, flashes of white light were continuously lit from the array. Many Door Gods were leveled up and their virtual physiques began to expand and solidify.

“Spend all your soul coins to level up your Door God. Stop hesitating! This is the time!”

“Our almighty Door God!”

“It’s time to showcase the power of the Beiqi Army. Level up! Level up!”

“Spend all the cash to enhance our strength!”

“Cash grants me power!”

“Can anyone lend me some soul coins? I need 10 more soul coins to level up. Someone, please help me!””read comics on our webnovel.live”

Many of the players opted to level up their Door Gods and white light continued to flash around them.

The leveled-up Door Gods had become more powerful. Some players had unexpectedly cultivated some special abilities within the Door Gods. Door Gods, who were now stronger than ever, mercilessly eliminated the evil spirits that were charging toward the players.

“Follow our strategy. The players at the back, keep your huts and gradually move them forward, one step at a time!”

Upon receiving Wu Guoyi’s command, the players at the back promptly stowed their mahogany huts before they rushed to the frontline and resummoned the huts.

With the power of their Door Gods, the players had, once again, launched an aggressive attack. Meanwhile, the evil spirits were incapable of breaking the Door Gods’ defenses and could only retreat.

As the Door Gods were battling evil, the mages created a new safe zone. Before long, many Magic Towers were built. The war had been upscaled.

Upon seeing that, the Evil Ghost Generals could no longer take it lying down. They escaped the Zombie Energy Pillars again and rushed toward the blockade formed by the Door Gods.

Before the evil spirits could land, the Door Gods had fastened them in the middle of the air, before they launched energy missiles and forced them to retire.

“Go back and heal yourself!” the players burst out laughing, looking at the frustrated spirits who were trying to run away.

At that moment, the players were rather satisfied with the outcome of their attack. They felt comfortable to launch their attack as they stayed under the Door Gods’ protection. Not only that, they could also earn soul coins and gain experience as the Door Gods killed the evil spirits on their behalf. It was as though they had activated a bot to earn more soul coins.

Every time they eliminated a group of evil spirits, the players would move their construction forward as they slowly approached the Zombie Energy Pillars.

At that moment, the players saw a gleam of hope, thinking that they might be able to win the war.

The war between the two disasters continued to expand. One party focused on healing and creating new forces, while the other party was in defensive mode as they attacked steadily with the help of the Door Gods.

The players seemed to have the upper hand in the battle.

Lu Wu, who had been watching all the while, was impressed by the players' resourcefulness.

Lu Wu's perspective was broadened as he saw how the players attacked by pushing their construction toward their enemies. This further assured him that the players had infinite potential when they were given complete freedom to perform.

Facing the players who practiced constant withdrawal as their defensive tactic, the evil spirits howled furiously before they launched multiple attacks at the players. Yet, they failed to destroy the fence that was built by the Door Gods.

Under such circumstances, the three Evil Ghost Generals abruptly stopped in their tracks before they returned to the Zombie Energy Pillars and let out an angry roar.

“Attention, brothers! They're calling for support!” Wu Guoyi quickly warned the players upon seeing what happened.

Just like what they expected, before long, a large number of black shooting stars struck across the sky and fell on the periphery of the players' array. Immediately, the Zombie Energy rose into the sky.

This time, there were a total of twelve Zombie Energy Pillars. The scene had immensely stunned the players.

Aren't we going to handle them one at a time? What are we supposed to do now?

Initially, the players thought that they were being ruthless toward the evil spirits as they were respawning with the help of tools.

However, the Evil Troop repeatedly called for support and created multiple Pools of Revival and Evil Factories, making the players think that the evil spirits were, in fact, more shameless than them.

With the sudden increase in the number of spirits, Wu Guoyi, as the leader, immediately rushed from the back to the center of the array before he yelled his command, “Form an all-around defense. We’ve been encircled!”

Upon listening to Wu Guoyi’s words, the players quickly reduced the size of their line of defense. Leaving the mahogany huts outside the perimeter, they formed an all-around garrison to defend against the evils with a sudden explosion of numbers.

The sudden increase in size of the Evil Troop had once again put the players at a losing position. The players were now struggling to defend themselves.

Occasionally, the players’ mahogany huts were ruined. They had no choice but to splurge their soul coins to repair the huts before putting them to use again.

From having the ascendancy to being slightly disadvantaged, the players did not despair. They considered this as a chance to earn money. They continued to assault the enemies outside the periphery with their respective skills, killing the monsters, and earning soul coins.

Under the current circumstances, the common evil spirits were incapable of breaking the line of defense. However, the twelve Evil Ghost Generals were working together to fight the players. The players, who had gotten ready for the fight, gathered their strengths to drive off the twelve Evil Ghost Generals. They had truly become undefeatable.

(Note: The strength of an Evil Ghost General was equivalent to that of a novice Ghost General. They were far weaker than Cha Na, who was about to surpass the Ghost King Realm.)

Soul coins became a very important factor in the war. The soul coins the players earned from killing the evil spirits were spent on leveling up their

Door Gods or repairing their mahogany huts. The fight had reached a stalemate.

An hour later.

“My experience has increased by two levels. That’s so great! I’ve just been staying at the same spot as I killed the monsters!”

“The experience of my Door God has increased by two levels. That’s so exciting! I hope that these Zombie Energy Pillars can continue to birth more evil. If this persists, we might be able to reach Level 100 collectively.”

“I somehow feel at ease. Little evil spirits, please stay strong and continue to throw yourselves at us.”

“Spirits, keep it up!”

“Brothers, focus on leveling up your Door Gods. The more powerful your Door God is, the more efficient it is to kill the monsters, and the more experience gained and soul coins earned.”

“You’re right. Let’s level-up our Door Gods first. Activate the bot!”

“I’m somehow envious of the mages. They are able to attack physically alongside the Door Gods and gain experience. We, the warriors, can only attack from afar. There’s no way we can leave this perimeter.”

“I told you that the game is biased toward the mages. They are the strongest character class!”

“Have you not realized that, other than the few professional players, the rest of the players on the leaderboard are all mages? It’s true when they say that the mages are the most powerful ones.”

“They are only good at killing monsters. The warriors are still the best at one-on-one battle. I think that needs no further elaboration!”

“You’re wrong. That’s only because you haven’t met a Cursed Apostle who has comprehended the Prajñā Scarification. They are, as of now, the most

unfathomable beings.”

As the players attacked the Evil Ghost Generals, who were charging toward them, they were chattering within the line of defense, and eventually started to compare the different character classes.

Lu Wu was flustered and, at the same time, entertained by the scene.

The only thing that mattered to him was the amount of soul coins in his artifact that continued to grow.

He was trying to feed one war with another. Lu Wu earned commissions when the players killed the evil spirits, leveled up their Door Gods and repaired their mahogany huts. Lu Wu was pleased with the outcome and was finally hopeful about reviving His Excellency Cangxu.

Seeing how his profit grew, Lu Wu was also glad to witness the relentless birth of the evil spirits, which benefited both the players and him.

Chapter 151 - The Rock Ghost King Had Come To Help (Part 3)

Chapter 151: The Rock Ghost King Had Come To Help (Part 3)

As the battle gradually progressed into its third hour, the situation at hand was still jammed in a deadlock.

Not only were the evil spirits unable to break through, but the players couldn't advance. They were simply driving each other to exhaustion.

In addition, the Zombie Energy Pillars did not disappoint as they continued to create an endless flow of new spirits to join the battle, showering the players with the satisfaction of continually leveling up.

Just as the players thought that the situation would last until they went offline, trees suddenly collapsed, one after another, on the west side of the Ghost Mountains. The silhouettes of numerous gigantic figures entered their field of vision.

Multitudes upon multitudes of shadows of the Tree Demons, Ancient Tree Demons, and Enchanted Trees appeared with no end in sight.

At the same time, a monstrous figure plunged from the sky. The moment it landed on the ground, a majority of the evil spirits were pinned underneath its hefty body.

“Damn it, the Rock Army is here!”

“What are they doing here? Are they friends or foes?”

“Hopefully not the enemy! We might be able to defend against the evil spirits themselves, but I doubt we can defeat the Rock Ghost King!”

“Hold your horses! Don't act rashly!”

.....

While the players were anxiously discussing it among themselves, the Tree Demon Army abruptly charged from the west, speedily rushing toward the Evil Army. Then they launched an attack on the Zombie Energy Pillars next to them.

“Roar!”

Accompanied by a ferocious growl of the Rock Ghost King, the area of wood elements drastically expanded. The spirits within the area were swiftly hurled into the air by countless branches and instantly strangled by a powerful force.

The emergence of the Rock Ghost King alarmed the nearest Evil Ghost General. It instantly leaped out from within one of the Zombie Energy Pillars and pounced toward the Rock Ghost King.

However, this time, it no longer had the opportunity to restore its health while facing the Rock Ghost King, who was already at the mid-stage of the Ghost King Realm.

In a flash, thousands of green vines popped up from the ground and wound themselves tightly around the Evil Ghost General, hoisting him into the air.

Along with the fierce roar from the Rock Ghost King, the vines steadily tightened their grip as a glistening, dark, viridescent light glowed from its surface. Soon, it seemed that the Evil Ghost General would not be able to endure it any longer. In the next moment, the vines shredded him into smithereens in the air, which were then scattered onto the ground.

With that, the Rock Ghost King had unveiled his terrifying dominance as the fittest in the Ghost King’s Territory. Even the evil spirits of the Ghost General class posed no threat to him.

Below, the battlefield formed by the Ancient Tree Demons was pushing forward relentlessly like a bulldozer. That made it extremely taxing for the

evil spirits to defend, and it was evident that they were very overpowered by the vast gap in strength.

After being attacked by the Tree Demon Army, the evils were entirely annihilated. Coupled with the fact that they were subjected to attacks from the Door Gods on the other side, the evil spirits' rate of spawning by the twelve Zombie Energy Pillars were unable to meet their rate of mortality, as they were murdered too quickly.

Witnessing the scene, the players were utterly stunned.

They did not expect that the Rock Ghost King would lend them a helping hand. Thus, they were extremely flustered and befuddled, wondering what was actually happening around them.

After the spirits had been completely annihilated, the Rock Ghost King glanced at the players' camp and then locked his gaze on Wu Guoyi.

“Since I’ve come to help, why isn’t anyone attacking together with me!?”

When they heard this, Wu Guoyi and the other players felt a headache creeping up to them.

Actually, they had not killed enough monsters yet.

Although the Rock Ghost King was being generous, they were quite reluctant to join him. After all, this was a once in a blue moon opportunity for them to farm these monsters.

However, since the balance had already been disrupted, they most probably would not be able to keep it up. Thus, Wu Guoyi immediately announced on the live chat channel...

“All warriors, rise! Prepare to break through and kill!”

Followed by the command to attack from Wu Guoyi, the warriors and assassins began to pierce through the defensive line of the Door Gods by killing the evil spirits.

Meanwhile, the mages stayed within the defense, using long-range spells to assist the front line in their attack.

Faced with attacks from the players and the Tree Demons, the initial advantage that the Evil Army had largely evaporated. Even if the twelve Zombie Energy Pillars ceaselessly produced more evil spirits, it was impossible to withstand the overwhelming assault from the two large armies that had united.

When he saw that the players joined him in the war, a hint of relief flashed through the Rock Ghost King's eyes.

After all, he had contemplated carefully for some time before arriving at the decision to personally lead the army this time.

Due to the existence of Zombie Energy Pillars in the Ghosts Mountain, his North Rocks were often invaded by the evil spirits, which made him feel extremely distressed.

From his experience of a similar invasion 400 centuries ago, he discovered that once any of the Zombie Energy Pillars were attacked, the other Zombie Energy Pillars would be able to sense it and would come forth to provide support.

If he really launched an attack on the Zombie Energy Pillars in the Ghosts Mountains, there would most likely be a heavy price to pay regardless of the outcome.

This was absolutely unacceptable for him. If the Tree Demon Army suffered substantial damages, he could imagine that the new forces in the Mansion of the Dead, who had always kept a watchful eye on the North Rocks, would surely jump at the opportunity to attack them.

However, he did not expect the new forces from the Mansion of the Dead to take the initiative in raiding the Zombie Energy Pillars.

This greatly lifted the Rock Ghost King's attitude. He immediately brought along his army and laid out of sight, far away. Meanwhile, he had been

paying close attention to the battle, so that he could leap at any opportunity to gain the upper hand while both parties were at each other's throats.

However, the battle situation was beyond the Rock Ghost King's imagination. Initially, he had thought that the battle would bring significant losses to the new forces since the evil spirits kept emerging endlessly. Unless there was an attack that could completely demolish the Zombie Energy Pillars, dragging out the battle would merely be digging their own graves.

However, after intently watching the battle between the players and evil spirits for four whole hours, the Rock Ghost King suddenly realized that both forces were on equal terms and even the most powerful monsters were being resisted by the players.

Based on the situation, this would unquestionably press on into a never-ending battle.

The Rock Ghost King was dumbfounded, but a new thought suddenly surfaced in his mind. He concocted a plan to ally with this new force and take the initiative to eliminate the evil spirits together.

After all, these new forces consisted of intellectually-developed living beings that could be reasoned with, unlike the spirits who would only battle to fulfill their bloodthirsty instinct. There was still room for negotiation.

Besides, there was another crucial reason. If these players were ultimately wiped out by the evil spirits, then the North Rocks, which was the nearest region to the Ghost Mountains, would risk invasion by the evil spirits born from the twelve Zombie Energy Pillars.

This was equivalent to commencing a full-scale war against the evil spirits. By that time, even if he emerged victorious, he would possibly lose half of his Tree Demon Army.

After careful consideration, the Rock Ghost King finally decided to lead the army to strike and assist the players in uprooting those Zombie Energy Pillars and to put an end to this apocalypse of evil's invasion.

However, he did not realize that the players were entirely unappreciative. They had even begun to exchange quiet murmurs in the live chat channel.

“Don’t think that just because you’ve offered help, I won’t be cutting down trees anymore. That’s impossible.”

“That’s right, it is not easy to discover such an ideal place to farm monsters. Now that it’s been ruined, somehow I feel it’s a pity.”

“Thanks for the help, but the trees must be cut. After all, we still haven’t gotten enough money to upgrade our boat.”

“That’s a different matter. We aren’t unreasonable people, so we’ll have to reduce the number of trees cut by one a day, to maintain the Rock Ghost King’s pride.”

“That’s right, in order to repay the Rock Ghost King for his support, we will cut one less tree a day!”

“You guys are so shameless, but I agree with it!”

.....

Witnessing the players’ discussions in the live chat channel, Lu Wu felt profoundly ashamed. He felt that if the Rock Ghost King was aware of the players’ thoughts, he would probably aid the Evil Army instead and just exterminate these players.

Chapter 152 - Restriction On Cutting Down Trees Was Impossible (Part 4)

Chapter 152: Restriction On Cutting Down Trees Was Impossible (Part 4)

After the Rock Ghost King led his army to join the battle, the situation devolved into a one-sided attack.

Meanwhile, the players were heading toward the mahogany hut. The battle had persisted for six hours and apart from the Evil Ghost Generals holed up in the Zombie Energy Pillars, the surrounding evil spirits had all been wiped out.

However, there was still no end in sight. Now, the Rock Ghost King was using his gigantic body to strike one of the twelve Zombie Energy Pillars ruthlessly.

However, the Zombie Energy Pillar was exceedingly solid and sturdy. Even with the tremendous strength of the Rock Ghost King's attacks, it simply refused to collapse.

Meanwhile, the players and Tree Demon Army had surrounded the twelve Zombie Energy Pillars and helped exterminate the newly birthed evils.

No doubt, that matter greatly worried the Rock Ghost King as well. While he was focussing on demolishing the Zombie Energy Pillars, the numbers in his camp would undoubtedly suffer substantial losses while battling against the evil spirits.

Fortunately, there were players there to share the burden of killing the spirits from eight of the Zombie Energy Pillars. The Rock Ghost King's Tree Demon Army simply needed to tackle the evil spirits from the

remaining four pillars. Since the pressure had vastly diminished, that enabled the Rock Ghost King to concentrate solely on destroying the Zombie Energy Pillars.

Under the repeated impact from the Rock Ghost King, a crack finally appeared on the Zombie Energy Pillar.

“Destroy!”

The Rock Ghost King’s hundred-meter tall body rose straight from the ground and landed fiercely on the crumbling Zombie Energy Pillar that was filled with cracks.

“Boom!”

The towering Zombie Energy Pillar finally toppled, releasing a wave of rich zombie energy.

Then, a black orb emerged from the thick mist and soared into the sky.

However, the Rock Ghost King did nothing to obstruct it. He turned toward a second Zombie Energy Pillar and instantly barreled into it.

Needless to say, the players were baffled. They could not comprehend why the Rock Ghost King would let the orb, which could produce zombie energy, free. However, they did not have any players of a flying character class. Thus, there was naturally nothing they could do to stop it.

They could only watch helplessly as the orb, a potential treasure, drifted off.

While the Rock Ghost King was destroying the second Zombie Energy Pillar, the players seemed quite relaxed. Countless mahogany huts dotted the land around the Zombie Energy Pillars that they were guarding. Once new evil spirits were spawned, they did not even have to act before the Door Gods would proactively annihilate them. In the meantime, all they had to do was use their skills at the Zombie Energy Pillars.

However, the Zombie Energy Pillars were ridiculously stubborn. Not only did the attacks from the players inflict zero damage to them, but the Evil

Ghost Generals would also occasionally leap out and attack.

Despite that, they could still easily beat them every time.

The satisfaction from grinding monsters made the players quite reluctant to destroy the Zombie Energy Pillars.

However, it merely remained as a thought, since the existence of evil spirits had thoroughly disrupted the balance in Beiqi. Even if all of these Zombie Energy Pillars were destroyed, evil spirits would still prowl on every inch of the Land of Beiqi at this stage. It would unmistakably be time-consuming to ensure all the spirits were completely eliminated.

“Boom!”

At this moment, a crack surfaced across the second Zombie Energy Pillar. A surge of zombie energy burst from the cracks while a black orb whizzed toward the sky again.

The third pillar...

The fourth pillar...

Just as the Rock Ghost King was about to take down the last Zombie Energy Pillar, Wu Guoyi spoke all of a sudden.

“Rock Ghost King, why don’t we just keep this pillar!”

The Rock Ghost King paused in his tracks and turned his head around to stare at him.

“Why?”

“Its existence can help to reduce...”

Initially, Wu Guoyi had wished to say that the Zombie Energy Pillar might help reduce the frequency of trees in the North Rocks being felled by players. However, before half of the sentence tumbled off his tongue, he realized that it would sound too blunt, so he coughed as a disguise.

“Its existence can help to cut back on our energy consumption?”

“What do you mean?” the Rock Ghost King seemed rather perplexed.

This gave Wu Guoyi a sharp headache as he did not know how to respond. He was afraid that if he said it too directly, he would upset the Rock Ghost King and cause him to murder them all on the spot.

“Sure!” replied the Rock Ghost King out of nowhere.

Wu Guoyi was dumbfounded, as he could not comprehend why the Rock Ghost King would suddenly be so easy-going.

“Still, you guys must promise me that you will never invade the North Rocks. In return, I will approve of your position as Beiqi’s new force.”

“No way, we would rather starve than not cutting down trees!”

“That’s right, that’s right. Logging is the shortcut to immense wealth. Don’t you know that it’s as cruel as killing one’s parents to stop someone from obtaining wealth?”

“Rock Ghost King, this is your fault. Cutting trees and keeping the Zombie Energy Pillar are two entirely different matters. We need trees to upgrade our boats!”

“If worse comes to worst, we could reduce the number of trees felled by one. It’s impossible to stop logging once and for all, as that’s the only way to upgrade our boats.”

.....

This surprising turn of events thrust the players into fervent discussions. Meanwhile, the branches around the Rock Ghost King came to life menacingly, while a vicious glimmering light flashed in his eyes.

Seeing this, Wu Guoyi announced on the live chat channel, “Stop it, the Rock Ghost King is practically fuming. If you guys want to cut down trees, there’s not a need to speak about it so openly, just keep it to yourself. In the

future, you can just sneak in surreptitiously. For now, we must promise him first!”

Instantly, the chat was plunged into total silence.

Then, Wu Guoyi looked at the Rock Ghost King with a solemn face and said, “Alright, I promise you!”

The dancing branches gradually slowed and retracted as the anger in the Rock Ghost King’s eyes seemed to subside. He then stared at Wu Guoyi and said, “I hope that you can keep your promise!”

Wu Guoyi nodded awkwardly.

In actuality, he was merely a temporary commander for the current battle event. Once it ended, he would no longer possess the ability to constrain these players. As such, his promise was not a representation of the agreement with all of the players.

Besides, cutting down trees was the only method for ordinary players to upgrade their boats at this stage. So, it was simply unrealistic to restrict their logging activities.

Moreover, by keeping this Zombie Energy Pillar, it could at least lessen the frequency of players teaming up to cut down trees in the North Rocks. Thus, it would still be considered beneficial for the North Rocks.

After another glance at Wu Guoyi the Rock Ghost King’s massive body rose into the air, as he headed toward the North Rocks. Meanwhile, the Tree Demon Army from below steadily retreated.

When the players saw the situation, they also stowed away their mahogany huts and disbanded. They wanted to stop attacking the last Zombie Energy Pillar for a while.

In fact, the sole purpose behind preserving this Zombie Energy Pillar was not because they would not destroy it anymore. After all, the main quest of

the ongoing game content was to destroy all Zombie Energy Pillars to advance.

The most important reason they wanted to keep this Zombie Energy Pillar standing was for its continuous supply of evil spirits, so that players could still kill the monsters and easily level up.

Although there were a few million players now, a majority of them were new players. This meant that their overall strength could not be elevated by much. Furthermore, there were only a handful of areas in inner Beiqi where players could grind evil spirits.

In areas like the North Rocks, which was under the command of a Ghost King, players could only enter sneakily as they would not be able to retaliate.

Hence, by conserving this Zombie Energy Pillar, players could develop and grow by relying on the strength of the evil spirits. This was important and absolutely necessary from Wu Guoyi's point of view.

Of course, this was not his decision alone to make, but rather a decision that was made after discussing with the presidents of several influential guilds.

After all, only when the players' overall strength had increased, their hunting range would expand accordingly.

.....

In Evil Nightmare City, Little Sha reached out and seized the 11th orb that had fallen from the sky. He shoved it into the Yin Soul Eye Seal and resumed waiting, as he sat in the coffin with his hands tucked under his cheeks.

Then, he waited for a very long time...

Little Sha gazed up at the sky blankly.

“Did it lose its way?”

Chapter 153 - Incompatible (Part 5)

Chapter 153: Incompatible (Part 5)

After the battle between the players and the evil spirits, a new idea materialized in Lu Wu's mind. It was to subdue the Rock Ghost King for their own use.

After all, what Lu Wu lacked most now was a real dominant power.

Although the Beiqi Army was already considerably powerful, it was still quite weak when facing high-level enemies.

Just like in this current battle, when confronted with an Evil Ghost General, if a player did not possess enough strength to slay it immediately, then the evil would not be eliminated.

Similarly, when a player encountered other powerful creatures, they could be easily defeated. However, it was not a child's play if you wished to keep or kill it.

Currently, there was no one of Ghost Commander Level or above worth showing off on Lu Wu's side, apart from Tong Gua, whose power was remarkably unstable. This was an absolute disadvantage for a player's power.

Therefore, Lu Wu started to ponder if he could tame the Rock Ghost King as part of the power of Beiqi for his own use, then digitize them. If that was successful, he would be able to make up for the players' weakness, allowing the overall strength of the Beiqi Army to rise to another level.

Of course, this was merely one of Lu Wu's many plans for future development. After all, there was still no corresponding power and strength to implement it.

.....

The day after the evil invasion crisis ended...

The three-month exclusive authorization signed by Lu Wu and Wu Guoyi had finally reached its expiration date.

These few days, Lu Wu would receive plenty of calls from other gaming platforms each day, in hopes of negotiating for cooperation.

This gave Lu Wu an intense headache, but he naturally would not refuse. After all, this was helpful in promoting the game.

Needless to say, Lu Wu would not give any of these platforms conditions for cooperation that were as great as those he offered Wu Guoyi. In addition to not providing advertising fees, he also stipulated that these few platforms must allow the game Battle Online to appear once a month on the promotional page of their homepage.

In comparison to the terms and conditions that other games put forth for paid advertisements on said platforms, Lu Wu's demand was undoubtedly harsher.

This time, however, none of the platforms rejected Lu Wu's suggestion.

This was because anyone who had gaming knowledge and had experienced the game itself knew how impactful the game would be in the future.

Besides, Lu Wu rejected all suggestions for a face-to-face discussion by the gaming platforms. He ordered for the contracts to be mailed to him, as he refused to discuss them in person.

He did not have that much time to meet them one by one.

After spending a tedious couple of days to read through and sign the several heaps of contracts, Lu Wu could finally let out a sigh of relief.

However, that was not the end of Lu Wu's duties. Once he managed to settle the cooperation matters with local gaming platforms, another swarm

of foreign game developers constantly called him, hoping to obtain authorization as international agents as soon as possible.

Yet, Lu Wu turned them all down after detailed discussions.

The reason was pretty simple. The way that they planned to promote Battle Online was different from what Lu Wu had in mind.

The terms that they proposed were basically a one-time buyout of foreign operating rights of the game, on top of a request to activate the soul coin top-up function in the foreign version for profit.

Though they offered high prices, even he himself was short on soul coins. So how could he possibly let them put it on sale? Hence, he declined without a second thought.

However, now the problem was that if the soul coin top-up function was not activated, foreign agents would not be able to use the game Battle Online to earn money. That way, no profit could be generated for them. Not to mention the costly agent fees that they were required to pay, which made this, all in all, a loss-making trade.

Hence, they came up with the buyout system. If they run the game on a buyout system, as long as the game content was attractive enough, it would still be profitable for them.

However, Lu Wu still refused in the end, as a one-off buyout would surely drive out a portion of players. Besides, it was also not agreeable to him.

Lu Wu's firm attitude dismissed a fraction of the agents. But soon, new foreign gaming agents approached him. They made it clear that they could give up the game top-up and buyout system, but asked to slot advertisements into the game in exchange. This was their strategy to make a profit.

Lu Wu still declined the offer.

After all, the gaming agents merely desired profit, while Lu Wu actually cared about how the players' strength could be raised. If advertisements were planted into the game, it would unmistakably tarnish the game experience. So, Lu Wu refused again.

After rejecting all the calls from foreign gaming agents, Lu Wu was faced with a challenging issue. How could he promote the game overseas?

As if he could read Lu Wu's mind and sense his troubles, Wu Guoyi called him that day. He told Lu Wu that he had a plan to expand the gaming platform's market, Platform173, as well as taking in a handful of agents for Battle Online.

Wu Guoyi's idea was simple.

He was optimistic about Battle Online and felt that the game could gain immense fame overseas. It was as simple as that.

As for profits, he had never once thought to count on Battle Online. What he truly wanted was for this game to boost the impact of their platform abroad, thereby driving income from the other sources.

After Lu Wu seriously considered his proposal, he decided to formally cooperate with Wu Guoyi. This was because Wu Guoyi proved that he would not interfere with any progress in the game and at the same time, as an old player, he clearly knew that Lu Wu would never agree with the top-up path.

Although he had always been unclear about Lu Wu's thought processes...

...

After finalizing the matter concerning foreign agencies, Lu Wu received another call from the Black Sea Corporation, informing him that the gaming pods would be officially launched in five days.

Meanwhile, the Jie De Corporation's gaming pods were already officially on sale.

On the day of the release, the Jie De Corporation announced to the public that the game was collaborating with all well-known local game developers. As a result, they could now cancel an array of default limitations set in the game, such as safety timing.

At the same time, they also showcased a series of functions in the gaming pod to the media.

One such feature involved the gaming pods using nutrient solutions to supplement the basic bodily needs of the players after prolonged gaming periods. Another feature demonstrated muscle exercises in order to prevent muscle atrophy. The list was exhaustive.

The emergence of gaming pods instantly exhilarated a majority of domestic players, especially those who had long been dissatisfied with the set safety timing limit of twelve hours on Battle Online. After engaging in the forum discussions, they began to purchase the Jie De Corporation's gaming pods.

On the first day of release, they had received a whopping four million orders for the gaming pods. Thus, they hastily shipped out the stock they had prepared beforehand in large batches. The higher-ups in the Jie De Corporation realized that staying one step ahead indeed gave them a huge advantage. On the other hand, the Black Sea Corporation could only watch helplessly as their market share elapsed, for they lagged behind.

However, the Jie De Corporation did not expect a significant horde of players to post negative feedback about how disappointing the gaming pods were on their official website. They complained that it was incompatible with game operations.

Confronted by this situation, the Jie De Corporation immediately launched an investigation to track down and interrogate players who gave poor ratings.

The Jie De Corporation's leaders fell silent after consolidating the results of player feedback.

The reasons behind the low ratings from players requesting refunds were roughly uniform, “Unable to run Battle Online, it’s bad!”

They never anticipated that the gaming pods’ inability to run Battle Online would cause such a huge effect.

Following the incident, they commenced a meeting without delay. At last, they hurriedly ordered the technical department to demolish the shield in Battle Online.

However, just as they thought the problem was finally resolved, the players’ feedback started to become even more intense. Now, the number of people demanding a refund had gradually surged to about two million.

If the gaming pods were incompatible with game operations, then these players demanding the removal of gaming restrictions could simply wait for them to fix the bug.

Unfortunately, the current problem was that even though Battle Online could be downloaded into the gaming pods, once the game icon was clicked, players would be greeted with a game notification that said,

“This game is not compatible with this device!”

Chapter 154 - The Counterattack Of The Black Sea Corporation

Chapter 154: The Counterattack Of The Black Sea Corporation

Meanwhile, in the conference room of Jie De Technology Corporation headquarters.

The company's upper management was focused on the data graphs displayed on the screen.

Their faces grew sour when they saw the increasing number of returns. The situation at hand was far more serious than they had envisioned.

At present, the number of unsubscribes had surpassed four million. According to the collected statistics, all of the problems had basically arisen due to the incompatibility to run the game Battle Online.

They had not anticipated harm to themselves when they initially put restrictions on Battle Online.

However, when they recognized the problem and removed the shield, they found out that the game was not compatible with the gaming pods.

Since the gaming pods had just been released, the advantage that the Jie De Corporation originally possessed would be utterly lost if the Black Sea Corporation officially launched its gaming pods while the market was unstable.

Under such circumstances, the company's technology department burned the midnight oil to uncover the problem. However, Battle Online was still incompatible.

Thus, they eventually realized that the problem was with Battle Online, rather than the gaming pods.

Immediately, they contacted Wu Guoyi, as he was the one who facilitated their collaboration with many large companies. Hence, only he would know the game manager's contact information.

Upon receiving the Jie De Corporation's request, Wu Guoyi dialed Lu Wu's cell at once and informed him that the corporate manager wanted to invite him over to talk about the game compatibility issue.

However, Lu Wu refused without a second thought.

Although he had always been quite work-oriented, it was no surprise that he fought back, since it was the Jie De Corporation that first cracked down on Battle Online.

Furthermore, he was merely an insignificant person for now, so he did not want to have any appointments.

At this time, the players were insulting the gaming pods furiously in the Battle Online forum:

Invincible_Loneliness: "The gaming pod is a piece of garbage, claiming to be able to stay online all day? I've canceled my subscription. I really got so happy over nothing."

Crayon_Shinchan: "Another avant-garde game product has just been released. All the users are praising it, let's all buy that. (funny)"

Watermelon_Taro: "I, a poor dog, reluctantly bought one too after seeing everyone purchasing it. Now, it's telling me it's not compatible. I almost bashed it in! Why would I need such a useless thing?"

Xueli_The_Strongest: "It seems that the number of buyers in this forum is nearly four million. I've just checked the Jie De Corporation's official website and almost all the post-sales bad reviews are basically saying that it isn't compatible with Battle Online."

Peppa_Boar replied to Xueli_The_Strongest: "I guess it's only us who need things like gaming pods the most. Other games' security limits are simply

not as crazy scary as Battle Online, so basically, more than 80% of players in this forum ordered it, but the result is rather disappointing.”

Broke_Trash: “Believe it or not, I’ve already prepared several boxes of nutrient solutions for my few-month hibernation plans, but in the end... (flips table)!”

Crayon_Shinchan replied to Broke_Trash: “Hibernation is a good word (funny)!”

Assassin_Creed: “If a gaming pod that’s compatible with Battle Online exists, trust me, I would sleep for a year. (funny)”

Crayon_Shinchan replied to Assassin_Creed: “Only if you don’t die in a year. (funny)”

...

In such a grave situation, the Jie De Corporation repeatedly begged Wu Guoyi to help, but Lu Wu’s attitude was firm and he simply gave them the cold shoulder. In the end, the helpless Jie De Corporation came to Battle Online’s official web forum and sent a letter of apology to Lu Wu through their suggestion inbox.

Even with that, Lu Wu didn’t buy it.

In his head, Lu Wu was clear that if it was not for Battle Online’s high popularity among its users, it would probably be destroyed by the Jie De Technology Corporation’s firewall this time.

Hence, if the Jie De Technology Corporation’s initial intention was to bring him down, a letter of apology by itself would not solve the problem.

So, Lu Wu replied to him with a letter.

The contents were simple. If the Jie De Technology Corporation was willing to take out 5% of the profits from their gaming pods, the developers of Battle Online might be able to work overnight to fix the ongoing incompatibility bug.

Lu Wu's conditions greatly angered the upper management of the Jie De Technology Corporation. All of them declared in the meeting that they were not going to compromise.

However, the crisis was not over yet.

The day after Lu Wu responded to the email, players in Battle Online were all taken back by surprise when an advertisement for the Black Sea Technology Corporation's gaming pods appeared on the game's login interface.

In addition to the gaming pod's many uses, the advertisement also held a message that players cared about the most.

(This gaming pod is perfectly compatible with running Battle Online. By using this gaming pod to log into the game, the 12-hour safe gaming time limit would be lifted.)

The news inevitably sent players into a frenzy again.

After seeing an official assurance that it would work perfectly, the bulk of orders through in-game links hit the Black Sea Corporation like a wave.

Within a single day, the Black Sea Technology Corporation received more than four million orders.

At this point, even the Black Sea Corporation was quite flustered by the overwhelming response.

They thought they were about to lose the battle against the Jie De Corporation, but the tables have turned.

Moreover, the background data indicated that 99% of these orders were directed from the links in Battle Online.

The huge surprise caught the managers of the Black Sea Corporation off guard. After recovering from the shock, they instantly began to prepare their counterattack against the Jie De Technology Corporation. They took

the initiative to contact Lu Wu, hoping to cooperate with him in terms of their gaming pods.

After all, the key to this counterattack was Battle Online, which had provided them with countless orders.

This time, they came up with three cooperation strategies for Lu Wu to choose from.

First, awarding a special title with the purchase of a gaming pod.

Second, awarding a certain amount of soul coins with the purchase of a gaming pod.

Third, rewarding additional event quests with the purchase of a gaming pod and upon completion, the players could gain hidden character classes.

At the same time, the Black Sea Corporation also promised to cover for the expenses for all the rewards sent out, in hopes to elevate the influence of their gaming pods.

However, Lu Wu rejected all of them.

Lu Wu was well aware of the Black Sea Corporation's thinking, but it was his principle that outsiders cannot interfere with the game progress.

In the eyes of the Black Sea Corporation, these three conditions could be easily done by Lu Wu.

In reality, Lu Wu was unable to do that. Other than the special title which he could freely issue, generating soul currency and hidden character classes as bonus rewards were simply unrealistic.

If these were made into rewards, especially the hidden character class, Lu Wu was very sure that all players would purchase the gaming pod.

Even the bosses of many major guilds had not come across the opportunity to obtain a hidden character class, not to mention a gaming pod. As such,

the rich players would gladly accept the price even if it was marketed at ten times or a hundred times the current price.

Besides, if it was put on sale, Lu Wu could have chosen to sell the hidden character classes directly instead of binding them to the gaming pods.

Although Lu Wu could easily distribute large batches of bonus special titles, this would also affect his game settings.

After all, it did not matter if the attributes of the titles increased the experience achieved from fighting monsters or the character attributes, it would still cost Lu Wu soul coins.

Even increasing the number of free Instance Dungeons or free transports alone would still pose a bad deal for Lu Wu.

Currently, Lu Wu did not need much real money, as long as he had enough to spend. What he needed and lacked most were soul coins.

In addition, this collaboration for promotion would provide Lu Wu with 5% of the profit as long as the Black Sea Corporation's gaming pod was purchased through the built-in link in the game, according to the provisions of the contract.

That was a large sum in itself, which would be enough to cover his expenses.

The Black Sea Corporation was somewhat stunned regarding Lu Wu's rejection, but they eventually relented.

On the other side, the Jie De Technology Corporation was thrown into pandemonium.

They had just discovered that they'd lost an enormous amount of orders to the Black Sea Corporation.

The main reason was solely because of the game Battle Online.

Chapter 155 - Lunar New Year's Event

Chapter 155: Lunar New Year's Event

The Black Sea Corporation was busy shipping out gaming pods while the Jie De Technology Corporation was still struggling with its own issues.

Gamers who got their hands on the gaming pods were undoubtedly thrilled as the 12-hour security shutdown of the server was over as promised by the officials of Battle Online.

The forum was flooded with good reviews for the gaming pods by the Black Sea Corporation.

Broke_Trash: “Awesome! We can finally hibernate, everybody. See you in spring (waving emoji)!”

Assassin_Creed: “You guys are not going to believe this. I’ve hired a maintenance man to come over on a regular basis to renew the nutrient solution for me. I hereby announce that I’m going to sleep for a whole year! (smirking emoji)”

Crayon_Shinchan replied to Assassin_Creed: “Farewell, young man!”

Xueli_The_Strongest: “I returned the gaming pod of the Jie De Corporation and bought the one from the Black Sea Corporation. As expected, the official recommendation did not disappoint (happy~)”

Watermelon_Taro: “I’m feeling good~ Life has never been so good...”

Cabuda: “I’m so tempted because of you guys. I’m currently saving up to get one, too!”

As the players were excited over the gaming pods, Lu Wu launched the Lunar New Year's event inside the game.

[Lunar New Year's Event Launch Notice]:

Event One – Limited Time Auction for New Year's Fashion Sets

Details: A limited time auction of three different styles of fashion sets will be available every night during the event period (Each style is limited to 1,000 pieces, and the top bid is 150,000 dragon coins, each player is limited to one set.)

Event Two – Collection of Fashion Fragments

Details: Killing a monster in the game gives a chance to drop fashion fragments during the event period (the more powerful the monster, the higher the chance to drop fashion fragments). 288 fashion fragments can be synthesized into one of the three fashion sets in the Event Messenger Area.

Introduction of Fashion Sets: With all fashion items from synthesis or auctions as the starter, a certain number of fashion fragments can be used for upgrading or improvisation of appearance.

Event Three – Random Lunar New Year Lucky Money Red Envelopes

Details: There will be chances to obtain lucky money through hidden red envelopes in all areas of Beiqi during the event period. A random number of soul coins between 1 to 1,000 will be rewarded from collecting and opening the red envelopes.

Event Four – Chasing Off the Legendary Nian Beast

Details: A Level 200 monster (the legendary Nian Beast) will be spawned in the Land of Beiqi every hour during the event period. A Blue, Red or Purple Level 55 weapon (randomized), soul coins (randomized), and New Year Messenger title (very low chance) will be dropped upon its death.

Nian Beast: Extremely low damage with very high health.

Note: Players' rewards will be in conjunction with the damage done to the Nian Beast and will go directly into players' personal channels.

The three sets of outfits yet to be released were displayed under the event details.

These three sets were all designed by the omnipotent Bei Li. Lu Wu named them Winter Dance of the Crane, General Dragon's Armor, and Fallen Glory, respectively.

Despite having more than ten sets of outfits for Lu Wu to choose for his template, he only chose these three – the main reason being the desire to cater to the setting of the game.

These three sets had one same characteristic – all of them emitted an ancient charm.

The players were all excited after looking at the three fashion sets. Some players who were professional fashion designers even commented on the outfits with their own opinion in the forum.

[I'm a professional fashion designer. I am in love with these three sets of outfits even though I'm picky. Battle Online has never failed to surprise me, I love it so much! (kisses~)] (Author: AdorkableCluelessGirl)

Well, let me share my opinion on these three fashion sets and give some advice to players who wanted to get a set but didn't know which to choose.

First of all, I'm going to review the first set of the three, called Winter Dance of the Crane.

Fashion Review: The design of this set's appearance is closely related to the theme. The simple yet elegant white which represented the coldness of snow, the edge of the cuffs embellished with crane feathers, coupled with the scarlet color on the hair, was more than perfect as it vividly depicts the image of red-crowned cranes. I just have to give it to the graphic designers of Battle Online that they are absolutely the world's top.

My Proposal: It's a must-buy! What? You don't have the money? Just sell your house, your car, or even your own body. It's Lunar New Year, you really should spend some cash in the game to get new clothes!

The next review is on the second set, the domineering outfit called General Dragon's Armor.

Fashion Review: This set is full of a general style. The dragon on the helmet was shaped in a way as if it could take down the world in fury, not to mention the red tassel flowing like hair. The shoulders, chest, and waist are decorated with ferocious animal heads. The metal texture on the knee shield and the armor scales on both sides highlighted the hardness, with a cloak covering the iron copper body from the back. Even a player who looks weak will instantly appear tall and strong in it. Also, the string tassel that hung low seems to add some gentleness to this thick armor.

My Proposal: Although this set has both a female and male version, it suits male players with tall figures. Wearing it will make you look more mighty and powerful~ I have only one piece of advice. Reload and buy!

Last but not least, my favorite set which is called Fallen Glory.

Fashion Review: This outfit has lavender, lilac, and ivory white as the main tones, which make it appear elegant and chic. The design of the long wide sleeves and slim waistline brought out the ancient charm even more. All the tiny details are remarkable, the butterfly accessory around the waist matches the butterfly embroidery on the shoulder edges perfectly. The softly tailored round toe boots and other details give this set an overall mild and gentle aura like a nice cup of tea, portraying elegance.

My Proposal: Ding~ Sold my house, my car, and my boyfriend! Draw your swords and get ready to fight for the fashion auction tonight!

After reviewing the three sets, I am dying to own these fashion icons, I really like them!

Those who aren't able to get them from the auction, don't be sad. You can still own one of these cool sets by collecting fashion fragments to

synthesize one within the specified date.

However, these dazzling sets are only in starter form and they can be upgraded by collecting fashion fragments. They are so irresistible, I am desperate to get one right now.

So, where are my Beiqi Army comrades? Let's kill wild mobs to get these sets!

Finally, I wish all gamers a happy Lunar New Year!

Also, I wish that all of your powers are cut off and your gaming pods explode when the fashion auction starts so that none of you can take it from me (gentle smiling face emoji)!

Replies:

Invincible_Loneliness: "Although this player is a bit black-hearted, she is indeed a professional. Looking at how she praised it, I feel like getting a set of General Dragon's Armor now even though I wasn't really interested in fashion. As for money (sinister laugh emoji), I hope that someone can defeat me, it's so lonely to be on top!"

Crayon_Shinchan lonely replied to Invincible_Loneliness: "Please take care of me during the event tonight! (smirking emoji)"

Invincible_Loneliness replied to Crayon_Shinchan: "I've been enduring you for a long time. Leave your username if you dare, I'm trying to teach you some manners!"

Crayon_Shinchan replied to Invincible_Loneliness: "You should look for it yourself. I'll give in if you're able to do so. (smirking emoji)"

Watermelon_Taro: "The poorest member of this forum is shrinking into a corner once again and starting to cry silently. My heart is distorted from jealousy due to the lack of riches. I need money, need! (crying emoji)"

Xueli_The_Strongest: "This is a war between the rich, I'm looking at my poor boyfriend silently and accepting that I can only collect fashion

fragments to synthesize one in order to own a set (crying emoji). Damn it, I want to get Fallen Glory so badly after your praise, I hate you so much (teeth gritting emoji)!”

Peppa_Boar: “Smiling silently here, I’m ready to buy a set on the spot, things that can be settled with money is never an issue. I’d buy the hidden character class too if it’s on sale, no matter how much it costs.”

A_Large_Wolfdog: “What!? (confused emoji)”

Invincible_Loneliness replied to A_Large_Wolfdog: “Doggy... don’t cry. This event doesn’t seem to have anything to do with you.”

A_Large_Wolfdog replied to Invincible_Loneliness: “(Flips table) Don’t stop me, I’ve given up on myself, I want to destroy the world!”

Crayon_Shinchan replied to A_Large_Wolfdog: “I can’t stop laughing, haha, let me comfort you, don’t cry...”

A_Large_Wolfdog replied to Crayon_Shinchan: “Leave your username if you dare! (gaze of a large black dog.JPG)”

Gamers had started discussing the fashion sets in the forum even though the event had not even officially started.

Chapter 156 - Fashion Auction

Chapter 156: Fashion Auction

While the players were on the edges of their seats as the time was approaching, Lu Wu finally granted access to the portal for players to purchase Fashion Shop dragon coins with cash.

The players' top-up orders came rushing at the moment the portal was made available.

If it was not for Lu Wu's battle artifact which was a special server, he believed that his original game server would have crashed a long time ago.

The sum of top-up orders reached a whopping total of 3,000,000,000 dragon coins within an hour. There were almost 6,000,000 players at that point, which meant the top-up amount had not even reached its peak yet. The top-up orders were still rushing in and the top-up total was still rising.

Even Lu Wu was dumbfounded due to the mind-blowing top-up total.

If this continued, he was sure that the top-up total would easily exceed 10,000,000,000 when the Fashion Shop officially launched.

This was the first time Lu Wu realized that making money was as easy as pie.

However, Lu Wu would definitely not disappoint the players' trust toward Battle Online.

Lu Wu issued a notice beforehand to the players who would later ask for refunds of their dragon coins as a result of losing bids. The notice assured that dragon coins could be re-exchanged for cash.

After all, the dragon coins could only be used during the fashion events and they were pretty much useless at other times.

Lu Wu planned to make fashion events like this a weekly activity instead of only granting access to the features that allowed players to collect fashion pieces and bid on limited edition fashion during events and celebrations. He decided that these fashion events would be held every Wednesday.

Lu Wu did not need to spend a single soul coin to create fashion items. He only needed to use an artifact to create a prop to collect the fashion fragments when a player had killed a mob.

It literally needed no cost.

The colossal amount of top-ups opened Lu Wu's eyes to the violence and brutality of business.

The event was about to start.

The passionate players in the forum were caring for each other, asking one another if their game consoles were fine, and if they were able to log in to the game.

However, the forum turned into deafening silence with two minutes to spare.

All the players were focused on the Fashion column in the shop, which was still gray at the time. The air was full of suspense as they were waiting for the auction to officially start.

Lu Wu was also observing the players' behaviors. He wanted to see if there would be a surprising and remarkable outcome from this event which was about to be normalized.

All the players immediately clicked on the Fashion column the moment a thread of color appeared on the gray shop column.

The players were full of excitement while looking at the three fashion sets which were officially launched. Each of them started choosing the sets to bid on.

However, the Fashion Shop turned gray again before they could click on anything!

A game message popped up...

[Server Announcement. The three sets for today's event are sold out. The highest bidder is 150,000 dragon coins, the lowest is 150,000 dragon coins. The total amount sold were 3,000 sets. The limited-time fashion auction has ended.]

Lu Wu was taken by surprise.

The players were confused.

Not only was Lu Wu shocked, but the players were also practically stunned.

In their eyes, the Fashion Shop shut down after it was launched for only a short moment.

The players were angered and flocked into the forum to get some insight.

Invincible_Loneliness: "Damn, thank God I immediately bid the highest amount at 150,000 dragon coins once I got into Fashion Shop. That was nerve-racking, they've sold out instantly."

Peppa_Boar: "Wow, I'm shaken up. Did these 3,000 sets only take ten seconds, heck, even five seconds, to be sold out? My internet speed is fast – are all of you hackers or something?"

Xueli_The_Strongest: "(Facepalm emoji) I gave it a try with 10,000 dragon coins. Fashion Shop shut down before I could click anything. I cannot deal with this."

AdorkableCluelessGirl: "Hehe, thankfully I foresaw this and dumped 150,000, the highest bid straight. I was so close to losing my love, the Fallen Glory... I feel great~"

Your_Husband replied to Innocent_Girl: "If it was not for your recommendation, the site might be up for a few seconds more and I could

have gotten a set, too. (Blood dripping knife emoji)”

Battle_Angel: “Crying here, I bid 100,000 dragon coins for the Winter Dance of the Crane outfit and I thought I could pause for a moment before raising the bid. Who knew the site would crash within five seconds? It was already too late when I noticed. I regret not bidding more. Please have another auction.”

Autumn_Leaves_In_Luoyang: “That was amazing! I got a set of Fallen Glory, thanks to my wise provision that this would happen. All sold out in five seconds, that’s some scary shit.”

NeverGoingBack: “I managed to get it... *silently passes by* Let me just show it off and laugh at all you green-eyed monsters. (image of fashion set)”

Chaotic_Disturbance: “*Stomping and beating own chest* I missed my chance to show off! I started off with 150,000, too, but I was one step behind.”

Watermelon_Taro: “The war between the rich is crazy. May I ask where your money came from? I want to be like you guys and throw money wherever I want to. (jealous)”

Speechless_Heart: “Since it’s the Lunar New Year, I wonder if you guys trained your speed by finding hidden red envelopes. I feel attacked, it is impossible to buy anything now. I am ready to do labor for money in the wild. Thankfully, I saved myself a Zombie Energy Pillar. I am prepared to use my blood, sweat, and tears to get myself a set too in these few days.”

Crayon_Sinchan: “My liver is going off soon. Thank God I got myself a gaming pod, I am not going offline for a few days, I don’t care. I am prepared to slay all the mobs and get the fashion fragments.”

The event ended after only five seconds. Many players broke down in tears once they found out the reason.

Nonetheless, the reality could not be changed. They knew that they could only obtain the fashion sets by spamming for the fragments while losing sleep. Hence, they left the Mansion of the Dead, their eyes red and swollen as they started searching for any wild monsters to kill.

That was the day the army of the Fourth Disaster marched out of the safe zone from the Mansion of The Dead. They were prepared to start a war in Beiqi.

Right then, a game notification appeared.

[Server Announcement. The Nian Beast has spawned. Search coordinates from Burial Grounds.]

This notification rocked the players' world. The crowd rushed toward the portal in the Mansion of The Dead instantly.

The Burial Grounds was packed within a split second.

“Nian Beast! Where is the Nian Beast? Let me touch it!”

“Stop pushing me! Look at your map and coordinates. Get out of my way.”

“I cannot afford to die so easily this time. Let me touch it at least, it would all be worth it. Everyone gets out of the way!”

Thousands of players swarmed into the Burial Grounds like locusts toward the Nian Beast's spawning spot.

Right at that moment, a humongous creature, fiery red in color, was padding around the area south of the Burial Grounds.

The sudden rush of the player army from the north startled the Nian Beast. It let out a frustrated roar before charging toward the players.

Wang Damang who was at the front line suddenly went pale. He came to a realization that he had been running too fast, he was about to become as dead as a dodo soon.

The Nian Beast was already very near to him and finally bumped into his body, causing him to be thrown a few feet away.

He landed on the ground hard. However, to his surprise, he realized that his health bar only dropped less than one third, which meant that the fall did not cause much damage to him.

Looking at the other players who were rushing toward the Nian Beast, he immediately stood up and rushed over. Since he already knew that the Nian Beast could only cause mild damage, he had nothing to be afraid of.

It was as Wang Damang predicted, the Nian Beast was indeed a New Year's gift from Lu Wu to the players.

Due to the fact that the Nian Beast could not cause much damage, it was impossible for it to kill the players. However, its own health bar was higher than ever.

After the Nian Beast was killed, the rewards for the players were calculated according to the ratio of their damage to the beast's total health.

Chapter 157 - The Curious Hydra King

Chapter 157: The Curious Hydra King

Although the Nian Beast which spawned in the Burial Grounds had a very high defense and health, it could not hold for more than ten minutes when faced with the attack of millions of players.

Meanwhile, a game message appeared in the players' minds.

The players had either received soul coin rewards or weapons and equipment. None of the players received the special award this time, which made them feel pitiful. However, they knew that they still had a chance since the event had just begun.

Seeing the smiles on the players' faces, Lu Wu also smiled with joy.

He had worked hard in advance to create a festive atmosphere of Lunar New Year for the players in the game. The Mansion of the Dead which was originally surrounded by a cold atmosphere was now red with decorations like Chinese-style ornaments, lucky banners, and lanterns. It was filled with the Lunar New Year's atmosphere.

However, the Mansion of the Dead was basically empty due to the launching of the Lunar New Year events, and all of the players had stepped out of the Mansion of the Dead to work hard for their potential rewards.

The players were very occupied that night. Aside from looking for hidden Lunar New Year's red envelopes with lucky money inside and killing wild monsters in order to collect the fashion fragments, they had to rush to attack the Nian Beast which was set to respawn randomly every hour.

The whole Land of Beiqi was full of players scurrying around.

The players' movement had naturally attracted the attention of many Beiqi forces.

However, they had become accustomed to the weird behaviors of this new force. They were fine with it as long as they were not provoking them.

.....

Ascension Zone, East Side of Beiqi.

The Hydra King lowered his head while devouring a fanged boar. He raised his head suddenly when the boar was half-eaten.

A crowd of players a distance away was rushing toward his direction.

Although the Hydra King was not intimidated by this new force of Beiqi, he had no intention to mess with it.

The gamers had done two things that concerned him.

Firstly, they killed Cha Na who was not to be underestimated although he was only a Ghost General because he was about to break through the Ghost King's Territory. The new force's ability to kill Cha Na implied that they could beat someone at the level of a Ghost King.

Secondly, the players prevented the invasion of evil.

Although it was done with the help of the Rock Ghost King, the fact that these players were able to negotiate with the Rock Ghost King was remarkable.

After all, he knew the Rock Ghost King's character well. To be able to talk to him, the gamers must have obviously caught his attention on the basis of their abilities.

Although the Hydra King was confident that he could achieve these two things as well since he was already a Ghost King and he had the strength similar to the gamers. He assumed that the gamers would be at the same level as a Ghost King although he was not clear of their exact strength.

Therefore, the Hydra King had never taken the initiative to provoke the new force in Beiqi.

However, with such an extensive attack, the Hydra King realized that a war was about to happen. He immediately raised his head with a furious expression.

It was impossible for him to give up on the Ascension Zone since he had been staying in this area for many years. Since the players had the guts to invade his territory, then they could only settle it with war.

The Hydra King let out a loud roar and ascended into the air when the players stepped into the Ascension Zone. He was about to sweep over the players.

However, the following scene made him stunned.

These millions of players did not even bother him at all. They were shouting and screaming in the open space while demonstrating various skills.

Also, they seemed to be in a very fierce battle.

The Hydra King was stupefied upon witnessing the scene. He immediately looked at the area where the players attacked to look for their target. However, no matter how he looked, there was no other creature in that area.

The performance of the players was so real as if they were really slaughtering each other. The Hydra King rubbed his eyes and fell into an incomprehensible state.

Lu Wu could not help but laugh after looking at that scene.

The Nian Beast was condensed by an artifact so it was not an actual object. It was just like an illusion which only the players could see. The Hydra King clearly misunderstood something here.

Realizing that the players' target was not him, the Hydra King paused mid-air and he did not launch an attack on the players. He only stared at the

players while trying to make sense of what they were doing.

Time passed... the Hydra King was unsure whether he was blind or the players below were blind.

As a Ghost King, he could see even the tiny worms wriggling on the ground clearly although he was in mid-air. Moreover, he had nine heads. Even if a pair of his eyes had really gone blind, it was impossible for his remaining sixteen eyes to be blind, too.

However, there were millions of players and ten million eyes below. Comparing the total number of eyes, the Hydra King thought that he was more likely to be blind.

After spectating for about ten minutes, the players who were attacking frantically stopped their attacks at the same time with smiles on their faces.

Then, the players dispersed into different directions like a tide.

The Hydra King was utterly confused.

Staring at the ground which was plowed by the players' spells, the Hydra King could not control his curiosity and flew over.

He then checked the ground carefully. He even plowed the land and searched all over it. However, he could not find a single corpse except for a few small bugs.

It made him even more baffled.

The Hydra King who had no idea what was going on looked at the half-eaten fanged boar in a distance. He had lost his appetite.

It was terrible when one's curiosity was not fed with an answer.

.....

Beiqi's Mansion of the Dead.

Two figures went online and appeared in the empty safe zone.

Another figure appeared in the resurrection point.

Looking at Murphy and Little Pomelo in front of him, Hu He grit his teeth while stomping.

“Enough. It’s Lunar New Year, can’t we just play peacefully? Is there an enmity between us that you guys have to kill the event that I created?”

Murphy and Little Pomelo did not reply. They only stared at Hu He who was dancing at the resurrection point.

“Fine, just wait and see when I refine a Hiderigami. I will surely teach you guys a lesson.”

Facing the persistent assassin couple, Hu He felt like he was about to get murdered.

He initially thought that it was a good opportunity for him to escape when all players left the Mansion of the Dead. Who would have thought that this would happen?

“Can’t you guys just give me a way out?” Hu He spoke again.

Murphy and Little Pomelo still remained silent and stared at him.

“We’ll see!” Hu He said and stomped again before he went offline.

Little Murphy heaved a sigh of relief after Hu He left.

“Let’s complete our quests. I don’t think that he will be online anytime soon.”

“Alright!”

As the two were preparing to leave the safe zone, a Skill Instructor carried some of the Wood Spirit Clan’s wine and walked past them with a smile.

“Wait, Instructor!” Murphy called out to the Skill Instructor all of a sudden.

The Skill Instructor turned his head in puzzlement.

“Instructor, we would like to master the Prajñā Scarification!”

The Skill Instructor remained silent.

“Instructor, you must be familiar with the skill. We really wish to master the Prajñā Scarification. We have long wanted to ask for your insight.”

Looking at the two’s sincere faces, the Skill Instructor smiled awkwardly.

“I don’t know about that!”

“No, you are so well-skilled, it’s impossible for you to be unfamiliar with the Prajñā Scarification. There must be some hidden quest to be completed in order to trigger the tutorial, so please assign us the quest. We will try our best to complete it no matter how tough it is.”

Murphy and Little Pomelo’s facial expression was sincere as they were humbly asking for advice.

The Skill Instructor was in tears internally at the moment. To be frank, he wanted to master that skill, too, but he really couldn’t.

Chapter 158 - A Fatal Attack

Chapter 158: A Fatal Attack

Millions of players were scrambling everywhere while following the event messages during the Lunar New Year event.

It was a strange phenomenon that was quite peculiar for the other forces in the Land of Beiqi to watch. Millions of players would suddenly rush to an area and perform various skills in the air every hour.

The Rock Ghost King who had the most contact with the gamers was the most calm. Other than him, all the other forces in the Land of Beiqi were dumbfounded, especially the Hydra King in the Ascension Zone.

It had appeared three times when the players collectively rushed in and attacked the air madly in one night.

The Hydra King felt like he was going crazy with this group of gamers that night.

He even had the impulse to take the initiative to attack and destroy all these creatures.

.....

Skill instructing room in the safe zone – the Mansion of the Dead.

“Instructor, I think we can really try and learn.”

Skill Instructor Qu Feng took a sip of Wood Spirit wine. Running out of things to say, he kept staring at Murphy and Little Pomelo in front of him. He was fed up for they still refused to believe that he'd really not mastered the skill.

“Do you guys really want to learn?”

“Yes!” the two of them were astonished as they thought that the Skill Instructor was finally going to teach them.

“Let me tell you something... I heard that Tong Gua from the casting workshop on the opposite side of the street had met with the Cursed Clan who knew how to perform the Prajñā Scarification. I’m sure that he knows how to practice it. Maybe you guys can try to ask him... and by the way, please don’t mention me.”

Murphy and Little Pomelo’s expression tensed up upon hearing that. They nodded sternly before turning away and walked across the street.

Qu Feng heaved a sigh of relief and retrieved the wine flask as he felt that the crisis had been averted. However, he spat out the freshly-poured wine in his mouth before he could swallow when he noticed the two persistent individuals had turned up at his door once again just staring at him.

“What’s the matter now?” Qu Feng wiped his clothes and asked abjectly.

“Instructor, you forgot to assign the quest to us. We did not receive any game message saying that the hidden quest is on.”

Qu Feng was speechless.

“It’s not a quest, it’s merely a guide. The hidden quest should be with Master Tong Gua. Hurry up.”

“Oh! You may continue enjoying your wine, instructor. We’ll get a carton of Wood Spirit wine to honor you once we have mastered the skill.”

Qu Feng nodded quickly upon hearing that.

The two followed Qu Feng’s instructions and appeared outside Tong Gua’s casting workshop in a jiffy.

However, the two did not enter as there was a sign hung on the door of the casting workshop.

[I am sleeping and I am operating my business whenever I want. I will break the leg of whoever dares to knock on the door!]

The two exchanged glances and Little Pomelo whispered, “Murphy, what should we do?”

“Master Tong Gua only stated that we can’t knock on the door, I guess it’s fine as long as we don’t knock,” replied Little Murphy while pointing at the half-open window next to the door.

Little Pomelo was astounded, then nodded. Both of them then proceeded to crawl into the workshop from the window.

The casting workshop looked small but the interior space was extremely spacious. There was a huge refining furnace in the middle area and wine bottles were scattered everywhere in the room. Read more chapter at [vipnovel](#)

Meanwhile, Tong Gua was lying on the bed, his thunderous snores emanating the scent of alcohol.

“Master Tong Gua! Master Tong Gua!”

The two came to the bedside and proceeded to shake Tong Gua who was sleeping soundly.

However, Tong Gua continued sleeping as if he could not sense anything and revealed no signs of waking up.

“What should we do? The master seems to be heavily drunk,” Little Pomelo showed a helpless shrug.

“Let me think of a way,” said Murphy while scanning Tong Gua’s body before finally focusing on a small earthworm-like appendage between the master’s legs.

“No, that’s not appropriate...” Little Pomelo seemed to understand his idea but was hesitant about it.

Murphy did not answer but only returned a smile. He then reached out and pinched Tong Gua's earthworm hard.

With his fatal part being attacked, Tong Gua got up immediately with widened eyes. He looked at the two standing beside his bed with disbelief.

"Hi! Master Tong Gua!" the two quickly made a bow.

"You... you guys... fuck...that hurt!"

"Master Tong Gua, we are here to seek your advice."

"Ouch... advice... advice my ass... what have you just done to me?" Tong Gua's face was flushed as he held his crotch, gasping in pain.

"Master, do you know how to cultivate the Prajñā Scarification?" the two bowed again and asked.

Feeling the sting coming from his lower body, Tong Gua wanted to cry but he had no tears. The fact that he almost lost his little one while he was deep asleep was terrifying for him.

Will I be crippled? Tong Gua had a terrible thought.

Bending over, Tong Gua left the bed trembling while holding the bed for support. He ignored the two, turned around, and walked into a compartment of the house before slamming the door shut.

The two of them waited and Tong Gua returned soon with a red coat and a lifeless expression.

"Master Tong Gua!" the two bowed again quickly upon seeing that.

"Did I ever offend you guys?" Tong Gua questioned in despair.

"Offend you? Master Tong Gua, I think you misunderstood, we are here to seek advice."

Tong Gua did not believe those words at all. He walked in a wobbly manner to the bed and sat down again, his eyes fixed on the two.

“Firstly, tell me how you guys got in here.”

Both Murphy and Little Pomelo pointed their fingers toward the window in unison.

Tong Gua felt his teeth aching after one glance. He then asked, “What’s your purpose in doing that?”

Tong Gua was actually trying to buy himself some time and see if he could practice predestination to toughen his cultivation and have sweet revenge.

However, his cultivation was at zero and his strength at this stage did not allow him to do things the hard way. He could only reconcile.

“Master Tong Gua, do you know Prajñā Scarification?”

“Prajñā Scarification?” Tong Gua was stunned for a moment.

How could he be unfamiliar with this name when it was the most powerful skill of the Cursed Clan? He could still vividly remember the battle that destroyed the Cursed Clan. They were fortunate that the clan elder chose to perform the Prajñā Scarification day by day. If he was the chosen one, he would surely be doomed.

“Why are you guys asking about this?” Tong Gua was curious.

“We have advanced to Cursed Apostle and we want to master this class’s strongest skill, the Prajñā Scarification to become the strongest assassins!”

“Cursed Apostle?”

Tong Gua was suddenly reminded that these players did have the choice to advance their skills in the direction of the Cursed Clan after class advancement.

Suddenly, Tong Gua started to believe that these two players were not here for revenge.

However, their way of seeking advice made him particularly upset. Although he knew some secrets of the Cursed Clan, he had no intention to share them with these two at all.

“Forget it, both of your qualifications are mediocre and you couldn’t possibly master it,” Tong Gua said after thinking about it a moment.

“Master Tong Gua, please teach us the Prajñā Scarification. We will not give up if we can’t master the skill!”

“Oh? So what?” Tong Gua’s pride was boosted. He rested his left leg on the bed with a proud face.

“We will move you with our sincerity and come often to ask for advice!”

Tong Gua widened his eyes upon listening to the words. How can these two who seem so serious be this shameless?

It was obvious that they wanted to give him another fatal attack.

The hidden threat by the two was indeed effective as Tong Gua was starting to feel sheepish.

His original plan was to return for revenge when he was done practicing predestination to toughen his cultivation. However, the two in front of him were gamers so they were practically immortal. Even if he could get revenge later, his earthworm would definitely be crippled if these two ever came for him in the future.

Feeling wronged, Tong Gua finally looked up.

“I can teach you guys, but I have one condition.”

“Go ahead, Master Tong Gua. We will definitely accept it!” their eyes were bright and shining.

Chapter 159 - The Ambitious Rock Ghost King

Chapter 159: The Ambitious Rock Ghost King

“Mind you, I can’t guarantee that you guys can master it!” Tong Gua added, seeing the two had agreed.

Murphy and Little Pomelo nodded immediately.

“Okay, Master Tong Gua!”

“Then let me tell you about the origin of the Cursed Clan.”

“The Cursed Clan are not natives in the land of Beiqi, but a race who moved here from Naraka. It seems that they supported the wrong team during the battle for the monarch position. After the birth of the new monarch, they moved to Beiqi in order to prevent their clan from being exterminated.”

“The situation in Beiqi at that time was also very unstable, with two major forces competing for the position of monarch in Beiqi.”

“Speaking of that, this clan had a miserable fate. In order to gain a foothold in Beiqi, they chose to support one of the two forces after assessing the strength of both sides. However, they still picked the wrong team. The force they trusted eventually lost, and they were almost annihilated. By the way, the leader of the other winning force was Lu Yan, the latest King of Beiqi, who just passed away recently.”

When he thought of the King of Beiqi who treated him well, Tong Gua sighed deeply in his heart.

“Was the Cursed Clan wiped out, too?” asked the two as though they were curious babies.

“Well, they should have been obliterated, but not necessarily destroyed. It is said that a few people survived and fled to the Arctic Abyss with the defeated force. Of course, I’m not sure if it’s genuine news, because I was practicing divine power during that time. I had an isolated practice for a long time.”

“The Arctic Abyss?” the two immediately opened their map and scrolled to the south.

However, as they had not been to that place before, the map only showed rivers below the Burial Grounds. The rest of the area was covered by map fog.

“Therefore, if you really want to learn the ability of the Cursed Clan, then you have to ask them. If they have survivors, they would have escaped to this Arctic Abyss, because they’re unable to survive in other areas of Beiqi.”

“Nevertheless, I want to remind you that this Arctic Abyss is almost a forbidden area in Beiqi. It is an eerie place. Although it is located above a geothermal volcano, its glaciers still haven’t melted in over hundreds of thousands of years. Instead, it is perennially showered in heavy snow.”

“What’s more, it is said that the birth of this Arctic Abyss is related to the Ice Snow Clan who was under the first King of Beiqi so it’s not a good place anyway. Besides, even if that defeated force really did hide in the Arctic Abyss, the Ice Snow Clan would have wiped them out.”

“Hence, you should think about it carefully. Since you are immortal, it is okay to go and play around. If you come across the Ice Snow Clan, don’t mess with them because their patriarch who may be alive has reached the Ghost Emperor Realm. Beiqi will be overturned if they get angry.”

“I have told you guys everything that I know. What ideas do you have in mind?” Tong Gua looked at them and asked.

“We will go!”

Seeing that the duo was so headstrong, Tong Gua waved his hands. He seemed to be afraid that they might come back to trouble him if they could not find the Cursed Clan. So he spoke again.

“Don’t be discouraged if you really can’t find them. When you have grown more powerful, you can go to the Naraka Territory. Many races here have the power of the Naraka Realm.”

The two of them nodded again and bowed respectfully to Tong Gua. Then, they turned around and made their way to the door and climbed out the window next to it.

Tong Gua was speechless.

“Wait, how did they know that I know the origin of the Cursed Clan?” Tong Gua held his crotch, feeling that something was wrong.

.....

In the external world, the big holiday event was still going on.

That very moment, millions of players suddenly appeared airborne as they were transported to the peripheral of the North Rocks. They marched toward the inner part of the North Rocks.

Facing a frenzied wave of players, the Rock Ghost King felt his heart skip a beat. He hastily stopped his subordinates who were preparing to launch an attack.

“Calm down and let these madmen be. They will leave in no time.”

It was exactly like what the Rock Ghost King had mentioned. After the players surrounded an area and went crazy for a moment, they all giggled and started to retreat.

“Lord Rock Ghost King, what kind of race are these new forces, and why have we never seen them before?” the steel zombie commander could not help but ask curiously.

There was also a hint of uncertainty in the eyes of the Rock Ghost King. He turned his head to look at the Soul Liberating Envoy Du Yan.

“You were the first to contact them. Do you know their origin?”

Upon hearing that, Du Yan replied respectfully to the Rock Ghost King.

“Lord Rock Ghost King, this force has appeared in the Mansion of the Dead inexplicably after the death of the King of Beiqi. I do not know their origin.”

The Rock Ghost King was even more confused after hearing what Du Yan had to say.

How could Ghost Kings like them not know in advance of such a large-scale influx in Beiqi?

The Land of Beiqi could only be accessed through four areas: his North Rocks, the Eastern Liuli, the Western Barren Grassland, and the Southern Arctic Abyss.

First of all, the Arctic Abyss could certainly be ruled out – people could not pass by that area at all. Also, he would have definitely noticed such a massive biological invasion in the North Rocks, so the North Rocks could be excluded, too.

Next, Eastern Liuli was the area where Cha Na was stationed. If they really wanted to come across the Eastern Sea, they would face Cha Na head-on. How could they occupy the Mansion of the Dead before killing Cha Na?

If so, this force might be from the Barren Grassland.

Nevertheless, the Rock Ghost King still felt something was amiss.

As he had addressed those creatures several times, he found that the abilities they mastered obviously came from Beiqi.

Rune Warriors, Sun Chasing Archers, Naraka Realm of the Cursed Clan, and so on were the abilities that once existed in Beiqi. Assuming that those

creatures were all from the outside world was probably too much of a coincidence.

As he thought for a moment, the Rock Ghost King's face went pale.

“Du Yan, do you still remember when the King of Beiqi said that he would befall the underworld one day?”

Hearing that, Du Yan arched his hand, “Lord Rock Ghost King, I have indeed heard the King of Beiqi say this before.”

“Then, do you remember that the King of Beiqi would include all of the Beiqi Army's heroic spirits of ghost general rank and above – and the enemy's souls that they had killed – in the Valiant Spirits Palace, for enshrinement?”

“I do remember it. The King of Beiqi said that the purpose was to make the future generations remember these former warriors.”

At this very moment, the Rock Ghost King's face became extremely dignified.

He recalled something vital.

It seemed that the abilities of the players were related to the deceased warriors who had been included in the Valiant Spirits Palace.

As the Rock Ghost King thought about it, he suddenly had a conjecture.

This new Beiqi force had a great possibility to be related to the late King of Beiqi. Maybe it was the secret force that he had secretly built, in order to achieve his ambition to befall the underworld.

Thinking of this, another thought suddenly surfaced in Rock Ghost King's mind.

If this power was really the secret weapon of the King of Beiqi, could he control it, or would there be a way for him to control it instead?

He did not believe that the King of Beiqi would train a force beyond his control. There must be a way to ensure that this secret weapon would never betray him.

Chapter 160 - Sneak In For Investigation

Chapter 160: Sneak In For Investigation

Mansion of the Dead, Beiqi.

As the players were all outside, the entire safe zone in the Mansion of the Dead looked empty. Although the city was adorned in a fiery red color, it still seemed rather dull with only NPCs occasionally walking along the streets.

At this very moment, a small sapling suddenly emerged from the ground of the mansion's safe zone.

It surveyed around meticulously. After it was sure that no one had discovered it, its two roots pulled out from the ground and moved forward like human feet, one step at a time.

Looking at the familiar streets of the Mansion of the Dead in front of him, the Rock Ghost King was appalled.

This Mansion of the Dead had once been completely demolished, but now most of the buildings were totally restored along with many new ones. Most importantly, these rebuilt buildings were almost the same as the ones before destruction.

Along with astonishment in his heart, he continued to move forward step by step.

His purpose was to investigate why this new Beiqi force emerged and what kind of secrets they possessed.

If these creatures were really the late King of Beiqi's secret force, then the Rock Ghost King felt that he might be able to find the method the King of

Beiqi had left to control this force in this place.

The first place he chose to investigate was Beiqi's most important domain hall. After all, if there was a way to control the secret force, King Beiqi would most probably have left it inside that hall.

After he walked across several streets, the Rock Ghost King suddenly stopped in his tracks.

He found a bizarre building with a hammer hanging diagonally on the roof, but what caught his attention was the plaque of the building.

“Tong Gua's Casting Workshop!”

Seeing the name of the building, the Rock Ghost King was startled.

Of course, he knew about Tong Gua's casting ability. He was the best-hidden caster in Beiqi.

However, the Rock Ghost King immediately shook his head as he thought of it.

How could it be? Even if the King of Beiqi wanted Tong Gua's help to cast weapons, he would have to spend a lot of effort in persuading him. According to Tong Gua's personality, he would never open a casting workshop here.

The casting workshop was probably named after Tong Gua the Ghost King because the owner adored him. Having figured it out, the Rock Ghost King immediately took a step. He was ready to continue his journey in the direction of the domain palace.

However, the Rock Ghost King suddenly sensed a breath approaching him. He immediately inserted his roots into the ground, posing as a small sapling grown from the ground, swaying aimlessly in the wind.

“Fuck. What lousy luck! These players must be cheating! How could my luck be so bad? I almost lost my pants! I'm so mad!”

Tong Gua who was not far away was staggering with his feet splaying outward. He held a pot of Muling wine in his hand and scolded himself all the way.

Thinking of the soul coins that he had lost to the players by playing cards, Tong Gua was upset. He could not help but throw the red coat on his shoulders to the ground, then jumped up and stomped on it...

Recognizing the person, a drop of sweat dripped from the Rock Ghost King's forehead. He quickly stabilized his body to prevent himself from being exposed.

After Tong Gua vented his frustration, he picked up his red coat again from the ground and clutched it in his hand. He walked unsteadily to the door of the casting workshop, kicked it open, and walked in.

Seeing this scene, the Rock Ghost King heaved a sigh of relief, his heart filled with horror and doubt.

Tong Gua the Ghost King was the most powerful Ghost King in the land of Beiqi. His status in Beiqi was much higher than him, and someone with whom the Rock Ghost King would never dare to mess with.

He had several points of contact with Tong Gua before. Once he had been severely beaten by Tong Gua who was in a bad mood at that time. The Rock Ghost King still vividly remembered how terrifying Tong Gua's strength was.

Although Tong Gua had disappeared for some time, the King of Beiqi had mentioned that he was having an isolated practice. The king also had said that Tong Gua was half a step away, not far at all, from reaching the Ghost Emperor Realm.

When he saw Tong Gua appear in this place, the Rock Ghost King was full of fear. He was afraid of being discovered and murdered.

The Rock Ghost King was now certain about his own guess.

This new Beiqi force might really be related to the late King of Beiqi, and Tong Gua's so-called months of isolated practice were actually to help the king build up his secret force. This new Beiqi force was not powerful enough to employ Tong Gua as their caster, and there was only one possibility – Tong Gua did it voluntarily.

When he thought of this, the Rock Ghost King was really scared. He was afraid that he would be murdered for knowing too much.

It was even more likely that the deceased king was actually alive.

After spotting Tong Gua, he suddenly felt how naive his previous thoughts were. He was also grateful for not being impulsive.

If he had led the Tree Demon army to attack this place, Tong Gua alone would have already vanquished them.

This very moment, the figure of Tong Gua suddenly appeared at the door again. The Rock Ghost King immediately stopped pondering and tried his best to act as a small sapling, murmuring continuously in his heart, "I'm just a little sapling, you won't find me, I'm just a little tree..."

Upon the Rock Ghost King's horrified gaze, Tong Gua walked directly toward him.

"Ah, since when has this sapling appeared at my door?" Tong Gua looked at the sapling in a daze, apparently baffled.

Tong Gua then reached out his hand and patted the Rock Ghost King who was in the state of a small sapling with a hint of satisfaction in his eyes.

"Not bad! Not bad at all! Looking good!"

The Rock Ghost King felt that his heart was about to explode. He feared that Tong Gua had already noticed something unusual and would give him a devastating blow.

The Rock Ghost King did not know that Tong Gua had lost his cultivation. His heart was jittering. After all, in his opinion, Tong Gua could easily find

out who he truly was with his peak power as the Ghost King.

However, Tong Gua just stared blankly at the Rock Ghost King. The latter felt he might have a heart attack – it was too exhilarating.

“Good tree!” the drunk Tong Gua praised again.

However, the Rock Ghost King was dumbfounded by the next scene. Tong Gua suddenly unzipped and began peeing on him.

“Fuck! I can’t stand it anymore!”

Feeling the rush of warm liquid on his body, the Rock Ghost King was going crazy. If it weren’t for the rational desire to survive that restrained him, he might just give Tong Gua’s body a good slap.

To survive! To survive! Rock Ghost King kept comforting himself, but he was close to collapsing.

“Hoo!”

Tong Gua shook his body with a look of satisfaction on his face.

Pulling up his trousers, Tong Gua glanced at the small tree once more. He could not help but praise it as a good tree again. He then turned around and entered the workshop, closing the door with a loud thud.

Not far away, a small snake hiding in the slab gap that observed the scene gave out a petrified gaze.

Chapter 161 - This Place Was Rather Scary

Chapter 161: This Place Was Rather Scary

Looking at the little sapling not far away, the heart of the Hydra King skipped a beat.

He felt that he had experienced a fright.

Due to his untamed curiosity, he transformed into a small snake this time before he entered the Mansion of the Dead. However, the moment he entered, he was flabbergasted to find the place that was previously turned into ruins to be restored.

In order to satisfy his curiosity, he went further in, discovering a small sapling rooted at the entrance of Tong Gua's Casting Workshop.

How could he not know this sapling? It was the Rock Ghost King.

However, who knew that the dignified Ghost King would be fed by urine...

He couldn't believe it. The one who peed on the overlord of the Northern Zone was Beiqi's strongest Ghost King, Tong Gua.

Tong Gua? The Rock Ghost King? New forces?

The Hydra King felt as if something was hidden from him.

Why did both Tong Gua and the Rock Ghost King appear to be living in the Mansion of the Dead? Was there any secret between them and this new force?

Besides, judging from Tong Gua's behavior, he seemed to have been here for quite some time.

Then he thought of the compromise between the Rock Ghost King and the new force last time.

Am I the only one who doesn't know what's going on? Are they planning something?

That very moment, the Hydra King assumed that the Rock Ghost King who had also snuck into the Mansion of the Dead, was the secret partner of this new force.

Thinking of this, the Hydra King panicked a little.

Since Tong Gua and the Rock Ghost King are staying here in secret, why have I not heard any news? Am I also one of the targets in their plan to be wiped out?

As he thought of this, this little snake hiding in the crack of the stone was even more terrified.

Fuck, both of us are Ghost Kings! Did I offend either of them? Should there be any under table business or secret planning, you guys should count me in! Now you guys are making me panic!

Then, the Hydra King suddenly noticed that the Rock Ghost King started to move, with his roots pulled up from the ground, he sneakily etched toward His Excellency's palace.

Seeing this, the Hydra King followed quietly from behind, keeping a safe distance to prevent himself from being exposed.

This very moment, the Rock Ghost King was on the verge of collapsing. The only thought that supported him to stay here was to take a look at His Excellency's palace.

After knowing that Tong Gua was here, he felt that it was impossible for him to control this secret force. He might even be murdered by Tong Gua because he knew too much.

As he was getting closer to His Excellency's palace, the Rock Ghost King suddenly stopped. His roots pierced into the ground and posed as a small sapling again.

The Hydra King who was not far away immediately withdrew into the gap in the floor upon seeing this. He revealed only his little head and watched quietly.

Feeling the breath wafting from a short distance away, the Rock Ghost King felt his heart thumping hard again. He then slowly twisted his body and looked at the source of the breath.

However, when he saw the scene at a distance, his eyes widened.

Not far off on the resurrection point of the Mansion of the Dead, Hu He was holding his chin while squatting on the ground, carefully observing the corpse of Hiderigami. At the same time, he was thinking about how to refine the corpse.

Now that he did not dare to come out of the safe zone, he could only put his hopes on refining Hiderigami for revenge. He studied it very attentively, taking out ancient books from time to time to compare.

Both the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King in the distance were dumbfounded.

From the aura of the red body, they were sure that it was definitely Hiderigami. Even though its soul had dissipated, the energy fluctuations released from the flesh of a Ghost Emperor Elite could still be sensed.

Hu He was pointing and prodding Hiderigami's body, occasionally kicking it angrily with his feet. The Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King who witnessed the scene were so shocked by what they were seeing.

This place is too scary!

The same thought appeared in the minds of the two Ghost Kings at the same time, who had both snuck in for investigation.

The number one Ghost King in Beiqi, Tong Gua, had already frightened them, but now even an old corpse that the King of Beiqi himself might not have been able to defeat appeared. This could scare them to death.

Having been in the Land of Beiqi for so many years, they knew about Hiderigami.

They knew that there was a very powerful old corpse in the Burial Grounds. Although this old corpse was a huge threat, the King of Beiqi never took the initiative of offending it.

To the King of Beiqi, this old corpse had cultivated and reached the Ghost Emperor Realm for a long time. Although it was seriously injured, the King of Beiqi might not be able to defeat it either.

So, to the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King, the terror brought by Hiderigami was not any lesser than that of the King of Beiqi.

Nevertheless, the scene before them was too exciting. The soul of Hiderigami was stripped, but its physical body was still being toyed with.

Secret force! Secret force indeed.

The Rock Ghost King was horrified as he knew that he had uncovered too many secrets. He kept looking around, fearing that he would be discovered and then murdered.

The new force in the Mansion of the Dead was far beyond their imagination.

The Rock Ghost King finally understood.

This new force dared to invade the Northern Zone for logging even after he had given several warnings, because they had a strong background and were fearless.

Since the corpse of Hiderigami appeared here, the Rock Ghost King had another doubt.

Who killed Hiderigami?!

Could it be the guy who lived in His Excellency's palace now? Would he be the deceased King of Beiqi?

The Rock Ghost King was suddenly afraid to enter. It was too scary. He was scared that his soul would be sucked out and his corpse puppetized if he did.

Moreover, he had encountered both Tong Gua and Hiderigami as soon as he entered the Mansion of the Dead. Were there other presences there that were more intimidating than them in the mansion? This was something he was not sure of.

Looking at His Excellency's palace again, the Rock Ghost King quietly pulled his roots out of the ground. He immediately galloped out of the Mansion of the Dead.

This place was not for him. He might lose his life at anytime.

After running for a few steps, the Rock Ghost King halted again.

Staring at the little head that appeared out of the crack in the floor, cold sweat dripped from his head.

Similarly, the Hydra King also realized that he was exposed, staring at the Rock Ghost King with a look of horror on his face.

The two great Ghost Kings exchanged glances for a while, and a thought appeared in their minds at the same time.

“It's over for me! I've been discovered! Will he shout for the guards? Will he kill me?”

The two great Ghost Kings continued staring at each other. Both of them thought that the other was part of this secret force of Beiqi. Now that they were found sneaking in, they would most probably be murdered.

After gazing at each other for about five minutes, the Rock Ghost King suddenly howled. His body expanded in a flash and reverted into his original form.

The Hydra King also stretched his body and expanded continuously, transforming into a huge hydra form in the blink of an eye.

After locking gazes for one last time, the two stood up together and fled, one toward the North Rocks and the other toward the Ascension Zone.

“Run! Run! Otherwise, you will be murdered.”

It was the only thought that occupied the minds of the two great Ghost Kings.

Hu He, who was at the resurrection point stood up ignorantly, looking at the open space where the two great Ghost Kings had appeared. He was stunned.

Was it just an illusion?

Chapter 162 - The Drought Zombie And The Wood Spiritmaster (Two In One)

Chapter 162: The Drought Zombie And The Wood Spiritmaster (Two In One)

After the previous undercover infiltration, both the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King felt that they had perhaps discovered a massive hidden secret.

For a few days after that incident, they simply ignored the players, no matter how much they irked and annoyed them. They finally found out how jaw-droppingly terrifying and formidable their power was. Besides that, when they realized that the King of Beiqi might still be alive, they shuddered violently in fear and trepidation.

Meanwhile, in the inner chamber of the Mansion of the Dead, Bei Li was holding a minuscule shred of Hiderigami's flesh and examining it thoroughly with an intent look on her face.

After Hu He had gone offline, she covertly pilfered this little shred of his flesh through her personal channel. She wanted to slice it up and study it in great detail.

However, Bei Li merely acquired a microscopic morsel of flesh from Hiderigami's inner organs. Hence, its disappearance would be too insignificant and unnoticeable to raise any suspicions from Hu He.

According to Bei Li's theory, the skill that Hiderigami used to enhance and strengthen his physical body would be greatly helpful to the current players who were of the warrior class. If she could research it and construct some

skill set paths, she could then create a new class advancement template for the warrior class.

After all, the warriors could currently only advance into Rune Masters. As a Rune Master relied on unarmed combat and did not actually wield any sharp weapons, many players who wanted to fight aggressively with swords and daggers were quite disappointed and displeased playing as a warrior.

The warriors wanted to advance and be stronger, but they also wanted to battle with sharp weapons. However, if they chose to advance into a Rune Master, it would simply be a miserable and permanent farewell to weapon-wielding combat. This had made many players feel greatly disgruntled. Hence, they fervently discussed it in the forums and suggested to the officials to improve the class or create another new warrior character for them to advance into.

Needless to say, Lu Wu had heard their pleas and swiftly took action. The possibility of the birth of a new character class this time would completely depend on that little morsel of Hiderigami's flesh.

After Bei Li carefully studied it for an hour, a globule of blood-red light emerged before her eyes. As she raised her head to look at it, a contented smile peered from her face.

“Wu, it's done!”

As she uttered that phrase excitedly, she naturally placed her hand on her waist and beamed with a proud expression, seemingly asking for someone to shower her with compliments.

As someone that possessed an artifact, Lu Wu was unfortunately very unskilled. When he heard of Bei Li's stupendous achievement, he instantly yelled a verbal representation of a thumbs-up gesture, to commend and cheer for her.

.....

The events from the new year were still ongoing, so the players were still diligently farming in the Land of Beiqi to gather the hidden red envelopes and outfit fragments.

Suddenly, two game messages popped up on the screen for everyone:

[Server Announcement: A new character class, Drought Zombie, for warrior class advancement is revealed.]

[Server Announcement: A new character class, Wood Spiritmaster, for mage class advancement is revealed.]

When they saw the new class advancement notification in the top left corner on the screen, many players instantly opened it.

When they entered the new class demonstration scene, they saw a new warrior character standing menacingly in the middle, with a proud expression and his arms crossed in front of his chest. His skin was completely crimson red, and he was extremely burly.

Then, a menu suddenly appeared:

[Class Introduction]

[Drought Zombie]: The Drought Zombie had abandoned his divine soul and proceeded to combine his spirit and body. It was because he wanted to train and enhance his physical body to prove his Sacred Cause and gain an immortal body. When he succeeded in the end, no attacks or powers could harm him at all.

[Class Specialty]: Possesses a durable and sturdy body. Players can develop the class by learning the blood cultivation skill branches. In the end, players can manipulate blood after completing class development.

Weapons Compatibility: All warrior class weapons can be wielded.

Class Advancement Requirements: Reach Level 30 in the warrior character class.

After the menu disappeared, three berserkers emerged specifically to demonstrate the character's skills to the players.

In the blink of an eye, they lunged at the Drought Zombie for a vicious attack.

“Blood Qi Shield!”

The Drought Zombie, who was standing in the center, set his legs apart. With a swift movement, a mist of Blood Qi surged from every pore of his body, gradually staining his menacing eyes in a deep hue of crimson red.

When the three berserkers approached him, they unsheathed their large swords and slashed at the Drought Zombie's body.

Even though his body was endlessly assaulted by the sharp blades, not even a hint of a scar had appeared on the Drought Zombie's body. Instead, the Blood Qi surrounding him swelled with each attack, as a red number that indicated health loss appeared on each berserker's head.

A skill description menu suddenly popped up again:

[Blood Qi Shield]: Manipulate the blood in the body to form a protective barrier. Each attack will cause damage to the attacker instead. The skill lasts for one minute, while the cooldown time is ten minutes.

After the menu disappeared again, the Drought Zombie bared his bloody fangs and struck at the enemies with a swift swipe of his arm. Instantly, a huge Blood Qi claw formed in the air and powerfully slashed at the three berserkers, causing them to fumble backward.

Then the Drought Zombie waved his arms consecutively, unleashing an onslaught of bloody claws that materialized in mid-air at the three berserkers, destroying them into clouds of black mist.

[Blood Assassination]: Attach the power of Blood Qi onto the arm to unleash attacks imbued with Blood Qi (both ranged and close-combat).

Each attack will consume 2% of the total blood volume (the higher the total blood volume, the stronger the attacks are.)

After the three berserkers perished, a vague silhouette promptly appeared near the Drought Zombie. It was none other than a mage character who was wielding a wooden staff.

“Poisonous Mist!”

“Yin Corrosion!”

The mage unleashed two attacks at the Drought Zombie. However, the Drought Zombie did not release the Blood Qi in his arms to retaliate. Instead, he stood unmovingly in the Poisonous Mist and Yin Corrosion fog without taking any damage.

[Zombie Body (Passive)]: The ability allows the body to be highly resistant to Negative States such as poison or zombie energies. (Passive ability may develop and become stronger as the level increases.)

.....

After the Drought Zombie demonstration had ended, the scene did not disappear. Instead, another new figure emerged onto the screen.

The figure was clad in pale, emerald green robes, as gorgeous butterflies and bees mesmerizingly fluttered around him. The scene was so vivid and invigorating, the players could almost sniff the gentle aroma wafting in the air through the computer monitor.

[Wood Spiritmaster]: A caster that has entered the path of wood spirits, thus unlocking the ability to communicate with mother nature.

Class Specialty: A support type and manipulator character that specializes in healing and wood-type abilities.

Weapons Compatibility: Magic staff.

Class Advancement Requirements: Reach Level 30 in the mage character class.

[Basic Skills]: Gift of Nature, Light of Wood Spirits, Summon Forest Demon, Vine Jail, Gift of Life

[Gift of Nature Level 1 (Passive)]: Every Wood Spiritmaster is a messenger of mother nature and receives a gift of nature by recovering four health points each second.

[Light of Wood Spirits Level 1]: Gather the power of wood spirits to heal one target. The amount of healing depends on the skill level.

[Summon Forest Demon]: Temporarily imbue spirits into plants (flowers, grass, or tree-type plants), to summon a forest demon into battle. The power of the skill depends on the levels of the plants used (it would be harder to imbue spirits into stronger plants.) It can also be used to increase the growth rate of plants.

[Vine Jail]: Mark a targeted opponent as an enemy of nature and cause the surrounding plants to automatically wrap around it (can be used to immobilize enemies in plantless zones by first sowing some seeds and instantly growing them into plants.)

[Gift of Life]: Unleash all the power of the wood spirits in one explosive skill. This will cause the user to lose 10% of his health every second, while releasing a huge amount of healing in a wide area (the skill will automatically deactivate when the user's health is below 10%.)

...

The sudden reveal of two new character classes simultaneously caused the players in the forum to be completely thunderstruck.

The starry-eyed players stared intently as each scene of the skill demonstration was unveiled.

Peppa_Boar: “Finally a destructive tank is here. This Drought Zombie seems like it’s stronger than the Rune Master. Not only is it great at both defensive and offensive skills, it even has abilities that inflict Negative States. I feel that the character class will be great at single combat, especially against mages.”

Invincible_Loneliness: “It uses blood cultivation, right? It seems to have some similarities to my character class. Nice, nice!”

Xueli_The_Strongest: “Finally, we have a tank and cleric now. Why does the Wood Spiritmaster look like the little ladies from the Wood Spirit Clan? But, it seems to be much stronger.”

Assassin_Creed: “The Wood Spiritmaster must be a character class that is geared to assist its teammates. Especially its healing abilities, it’s a must-have in team battles. Just look at the little dog from the Myth Guild, their teamwork is impeccable.”

Dancing_Battleaxe: “I really want to advance into a Drought Zombie, but I’m a little scared that the class advancement requirements are too terrifying. (scared emoji)”

Broke_Trash: “Great, I kept delaying my class advancement into a Five Elements Warlock because I’m too bad at aiming and I’m afraid of missing my skills in battles. Now that they have been released, I can now convert into a Wood Spiritmaster. Yummy!”

Crayon_Shinchan: “The officials finally give players with terrible aim like us some candy. Both of the character classes don’t need to aim much, with one resisting damage and one with healing abilities. Both are brainless characters. (laughing emoji) I know the players who are going to advance into these two classes are gonna insult me now. Come, I’m waiting! (laughing emoji)”

Roaring_Thunder: “Can anyone expose Crayon_Shinchan’s address? I’m going to send a crate of bombs as a gift. (laughing emoji)”

Murder_In_The_Wind: “Why don’t the assassins like us have a second class advancement? Are the officials trying to make us mad? (slamming table emoji)”

Expired_Cracker: “Right, what about us? I’ll give the officials a day to contemplate it, can they please think about the assassins’ feelings, too? By hook or by crook, you have to introduce a second class advancement for us tomorrow! (slamming table emoji)”

Assassins_Alliance: “Come, everybody. Let’s create a top post to protest for the assassin players! Let the officials see our loud voices and show that we are not afraid of the useless officials’ intimidation and discrimination! (slamming table emoji)”

Ye_Xueer_is_the_Cutest: “Even though I’ve already advanced into a Cursed Apostle, why can’t assassin players like us have a second class advancement? I’m so mad! (bomb emoji)”

.....

Lu Wu felt very displeased and helpless when he saw the players’ ardent discussion in the forum.

After all, this was not really a game, and everything in it was based on reality.

One of the character classes was based on the warrior template created by researching Hiderigami’s physical state, while the other was formulated by studying the talent ability of the Wood Spirit Clan. After Bei Li had improved and tweaked them, both of them would have permanent and linearly-growing character templates.

As for the assassin class, Lu Wu still did not possess a complete development system to create a second class advancement template.

Hence, he sincerely wished to create it, but he did not have the means.

Thus, he accidentally deleted the top forum post of the assassin players' passionate protest.

.....

In the Arctic Abyss in Beiqi.

A piercingly cold winter gale was billowing ferociously across the land, as heavy snow was falling gracefully yet menacingly from the dark, gloomy sky.

Murphy and Little Pomelo who had arrived there felt as though they had entered another realm in the Land of Beiqi, since the surrounding landscape and atmosphere had undergone a massive transformation.

The temperature there was so freezingly cold, they could feel the glacial numbness in their bones, even after lowering their physical senses.

The two of them heeded Tong Gua's instructions and spent an entire day to travel from the Mansion of the Dead to that ice land, without the help of a transport array. Luckily, they had purchased some winter outfits from the shop. Otherwise, the subzero temperature would inflict a myriad of Negative States and gradually reduce their health, preventing them from venturing too deep into that desolate area.

The chance of survival in this bleak landscape was almost nil, they did not see any hint of a living being or even a plant on their treacherous journey there.

When they remembered that Tong Gua claimed that some leftover members of a defeated group that had lost their power were hiding in the Arctic Abyss, they increasingly felt doubtful about that possibility.

However, they continued on, venturing deeper into the area as they trekked carefully on the thick, winter snow. A single misstep would send one falling into a bottomless pit.

Since they were both assassins, they used Shadow Step to walk on the thick layer of snow. Even though they could not hide their tracks perfectly, they could at least prevent themselves from falling in.

“Murphy, I think that we will freeze to death if we continue forward. If there really is a defeated group here, I honestly feel that they would’ve frozen to death ages ago,” Little Pomelo’s cheeks were flushed red from the biting cold, while her lips were purplish and trembling violently.

“Keep at it. If we really died, we can just recover and come back again,” nagged Murphy, as he felt the bone-numbing coldness of Little Pomelo infecting him.

“Okay!”

Hence, the two of them began trudging ahead, again.

The Arctic Abyss was truly an abyss. After only taking a few steps, red numbers that indicated a loss of health appeared on their foreheads, despite the protective gear they were wearing.

Both of them felt greatly dejected, as they knew that their health would not last long enough for them to venture deeper, before they would have to turn back and return home.

As they were preparing to turn around and leave the area, a sudden burst of screaming noises echoed from afar.

The sounds seemed distant and were distorted by the blowing gale. Thus, both of them could not clearly discern it.

After stopping and listening closely, they were certain that a sound was indeed echoing from that direction. Hence, they exchanged a quick glance with each other, and swiftly marched with hurried footsteps toward the source of the noise.

As the sound became increasingly clear, they gradually slowed their pace as they carefully approached the location of the noise.

When they could visibly identify the source of the noise, they were both momentarily dumbfounded by what the scene that unfolded upon their eyes.

A group of young boys that was about 7 or 8 years old, with sapphire blue hair and crystal-like eyes, were fighting amongst themselves on the snowy ground.

It was an intense clash, with everyone fiercely punching and kicking one another violently, while wearing a vicious expression on their faces.

Something else also piqued their curiosity. The place was absolutely freezing, but the group of young boys seemed to be unbothered by the biting cold. They were only dressed in thin clothes as they moved around on the thick layer of snow bare-footed.

After a moment of consideration, both of them activated the explanation mode as they stared at the group of young boys:

[Name: Ice Blue]

[Background: Ice Snow Clan (Descendants of the Divine Clan)]: They are the descendants of the Divine Clan from the ancient times of Beiqi, and possess the ability to manipulate ice.

Ability Analysis: Ghost Commander Level.

When they saw the analysis menu, a look of utter disbelief appeared on Murphy and Little Pomelo's faces.

Then, they promptly diverted their gaze toward the children before them.

The menu revealed that all of them were, in fact, powerful beings of the Ghost Commander level. One of them was larger than the rest, and was clearly half-way toward becoming a Ghost General.

“They're so strong! We can't defeat any of them at all!” Little Pomelo exclaimed in a quiet whisper.

“We must not attract their attention, we mustn’t,” Murphy replied as he furiously nodded in agreement.

Suddenly, the children on the snowy ground stopped fighting each other. In the blink of an eye, all of them vanished, and reappeared right behind Murphy and Little Pomelo!

Both of them instantly broke into a cold sweat, shuddering violently in unspeakable fear.

“Who are you?” the larger child asked them as he inquisitively stared at them.

“We are... we are the descendants of Beiqi,” Little Pomelo uttered meekly.

“Descendants of Beiqi? Are we from the same clan? But, why do you two look so different?” the boy asked again.

When they heard his question, both of them could not help but think about the analysis menu, which explained that the Ice Snow Clan was the descendant of Beiqi’s Divine Clan.

“Then, why are you all fighting?” Little Pomelo plucked up the courage and asked them in return.

“Do we need a reason to fight? We just feel like fighting,” the larger boy said, before thrusting his arm and ruthlessly slapping another boy, flinging him a distance away.

The boy who was slapped instantly disappeared when he landed on the ground, before immediately reappearing beside the larger boy and forcefully punching his face.

“Bang!”

Suddenly, a violent fight broke out again. The atmosphere was thrown into utter chaos, as the group of children began ferociously attacking each other.

Both Little Pomelo and Murphy were rendered speechless by the events that unfolded.

Chapter 163 - Ice Snow Clan

Chapter 163 – Ice Snow Clan

Murphy and Little Pomelo were evidently flustered as they watched the Ice Snow Clan's boys ruthlessly attack each other again.

“It seems that the culture of the people here is a bit rough,” Murphy said in astonishment.

Little Pomelo nodded unconsciously, agreeing with his words.

However, since they had discovered the Ice Snow Clan, they did not plan to leave empty-handed. They waited patiently for their bloody fistfight to end, so that they could ask them about the Cursed Clan and find out if they have any information about them.

Alas, the rowdy battle lasted exactly half an hour. If it were not for their healing potions, the two of them would have collapsed and perished in the freezing temperature.

After finishing their scuffle, the group of young boys appeared in front of them again.

“Foreigners, I will bring you to meet our Ice Elder, follow us,” the taller child said, acting like a leader.

“Thud!”

Suddenly, a swift kick whipped across the air and kicked the tall boy sprawling on the ground.

“I think we should bring them to the Snow Elder instead...”

Before the attacker could finish speaking, he was instantly pinned onto the snowy ground by another boy, who unleashed a barrage of punches at the

former's face, yelling...

"Ice Elder! Ice Elder!"

Another person behind him grabbed the puncher's head and began crushing its skull, screaming...

"Snow Elder! Snow Elder!"

Both Murphy and Little Pomelo were extremely flabbergasted and could not utter a word.

Yet again, a noisy scuffle broke out between them.

The scene of them endlessly thrashing and pummeling each other over minor verbal disputes completely amazed and confounded Murphy and Little Pomelo.

Even though the young boys from the Ice Snow Clan did not unleash their element manipulation abilities, the pure strength from their bare fists was terrifyingly powerful. Resounding thumps reverberated through the air as they jabbed and slammed at one another with monstrous force. At a glance, they did not seem to be playing. Rather, the fight was so intense that they seemed to be out for blood.

The brawl went on for another half an hour. After they felt that they had had enough, they stopped attacking each other and appeared in front of Murphy and Little Pomelo again.

However, Murphy hastily made a suggestion before any of them could open their mouths.

"My fellow clansmen, we will see the Ice Elder first. Then, we will meet the Snow Elder after that. Is that alright?"

Murphy had to take the lead. Otherwise, the Ice Snow Clan's boys would quarrel and strike each other again.

"Alright," some of the young boys seemed slightly disappointed.

With the boys leading ahead, the two of them began venturing deeper into the Arctic Abyss.

However, the subzero temperature plummeted drastically as they continued their journey into the freezing abyss. Only when they saw the blurry visage of the Ice Snow Palace in a distance away, they could let out a sigh of relief.

They had been constantly using their healing potions to replenish their health throughout the perilous journey. Otherwise, their health would dip at lightning speed, and they would lose their lives in less than a minute in the freezing cold.

When they arrived at the main gate of the Ice Snow Palace, the leader raised his hand and made a swift swiping movement. Instantly, the appearance of the palace gate became distorted and blurred, as the surrounding air rumbled ferociously as though it was gushing water. Then, suddenly, the facade of the Ice Snow Palace was ripped apart, as though it was a painting, before displaying the real image behind the mirage. It was a small village on an ice tower that was built with ice blocks.

Undoubtedly, both of them were noticeably dumbfounded at the scene that unfolded upon them, with their eyes and mouth wide open. So, the majestic castle is just an illusion, while the little village in there is the true base. But, it's a bleak icy landscape with no life to be found, who are they actually hiding from?

The group of boys quickly led them to an igloo. When they reached the place, the leader raised his leg and ruthlessly kicked the door open, shouting, "Ice Elder, are you here?"

"Thump!"

Ice shards fluttered in the air as the ice door was shattered by his powerful kick.

With that rowdy commotion, the two old men with snow-white hair in the house turned around and stared at the entrance.

“Eh? Snow Elder, you’re here as well. We were planning to kick the door of your house for a visit later,” the leader was brazen and announced it honestly, as he scratched his head in frustration.

The white-haired man who was addressed as the Snow Elder simply replied with a chuckle, before exchanging a glance with the Ice Elder and asking, “Should we punish them?”

“Yes!”

In a flash, Snow Elder leaped up and hauled the leader away, as he violently assaulted every inch of the boy’s face until he wailed and begged for mercy.

After a merciless bout of beating, he flung the boy from his house. He was thoroughly injured and barely alive, as he lay limp on the cold floor.

When the other boys saw it, they immediately became frightened and took a step backward in trepidation.

“Foreigners? How did you manage to enter this place?” the Ice Elder stared at Murphy and Little Pomelo with a piercing gaze.

As they had just witnessed the Ice Elder’s brutal violence, both of them hastily pointed at the group of young boys.

“I’m going to beat all of you to death. Are you boys brainless pigs!? Why did you bring foreigners in?” warned the Ice Elder as he extended his hand and created a long ice staff.

When the young boys saw what was happening, they instantly turned around and fled, as the Ice Elder chased behind them, brandishing his ice staff and berating them incessantly.

“Ice Elder, they are our fellow classmen. They’re not foreigners, that’s what they told us,” the Ice Snow Clan boys shouted in return as they fumbled about, avoiding the old man’s attacks.

“Do you believe everything they said? You morons, can’t you see that they look different from us?” Ice Elder waved his staff more threateningly, irked

by their flimsy explanation.

Soon, every one of the boys was lying on the ground, heavily injured from the old man's merciless beating. Only then, the old man stopped hitting them and ambled toward Murphy and Little Pomelo.

Both of them were absolutely terrified and could not help but stumble a step backward.

“Foreigners, this is the forbidden land of the Ice Snow Clan. However, since you were brought in by the kids, I shall let this pass. I won't punish you for trespassing on our forbidden grounds, so you should quickly leave!”

Despite feeling quite terrified, Murphy bit the bullet and opened his mouth, “Ice Elder, we're here to see you.”

“Me? Why?” the Ice Elder was visibly surprised.

“We're actually trying to find the group of people from the Cursed Clan that escaped into the Arctic Abyss many years ago. Ice Elder, do you perhaps know where they are?”

“The Cursed Clan? Hmm, I seem to remember something about it,” the Ice Elder stroked his beard as he squinted his eyes and fell into deep contemplation.

“Oh! I remember it now, I think they are there!” a contented smile suddenly appeared on the Ice Elder's face.

Murphy and Little Pomelo seemed overjoyed by his positive reply, too.

“Since you've entered this place, I might as well bring you somewhere. Follow me.”

Murphy and Little Pomelo were sincerely grateful and touched when they saw how reasonable and understanding the Ice Elder was. Even though the people here seem rough and violent, they appear to be quite amicable, after all.

Hence, they followed the elders to the back of the village.

When they reached a cliff at the edge of the village, the Snow Elder pointed at the countless frozen statues erected on the icy cliff.

“It should be them.”

Murphy and Little Pomelo raised their head and peered ahead, realizing that each frozen statue contained a living being that was trapped within it. When the artifact analyzed the frozen statues that were pointed at by the Snow Elder, a data menu promptly appeared:

[Zhou Sheng (Cursed Clan Elder)]:

Cause of Death: Trespassing on the forbidden grounds of the Ice Snow Clan. Thus, the person was forever imprisoned on the Ice Snow Cliff.

[Zhou Gan (Cursed Clan Elder)]:

Cause of Death: Trespassing on the forbidden grounds of the Ice Snow Clan. Thus, the person was forever imprisoned on the Ice Snow Cliff.

[Zhou Jin (Cursed Clan Elder)]:

Cause of Death: Trespassing on the forbidden grounds of the Ice Snow Clan. Thus, the person was forever imprisoned on the Ice Snow Cliff.

.....

They were completely thunderstruck when they saw the cause of death analysis notifications, as they had just presumed that the Ice Snow Clan’s people were friendly and amiable.

However, they felt even more dejected when they realized that everyone from the Cursed Clan had perished. What about the Prajñā Scarification, are we really left with no choice but to go to Naraka Realm?

Grief and hopelessness overwhelmed both of them, as their knees gave away.

However, a voice suddenly sounded from above, “Old Bing, Old Xue, who allowed you to bring foreigners here?”

Completely frightened, the Ice Elder and the Snow Elder’s expressions instantly darkened when they heard the menacing voice.

“Boss, listen to our explanation. This has nothing to do with us!”

“I won’t listen, I don’t care.”

A pure white figure suddenly leaped from the summit of the Ice Snow Cliff and landed before them. In the blink of an eye, the silhouette sucked both the Ice Elder and the Snow Elder onto his palms, before ruthlessly crushing their skulls against the icy ground.

“So, it’s my fault that you brought foreigners in, acted foolishly, and disobeyed the rules? Are the rules that I set as the clan leader too difficult to adhere to?”

Murphy and Little Pomelo were absolutely tongue-tied as they watched the two old men, who seemed extremely vicious previously, helplessly shielding their head from the barrage of punches.

That is the true image of brutal violence!

Chapter 164 - Out For A Stroll

Chapter 164: Out For A Stroll

After cold-bloodedly and viciously pummeling both of the elders, the white glimmer from the silhouette's body dissipated, revealing the true identity of the person cloaked behind the blinding glow.

Both Murphy and Little Pomelo were stupefied when they saw the person's appearance.

The person who was called the boss by the two elders was actually a young child that was about 7 or 8 years old. His eyes were brimmed with arrogance and pride, as he stared condescendingly at others with an almighty expression.

A notification instantly appeared before the two of them:

[Frozen (Middle-stage Ghost Emperor)]

Character Information: A descendant of ancient Beiqi's Divine Clan, the clan leader of the Ice Snow Clan, and the strongest general under the first King of Beiqi's command.

Ability Information: Early stage of Ice Laws control.

(Officials' reminder: Must not be angered.)

When they saw the message, Murphy and Little Pomelo's expression instantly turned ashen pale, as they trembled violently in paralyzing fear.

According to their previous knowledge, other than the Demonic Gods whose abilities were not defined, the strongest beings in the world were the Sea King and Tong Gua.

However, they were exceedingly powerful beings that were at the Ghost King level. It seemed incredulous and unbelievable that a young child hiding in this ice realm could attain such an immense power at the Ghost King level.

After massaging his hands for a quick while, Frozen placed his hands behind his back and stared at the two elders with heavily-wounded faces, saying, “Tell me. How did they enter here?”

“Boss, they were brought in by the boys. It’s really not our fault,” the Snow Elder hurriedly explained, afraid that he would be brutally beaten again.

“That’s true, Old Xue is right. The kids led them in, it seems that they’re looking for the Cursed Clan,” the Ice Elder raised his finger and pointed at the frozen statues on the ice cliff.

Frozen raised his head and took a brief glance at the frozen statues in the direction that was pointed at by the Ice Elder, before shifting his eyes onto Murphy and Little Pomelo.

“Who told both of you that the Cursed Clan was in the Arctic Abyss?”

“Tong Gua!” the two of them revealed his identity without a hint of hesitation.

“Who’s Tong Gua?” Frozen was momentarily dumbfounded, as he had never heard this name before. However, it seemed that the person was very familiar with the Arctic Abyss.

“Tong Gua is a Big Goose!” Murphy instantly replied.

“No, he’s a Celestial Crane. Apparently, he’s even rumored to be Beiqi’s strongest Ghost King!” Little Pomelo hastily added as well.

“Celestial Crane? The strongest Ghost King?”

Frozen was confused and in utter disbelief.

From what I know, the strongest Ghost King in the Land of Beiqi is supposed to be me. How did this Tong Gua appear out of nowhere?

“This Tong Gua is the strongest Ghost King in Beiqi? Then, who’s the current King of Beiqi?” Frozen asked again.

“The current King of Beiqi is none other than Lu Yan, your village’s network...” Little Pomelo’s words trailed off. She stopped herself from complaining as she was afraid of being hit by him.

“What!” Frozen exclaimed, as his expression changed drastically.

“Where did the initial King of Beiqi go?” Frozen asked in a hurry, feeling as though his chest would explode.

In the beginning, he obeyed the first King of Beiqi’s command to hide in the Arctic Abyss for a few hundred thousand years. However, he was utterly shocked when he heard about the first King of Beiqi’s deposition. Didn’t we waste all that time of our lives here if His Majesty’s gone now?

Frozen’s expression immediately darkened when he had an unpleasant epiphany.

“How can that useless Lu Yan become the King of Beiqi? I’m going to kill him now. If the previous king is gone, the next king should be me, as I’m the true descendant of the Beiqi’s Divine Clan!”

“By the way, is the Guardian Spirit of Beiqi still there?” Frozen seemed to have remembered something and quickly asked.

“Spirit Guardian?”

Murphy and Little Pomelo were stunned for a moment, before suddenly recollecting that Tong Gua’s Analysis Menu seemed to have mentioned that he was the incarnation of Beiqi’s Spirit Guardian.

“Clan leader, it seems that the Spirit Guardian is Tong Gua!”

When he heard their reply, Frozen clenched his hands tightly into fists.

“Tong Gua, right? Seeing that he’s not dead yet, it’s great! I just have to kill him again.”

The discussion about the Spirit Guardian reminded Frozen about the ancestral holy book called the Way of Fate that the Ice Snow Clan worshipped.

In the past, the holy book was stolen by Beiqi’s Guardian Spirit. However, it had to pay a hefty price for the theft, and was ruthlessly slain by the Ice Snow Clan. Much to his dismay, however, the Guardian Spirit was not actually killed in that incident. Instead, it had simply changed its name and assumed a new identity.

“Splendid!”

“Lu Yan and Tong Gua, both of them must die!” a menacing grin peered on Frozen’s face as he made the roaring announcement.

After knowing that the first King of Beiqi had perished, Frozen felt that no one could suppress him anymore. It’s time for the Ice Snow Clan to reign supreme across the Land of Beiqi now.

Murphy and Little Pomelo were tongue-tied as they watched Frozen’s gleeful expression. They did not have the heart to tell him that Lu Yan had disappeared.

“I’m so glad. Both of you, what kind of rewards do you wish for?” with his hands behind his back, he stared at the two of them and haughtily asked.

“It’s fine, we don’t need any. Now that the Prajñā Scarification is gone, we will take our leave now,” Murphy waved his hand with an extremely disappointed expression, as though all hopes were lost.

“Forget about that stupid Prajñā Scarification. Do you think I, as a descendant of the Divine Clan, can’t give you any amazing things?” Frozen rolled up his sleeves, seeming as though he was ready to strike at someone.

“That’s right, the people from the Ice Snow Clan have everything. We even have a holy book that can help one attain divinity!” the two elders yelled boastfully from aside.

“A holy book that helps one attain divinity? Where is it?” both of them asked immediately with bright, expectant eyes.

When he heard their enthusiastic reply, the initially conceited Frozen stopped laughing in embarrassment and let out an awkward cough.

“Ahem, ahem! The holy book is our clan’s precious treasure, of course, I can’t just give it to you. However, I’ll give you something in exchange.”

“Then, we want the Prajñā Scarification!” the two of them seemed extremely miserable again.

“What rubbish is Prajñā Scarification, what is that even exactly?” Frozen asked in annoyance.

“It’s the strongest skill of the Cursed Clan and the assassin character. No one in this entire server knows how to use the skill at all,” Murphy spoke bluntly.

“Cursed Clan’s strongest skill? Server?” Frozen was slightly befuddled by their incredulous answer.

“Aren’t the Shadows the most powerful assassin clan in Beiqi? How did it become the Cursed Clan from Naraka?”

“Shadow Clan?” Murphy and Little Pomelo were evidently confused, as they had never heard of the name or anyone from Beiqi mention it before.

After a moment of contemplation, Frozen spoke again.

“If you want to learn the strongest assassin’s skill, I can teach it to you. However, it’s not from the Cursed Clan.”

“Is it from the Shadow Clan?” Little Pomelo asked unconsciously.

“Correct!”

“Is it more powerful than Prajñā Scarification?”

“I have no idea what Prajñā Scarification is at all. Is it really that powerful?” Frozen began to feel restless, as the two people before him seemed to be very dense and slow-witted.

“Of course it is. It’s one of the ultimate skills from the Naraka Realm. If you can master it, you have the power to destroy anyone you want.”

“Isn’t it just some useless skill from Naraka...”

Frozen suddenly stopped speaking, silently swallowing the mocking words that he was about to utter.

When he heard about the Naraka Realm and ultimate skill, Frozen already realized how formidable and devastating that attack was.

The Naraka Realm was a massive cultivation system in the underworld, and its ultimate skills were notorious for their destructive powers. It was impossible for him to not know about them.

“Don’t you think it’s very strong?”

“It’s just... just okay,” Frozen awkwardly forced a smile on his face.

“However, even the strongest Naraka Realm skill is just a spell. That assassination method cannot compare with the Shadow Clan’s,” Frozen added stubbornly.

“Really?”

“Of course, it’s real. The Shadow Clan has even slaughtered gods... their assassination methods are truly unrivaled.”

“Then, did they really manage to slaughter the gods?” Murphy and Little Pomelo asked, as their hearts were wavered by his boastful talk.

“No!”

“Whatever. Clan leader, you can just spare us some soul coins if you have some. Otherwise, forget it. We’ll just return empty-handed.”

Murphy and Little Pomelo waved their hand in frustration, as they prepared to leave that forsaken place.

“Stand still!”

Frozen’s pride was severely shattered when he thought that he could not give Murphy and Little Pomelo a satisfactory reward.

Nevertheless, he adamantly insisted, “Even though the Shadow Clan failed to assassinate the gods, we still heavily injured them. This type of power is surely much stronger than those from Naraka Realm. In terms of assassination techniques, our skills are far stronger than them. If you don’t believe me, I’ll show you now!”

After saying so, Frozen waved his hand forward, as droplets of ice crystals materialized and fluttered in the air, forming a moving image before them.

In the image, a row of men clad entirely in black was challenging a red-haired man that was hovering in the air.

The man was veiled in a cloud of thick red mist and every time he moved his arms, the suns and stars in the sky would shift their position. With each fluid movement, the sky would alternate incessantly between night and day.

Despite the man’s daunting capability, the group of men dressed in onyx black did not flinch or cower in fear. Instead, they endlessly lunged toward the man, trying to attack him.

However, their methods were extremely peculiar.

There were clearly dozens of them there, but they suddenly merged into one person. In a flash, dozens of them emerged from the single silhouette again.

Every time the red-haired man unleashed an attack, the dark figures would shift and swap places with one another. Their techniques were strangely evil and completely untouchable, like a series of flowing shadows. The skill was so extraordinary and perplexing that the opponent could not seem to successfully attack them at all.

Ultimately, the red-haired man finally became so infuriated, the entire sky was stained completely in crimson red as the bright-red sun rose from the horizon. Under its intense glare, the world was bathed in its flaming sunlight and the masked men were finally incinerated by its scorching rays, turning into a pile of cinders.

.....

“How is that, is the assassination method good enough for you?” Frozen asked with a smug expression.

“We want to learn!” Murphy and Little Pomelo replied passionately, their bright eyes overflowing with gusto.

“Haha, look. I told you that our Ice Snow Clan has innumerable treasures. How can we not have something that can satisfy you?” Frozen raised his hand and waved, forming a dark light orb that was glimmering faintly in his palm.

“Take this, it’s a legacy of the Shadow Clan. However, our clan’s inheritance is not an easy challenge. Those without the Shadow Clan’s gifted talent would find it extremely difficult to understand its complexity. However, both of you can slowly have a go at it. Perhaps, you can discover a hint of its profound assassination technique.”

After he handed the black light orb to Murphy and Little Pomelo, Frozen hovered into the air and made a roaring declaration.

“From today onward, our Ice Snow Clan shall be set free from our contract of eternal isolation. Under my command, every one of us shall leave this place today and return to the Land of Beiqi!”

All the clansmen on the ground rushed out from their ice houses, and fervently kneeled down to worship their clan leader, Frozen.

After they had finished lauding him, the entire Ice Snow Clan immediately packed up their possessions and hastily gathered up at a designated location.

When they saw the preparations for the exodus had completed, Frozen and the two elders emerged in front of the thousands of clansmen.

“Clan leader, what lies in the outside world?”

“Clan leader, is the outside world as exciting as here?”

“Clan leader...”

When they saw that Frozen had appeared, the clansmen started to ask these questions with great curiosity, as they had never ventured out before.

Then, Frozen raised his hand, signaling everyone to stop, as the crowd immediately submerged into obedient silence.

“The reason we are leaving the Arctic Abyss, is for me to reclaim the throne as the King of Beiqi. Hence, we are at the brink of an all-out war, and all of us will be fighting endlessly to our deaths.”

Hearing that, the sea of people chattered noisily among themselves, with a strangely ecstatic expression on each of their faces.

“Fighting is great, I like fighting the most!”

“It’s simply great news, we’re going to fight all day, every day. The outside world is actually so exciting!”

“The people living in the outside world are so blessed that they can fight all the time. Let’s quickly make a move and join them!”

“I’m so jealous of the people in the outside world because they can fight to their hearts’ content. We can finally go out and have some fun with them,

I'm so happy!"

Frozen could not help but smirk when he saw the people's faces brimming with joy.

With a swift wave of his hand, he commanded, "Exit the borders!"

Immediately, a swarm of thousands of people from the Ice Snow Clan ardently dashed toward the Land of Beiqi, with Frozen leading them.

When they reached the edge of the Arctic Abyss, Frozen suddenly stopped, causing the clansmen behind him to follow suit as well.

His expression gradually turned unnatural and awkward, when he noticed a silhouette standing not far away from them.

A white-haired man was chuckling heartily as he watched them nearby.

"Hey... aren't you Little Feng? Why are you here? Are you itching for a beating, since it seems like you're trying to disobey me and leave?"

"Your... your Majesty!" Frozen shouted with an embarrassed expression.

"I heard that you wanted to become the King of Beiqi?" the white-haired man asked again.

"There's no... no such thing. I... I'm merely bringing my clansmen out for a stroll. We're going to return now," Frozen hastily explained.

At that moment, an intense hatred bubbled inside Frozen, as he wanted desperately to strangle both Murphy and Little Pomelo to death. How dare they trick me! I even gave them a present, yet they still deceived me. The world is a dark and dangerous place because of humans' evilness indeed! I hate them to my bone!

"Really... just out for a stroll?"

"We're really just out for a stroll," Frozen adamantly repeated.

“Why is everyone carrying their personal belongings for a stroll?” the white-haired old man asked again with a chuckle.

Instantly, Frozen turned around and discovered that all the clansmen were carrying large and small bags of their possessions, as if they were preparing to travel far.

“Your... your Majesty...” Frozen gave up, despondent and helpless. He felt that he could not find another excuse to keep up the lie any longer.

“Hurry back now! If you leave without my orders again, I will break your leg in half!” the white-haired old man growled fiercely at him.

“Yes, yes, yes!”

When he realized what was happening, Frozen hastily beckoned his clansmen to return with a wave.

Thus, the Ice Snow Clan that was preparing to conquer the Land of Beiqi, miserably plodded back to the Arctic Abyss once again.

Chapter 165 - Dark Shadow Twins (Two In One)

Chapter 165: Dark Shadow Twins (Two In One)

When everyone had returned to the Ice Snow Village, Frozen's expression darkened instantly. With a furious grimace on his face, he immediately ordered his clansmen to scour the entire Arctic Abyss for the two scammers.

Frozen felt that he could not swallow this bitter anger if he couldn't turn the two wretched beings into frozen statues on the icy cliff.

One must know that he had betrayed his promise to the King of Beiqi after being persuaded by the liars. If His Majesty punished him by breaking his leg, that would simply be a heaven-sent miracle. From his understanding of the King of Beiqi, it was highly possible that His Majesty would sever his head.

However, his heart was filled with doubt after meeting the King of Beiqi this time.

“Since His Majesty is still alive and well, why isn't he the King of Beiqi now. Why did he force our Ice Snow Clan into seclusion, what exactly is he plotting?”

Frozen could not make heads or tails of the situation. Hence, he personally searched every corner of the Arctic Abyss for that despicable little couple. He wanted to interrogate them thoroughly before slaughtering them, to find out the current situation in Beiqi.

Meanwhile, Murphy and Little Pomelo had already long departed the Arctic Abyss when Frozen was instructing his clansmen to pack up and emigrate.

Traveling at supersonic speed, both of them instantly headed to the Mansion of the Dead.

The artifact analysis indicated that the black light orb was a priceless inheritance. Thus, they could not contain their surging excitement and wanted to perform class advancement as soon as possible.

[Shadow Arcanum (Inheritance)]:

Inheritance Information: The inheritance contains the true significance of the Shadow Clan assassination technique. One can receive the Shadow's inheritance after using it.

When they read the information, they suddenly felt that they had received a tremendous reward without putting in any effort at all.

They originally went to look for Prajñā Scarification. To their pleasant surprise, they ultimately returned with a hidden inheritance.

However, they had discovered another troublesome hurdle after returning to the Mansion of the Dead.

Who should be the one that used the inheritance?

Murphy wanted to let Little Pomelo use it, and vice versa. Both of them quarreled for a very long time, but no one still wanted to use the hidden inheritance.

In the end, both of them simply could not reach a mutual agreement.

“Little Pomelo, use it. You told me that I would be the one that makes the important decisions,” Murphy said after mulling it over.

“But, I'm as skilled at assassination as you. We can both become much stronger if you use it,” Little Pomelo retorted.

“Listen to me!”

“No, I won't!”

.....

After trying to persuade and convince each other for half a day, both of them fell into unyielding silence again.

Eventually, both of them decided to use the most primitive and fundamental approach to solve the dilemma.

It was none other than to play a classic game of rock, paper, and scissors.

However, both of them could read each other's mind perfectly, and could sense every fiber of thoughts, causing the game to reach an unresolvable deadlock.

After another bout of struggle and bickering, both of them became mum, yet again.

At last, they finally agreed to decide who would be the true owner of the inheritance by tossing a pebble.

Murphy picked up a pebble from the ground and sliced it cleanly, shaping it like a coin. His name was carved on one side, while Little Pomelo's name was carved on the other. Whoever's name that faced upward after the pebble was tossed, would be the one that would use the hidden inheritance.

Luckily, the pebble did not stand on its side. After landing on the ground, the side with Little Pomelo's name could be clearly seen facing upward.

Thus, Little Pomelo begrudgingly took the black orb inheritance to use it.

When the limitless power of the inheritance coursed through her veins, the artifact was activated. It constantly digitized the analysis of the power within the inheritance.

But after about ten minutes of inheriting the power, Murphy, who could communicate with the souls, discovered that the date menu on his body was distorted, too. At the same time, the state of his body was also undergoing a transformation!

Suddenly, the noise of a game notification reverberated through the entire server.

[Server Announcement: Players Murphy and Little Pomelo encountered a peculiarity when undertaking the hidden class advancement. They have now attained a hidden character class: Dark Shadow Twins]

The menu for a hidden character class had formed on Murphy and Little Pomelo's screens.

[Dark Shadow Twins]: The peculiar transformation of the Shadow Clan's Arcanum Inheritance activated their inheritance process.

Class Introduction: In the utter darkness, you are me, and I am you. I shall fuse with your shadow and become your sharpest dagger!

Class Specialty: Life Sharing, Shadow Swap

Compatible Weapons: Dagger

Class Basic Skills: Shadow Flow (Fuse), Shadow Flow (Swap), Shadow Flow (Assassinate), King of Assassination (Gold Level Ability)

[Shadow Flow (Fuse)]:

Active Effect: Fuses two people into one. One acts as the body, while the other acts as the shadow. The user's health will be multiplied and the attributes will stack (no cooldown).

Passive Effect: In Twin Mode, the users' health is shared. As long as one is alive, the other person would not die even if their health was at zero. All the damage taken will transfer to the other person instead.

[Shadow Flow (Swap)]:

Ability Effect: In Twin Mode, both of them can switch locations at any time (no cooldown).

[Shadow Flow (Assassinate)]:

Active Effect: In Twin Mode, one is Yang and one is Yin. When attacking a target, a hidden Yin & Yang symbol can be marked on the target's body. If the target's body has both the Yin and Yang symbols marked on it, it will create a massive explosion. The damage from the explosion will be influenced by its attributes.

[King of Assassination (Gold Level Ability)]:

Ability Introduction: After its usage, Dark Night Mode is activated. the user's body will act as the center and cast a sphere of darkness fifty feet around them (Twin Mode effect will be halved to twenty five feet). The uptime is eight minutes, while the cooldown is one full day.

Dark Night Mode Introduction: After its activation, all the enemies that are trapped in the darkness would lose their senses (vision, smell, taste, hearing, and pain).

.....

Lu Wu and Bei Li were completely stunned when they saw the birth of a new character class.

For Bei Li, the Gold Level ability, King of Assassination, was the strongest inheritance from the Shadow Clan in the past. Other than the siblings that created the power, no one had ever been able to master the complex arcanum, as the requirement for gifted talent was too stringent.

In the game, a skill that was deemed to be Gold Level by the artifact had only appeared once before, which was the Gu Yu that was inherited by the Demonic God. However, Murphy and Little Pomelo were merely ordinary people. Yet, they could obtain the most powerful inheritance of the Shadow Clan by simply sharing their souls.

Undeniably, the incident was a pleasant surprise for Lu Wu. After all, it would be more beneficial to him if the players became stronger. He especially favored the players with gifted talents.

The arcanum of the Shadow Clan was extremely hard to decipher. Even though they seemed to have borrowed the strength of the artifact to perform class advancement, they still could not comprehend how to properly use their abilities. In order to help the couple realize the true significance of the arcanum earlier, Bei Li instantly edited an educational video of Shadow Clan's inheritance and sent it to them.

When Murphy and Little Pomelo saw that the officials had sent them a video, they were momentarily in a daze. They had never expected to receive the officials' attention because of their inherited class.

Meanwhile, the official forum was filled with avid inquiries.

Crayon_Shinchan: "I'll give you a minute to show us your attributes menu. How dare both of them advanced into hidden classes together, why didn't they bring me as well? (exasperated emoji)"

Xueli_The_Strongest: "I want to see it as well! I can tell that it's an assassin immediately, quickly show it to me. (anxious emoji)"

Peppa_Boar: "The hidden class of assassins has finally appeared! It's so exhilarating. I'm going to wait here for the pictures. I want to see it (+1)."

Invincible_Loneliness: "Two people advancing into a hidden class together, this is unprecedented! Looking forward to it (+2)!"

Watermelon_Taro: "I truly believe that the next hidden class advancement will be mine! Good luck to me!"

.....

While the players were fervently discussing the new character class, a video was posted to the forum. It immediately attracted everyone's attention, causing the number of visitors to skyrocket. Soon, the view amount would be close to 500,000.

[A detailed introductory video of the Dark Shadow Twins can be found here. I'm sharing it with all of you, so please enjoy it! (shy emoji)]

An educational video of the class abilities that was edited by Bei Li and sent to Murphy and Little Pomelo was attached to the post.

Without any hesitation, countless curious players clicked on the post to view it.

In the video, a man and a woman could be seen. The man was wearing a mask with a dark symbol, while the woman was wearing a mask with a purple symbol. As they stood back to back in the wilderness, uncountable rows of masked figures in black were menacingly surrounding them, like ants to sugar.

“Let the game begin, hehehe!” the woman’s voice resounded loudly as she let out a wicked laugh. With a swift fling, she tossed the dagger into the air, as her body fused with the man’s shadow.

“The time to slaughter is here!” the man declared viciously as he caught the falling dagger.

Instantly, the encircling assassins let out a deafening roar as they simultaneously pounced at him.

However, the man suddenly vanished and lunged forward in the blink of an eye. The dagger was twirling menacingly between his fingers as he brandished it around at supersonic speed. The pouncing assassins fell down, one by one, as their lives were taken by his dancing slashes.

However, the players found it curious that the man’s shadow kept transforming during the attack. It would alternate between different forms, appearing like a man or a woman, fused or split. Occasionally, even though his body and shadow were meters apart from one another, they would swap locations in a fraction of a second.

Especially when they were attacking the same target, the targeted opponent’s forehead would reveal a black and purple symbol. When the symbols clashed with one another, the targeted opponent would instantly combust and explode. The stealthy and eerie technique had caused quite a fury among the players in the forum.

As the slaughtering continued, even the shadows of the opponents would be controlled by them and turned into amorphous killers. The shadow arms pierced through their owners' hearts ruthlessly, killing with an attack that could not be defended.

Suddenly, the body and shadow in the video separated again.

“The time for the dark night is here. Can you see the blood-red flowers blooming in the darkness, brother?”

“I can. In this complete darkness, we are the kings. Cower in fear as you are imprisoned in our lightless darkness, weaklings!”

When they finished speaking, the surrounding area was instantly plunged into total darkness. Through a different angle of the video, the players discovered that the masked men were completely shrouded by absolute darkness, without being able to hear or see anything. It was as if they had fallen into a dark abyss.

However, the brutal killing did not stop. As bloody petals fluttered around in the complete darkness, the masked men fell to the ground consecutively with each strike. When the darkness dissipated, lifeless corpses could be seen littering the entire zone.

Then, the woman's figure appeared behind the man again.

“It was truly a satisfying bloody festival, brother!”

“Let's go. We'll go for our next battle, to slaughter the gods!” the dagger in the man's hand gradually vanished, as he marched haughtily ahead.

When the woman heard it, she hurriedly trailed behind him and asked, “Brother, what does god blood taste like?”

“I've never tried it before, but it must be extremely tantalizing!”

.....

The post swiftly garnered many players' attention, and was instantly pushed to become the top post in the entire forum.

All the players that had watched the video were astonished by the cold-blooded murder. The way both of the figures manipulated and fused their shadows, as well as switching their locations, was truly a puzzling sight.

The mage players were especially terrified when they saw the character class demonstration. They could imagine how horrifying and daunting it would be to be targeted by this kind of assassin. The assassin was so stealthy and agile, their spells would probably miss the target.

Forum replies:

Crayon_Shinchan: "Oh my god, the apocalypse for mage players like us has arrived. Thank goodness only two people have this class. Otherwise, I'm going to lose my marbles."

Ye_Xueer_is_the_cutest: "Oh god, why isn't it me. My heart is now filled with admiration and jealousy. (crying emoji)"

Peppa_Boar: "You really cannot mess with them. If these two players become so powerful after advancing into the hidden class, my big sword would be powerless. I'll definitely be toyed by them."

Xueli_The_Strongest: "As a Cursed Apostle, I just want to say that before I master Prajñā Scarification, I must stay away from them."

Invincible_Loneliness: "I'm so shocked, it was like watching a blockbuster film. Their abilities are a little too overpowered. Especially the power that switches off the light and traps the enemy, it really is too powerful."

Ao_Family_Sword_Style: "The ability is indeed very impressive. I hope that I can duel with them one day. But, I'm still not sure how I can find them when I'm completely blinded. Anyway, I can't wait to meet them!"

Cultivating_Longevity: "Huge new, huge news. The inheritance is indeed too powerful. However, I feel that the technique can only be fully mastered

by two people with perfect compatibility. This would be an insurmountable challenge for those who attain it. Keep it up, and also, congratulations!”

A_Large_Wolfdog: “The last Gold Level skill is too crazily strong. You can’t even find them if they block all the senses. I think that this inheritance can be ranked second in terms of destructiveness, just behind our Boss’ Demonic God inheritance.”

Crayon_Shinchan replied to A_Large_Wolfdog: “It’s not a fact just because you say it’s second. I think that it deserves first place. (laughing emoji) If you’re unhappy about it, bite me! (laughing emoji)”

Junior_Captain_Of_Demolition_Officers: “Did the author get it? If they have any interest, you can join my demolition team. (excited emoji)!”

Assassin_Creed: “It can’t be said for sure that it’s the strongest hidden class in the entire server, but it’s definitely the strongest assassin class. The power is too mad, shadow assassin sounds so horrifying.”

Watermelon_Taro: “It’s out of this world. If you master the class well, you would be overwhelmingly powerful. I can’t even attack you if I can’t see you. The assassination technique by manipulating the shadows is also ridiculously strong, instantly wiping out all the puny killers. Cool, cool!”

Taoist_Zombie_Hunter: “I suddenly have a bad premonition. I don’t know why, but I feel very anxious now. (shocked emoji)”

Crayon_Shinchan replied to Taoist_Zombie_Hunter: “Of course, you’re worried. You’re the server’s common enemy. (laughing emoji)”

Peppa_Boar replied to Taoist_Zombie_Hunter: “Just stay in the safe zone for your entire life. Even though the Evil Apocalypse has passed, I’m scared that you will create a Dead Spirit Apocalypse when you step out of it. (angry emoji)”

Watermelon_Taro replied to Taoist_Zombie_Hunter: “Please just retreat. Otherwise, normal players like me are going to be really afraid, I beg you. (crying emoji)”

Taoist_Zombie_Hunter replied to everyone: “Everyone, shut up! Wait until I forge Hiderigami, Then, I will challenge bosses like the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King solo!”

.....

The players avidly jibber-jabbered about the topic in the forum. However, every one of them agreed that the new hidden class was undeniably formidable. Soon, everyone acknowledged that it was a terrifying class that was on par with the Demonic God’s inherited class.

On the other hand, Lu Wu also asked Bei Li if she could revamp the class and alter it to become the second class advancement template for the assassins.

However, Bei Li shook her head, signaling that it was an impossible task.

According to Bei Li, the Shadow Clan moved as a team for assassinations and their execution required top-notch teamwork and high compatibility.

This sort of affinity needed to be perfected over eons. It could perhaps take dozens, hundreds, or even thousands of years to refine and burnish to such an extent. However, Murphy and Little Pomelo were an exception, as they were born as twin souls.

Their compatibility and affinity were flawless and impeccable, perhaps not even the siblings that created the Shadow techniques could rival them. As the hearts of twin souls were tightly intertwined and connected, their mutual understanding and connection far outranked the latter. Needless to say, it would be out of the question for the other normal players to have this type of compatibility.

Even the wise and knowledgeable Bei Li was filled with anticipation toward the little couple. She felt that if they master their class further, they might be able to surpass the Shadow Clan’s siblings, and become the Shadow Assassins that could lead the entire Beiqi Army.

Lu Wu was on seventh heaven as well to discover another two generals with unlimited potential and power. This time, he could add more names to his list of players with massive potential. Ah, it's so exciting!

Chapter 166 - Fengling

Chapter 166: Fengling

After the New Year event ended, the players were no longer disturbed by the Evil Apocalypse and the Liuli Coast was once again bustling with people. Conquering the ocean had become one of the main quests for the players again.

Right now, the Great Dragon Warship embarked from the Liuli Coast after all the members of the Great Dragon Guild boarded successively.

“Damang, is this island really as amazing as you said?” Chen Ziyu and the other guild executives were chatting at the deck of the ship as they stared into the scene of the deep blue sea.

“Of course. If it wasn’t for the Evil Apocalypse that arrived without warning, I would’ve already scouted it. Unfortunately, owing to the disaster, I had to rush back to the Mansion of the Dead. It was such a waste!”

“Can you be more specific?” Xue Li asked curiously.

“Yeah... the island is at the south of the Void Ocean, named Sunset Island on the map. I accidentally discovered it when I went fishing with a few brothers. As it was a newly-discovered island, I went to the island to have a look. Guess what I found?”

“What?” Xue Li sharpened her ears immediately.

“A unique herb. According to the explanation guide, this herb is useful for making Revive Potion.”

Upon hearing this, Xue Li immediately pulled a long face.

“I was expecting an inheritance, historical remnants, jewellery, or something similar. This herb is useless when it can’t be eaten raw as we

don't have a potion master.”

“You're wrong, Xue Li. This herb may not be useful now, but it might be useful later. If the potion master is introduced as a life character class in the future, it'll be too late for us to get one. Just think about what happened to the Netherworld Pearl last time, we actually sold it to the shop. What a loss!”

Chen Ziyu nodded, acknowledging Wang Damang's analysis.

Battle Online was a game with high liberty. It was highly possible for a character class like potion master to be introduced in the future. Since there was an island which was rich with these sources, they certainly had to go and check it out.

“Alright. The objective of our trip is to search for treasure. Perhaps we can find something valuable other than this Sunset Herb during our trip to Sunset Island this time.”

Chen Ziyu was moved by the idea. He accelerated the warship, heading for the location mentioned by Wang Damang.

At the Void Ocean, by Sunset Island Coast.

The light purple Sunset Herbs swayed gently along the breeze. Amidst the ocean of Sunset Herbs, an entrancing face, which was half-shielded by a hat made of flower petals.

Sun shone on the delicate face, highlighting the charm and exquisiteness of her face, making her especially beautiful.

Perhaps the sun had risen and the sunlight was now shining on her eyes. She slowly opened her eyes before she gently rubbed them. She lifted the fishing rod in her hands and looked at the hook expectantly.

“Haven't caught any fish? There's no meat for us again.”

Looking upset, she rose to her feet and stretched her body. Together with the Sunset Grass, her violet dress waved along the wind, showing her curvy

body.

When she was about to leave, a hint of curiosity flashed across the girl's eyes as a blue warship was sailing toward her rapidly.

After a brief consideration, her eyes glinted with joy and she walked to where the warship was going to anchor.

“Disembark and go ashore!”

Following Chen Ziyu's order, the members of the Great Dragon Guild disembarked the Great Dragon Warship.

After they arrived at the shore, Chen Ziyu turned to keep the Great Dragon Warship back into the channel. He began to assemble the crew and prepare them to recon the island.

At that moment, a beautiful silhouette, who was wearing a hat made of petals, appeared by the shore. Her enchanting face immediately attracted everyone's eyes.

They exchanged gazes before Chen Ziyu came back to his senses.

Immediately, he yelled, “Get ready to fight!”

After all, this lady before them was not a player and they were at the Void Ocean. Thinking that she might be the Sea King's subordinate or something, Chen Ziyu feared to let his guard down.

“Boss, she's just a pretty girl with no lethality... wait, she could very much be lethal!” Wang Damang said while staring at the girl.

“She's really pretty,” Xue Li, too, put on an envious expression.

“Do you have any meat?” all of a sudden, the girl suddenly asked with a smile on her face. Her voice was as melodious as the flowing spring water, entrancing Wang Damang and the gang again.

“Meat?” Chen Ziyu was flustered.

However, due to safety reasons, he applied his analyzing ability as he stared at the girl.

[Fengling (Singingwood Clan)]:

Clan information: Singers of the ocean. Their singing will increase the growing range. They are a rare Ocean Clan and are nearly extinct.

Character information: Unavailable

Reading her information, Chen Ziyu, who was still doubtful of whether she was a subordinate of the Sea King, asked right away, “What meat? Why do you want meat?”

“To eat, of course!” Fengling stared at Chen Ziyu as if he was a fool.

“I have some meat!” Wang Damang promptly pulled out a piece of NPC-processed jerky from the channel and tossed it at Fengling.

Fengling’s eyes sparkled instantly. She took over the jerky and started gobbling up the meat.

“Wow! Finally I get to eat meat,” eating the jerky, Fengling’s eyes brimmed with tears, while joy was plastered on her face.

The members of Great Dragon Guild were rendered speechless.

“You’ve never eaten meat before?” Chen Ziyu puzzledly asked.

“Of course I have, but that was about ten years ago,” Fengling answered as she chewed on the meat.

“Ten... ten years ago!?” the members of the Great Dragon Guild were stunned.

At that moment, all of them shifted their gaze to look at the fishing rod in Fengling’s hand before they noticed a bundle of grass which was hanging on the hook.

“Sister, you’re using grass as your bait?” Xue Li facepalmed. She almost understood why the clan was endangered.

Fengling looked satisfied after she finished the jerky.

“This is not ordinary grass. It’s Sunset Herb.”

“Do the fish eat Sunset Herb?” Xue Li was more confused than before.

“No, they don’t. They eat meat,” Fengling made the statement, wearing a somber expression.

“Then, why are you still fishing with the grass?” looking at Fengling, who was acting like a teacher, Xue Li was flustered.

“Yes, the fish eat meat, but I have no meat. Therefore, I can only use Sunset Herb as bait, hoping that one day there’ll be a stupid fish which craves grass and get hooked. Unfortunately, the fish here seem to be quite clever. I’ve waited ten years and there’s no such stupid fish,” Fengling recalled the years of hard work and appeared rather upset.

The members of the Great Dragon Guild were completely defeated by Fengling’s absurd logic. However, after a second thought, it seemed to be her only reasonable means to fish when she had no meat.

“This island has no beasts or any other creatures?” Xue Li’s curiosity bubbled again.

“No, it’s been said that there were some a few thousand years ago, but the clan has eaten them all. Now, we can only survive on eating grass.”

“Oh, by the way, do you have more meat?” Fengling’s eyes sparkled again.

“Take it all!” sympathetic toward Fengling, Xue Li immediately took out some meat pieces she stored in her channel.

Seeing the meat pieces in Xue Li’s hand, Fengling shuddered in excitement before she ran to her side almost immediately.

A gust of wind swept past, bringing a light scent that soothed Xue Li and the rest.

A game notification popped up:

[Received a blessing from the Singingwood Clan's halo, +1 health for every second.]

Chapter 167 - The Hope For Gold (Part 1)

Chapter 167: The Hope For Gold (Part 1)

The game notification stunned Chen Ziyu and the group.

This lady before them did not cast any magic, meaning that this lady was carrying a healing halo somewhere with her.

At that moment, Chen Ziyu and his team had immediately changed their attitude toward Fengling.

Although restoring one health per second seemed insignificant, with hundreds of guild members who were involved in group battles, if the area shrouded by the halo was wide enough, they would be able to recover hundreds of health points per second, and up to tens of thousands for every minute.

Currently, the healing halos existed in the game, but were only applicable for a limited time. A large-scale group battle would take some time before the winner was decided. Therefore, this unlimited health-reviving halo could possibly affect the result of a group battle. Moreover, according to the analysis, the lady's singing was able to increase the growing range.

She would be a powerful tool for group battles!

This idea hit Chen Ziyu and his company.

Staring at Fengling, who was carrying the jerky in her arms with a face full of delight, Xue Li suddenly spoke, "Sister, do you wish to have unlimited jerky?"

"Of course!" Fengling replied without any hesitation.

“Follow us on our journey then. As long as you’re with us, you’ll have an unlimited supply of meat. We also have a grilled fish stall at the Liuli Coast. We serve roasted meat, too...” Xue Li coaxed.

“Sure!” Fengling barely thought for a second before agreeing right away.

The members of the Great Dragon Guild were rendered speechless.

After realizing her abilities, Chen Ziyu intended to convince her to board the Great Dragon Warship, but he never expected it to be so easy. Looking at the innocent Fengling, Chen Ziyu was suddenly struck by guilt.

It was so easy to dupe her!

“However, I have to inform my clan members first. Do you want to come along?” Fengling said as she munched on the jerky, her cheeks puffed.

“Alright, let’s go.”

Chen Ziyu was originally here for the Sunset Herb. Although he unexpectedly acquired an innocent lady, he did not forget his main business. Therefore, the members of the Great Dragon Guild followed Fengling into the inner zone of Sunset Island.

“Fengling, are there a lot of Sunset Herbs here?” Chen Ziyu asked curiously as he walked in the silent woods and noticed the purple Sunset Herbs along their route.

“Yes, Sunset Herb is the most common plant on the island. Other than consuming this herb, we grind them to produce Sunset Powder which can heal wounds.”

“Sunset Powder? Do you have it with you?” Chen Ziyu was moved.

Fengling immediately took out a pack of powder from her straw bag, which was hanging around her waist, and handed it to Chen Ziyu.

“This is Sunset Powder.”

[Sunset Powder (Level Two Healing)]:

Item information: A healing medicinal powder produced by the Singingwood Clan, containing the spiritual energy of the Singingwood Clan. After consuming the entire pack, your health would be restored by six points per second and last for thirty seconds.

After seeing the attributes of the Sunset Powder, the guild bombarded their live chat channel.

“Boss, we have found our potion master! We’re going to be rich. Our Great Dragon Guild will rise in the near future!”

“Boss, let’s abduct their whole village. The Sunset Herb is everywhere and it is completely zero cost. We can then open a shop at Netherworld to sell potions, and soul coins will come flying to us.”

As he listened to the members’ suggestions, Chen Ziyu’s heart was beating faster.

Initially, he planned to harvest a great amount of Sunset Herbs and stockpile them before he could sell them in bulks when the officials launched the life character class. He was not expecting a clan capable of making potions on this island. This could really lead them to gold and glory!

With great excitement, Chen Ziyu and the others followed Fengling to her destination.

The Singingwood Clan’s village was surrounded by a sea of purple Sunset Herbs. A thick, old tree stood mighty at the center. Meanwhile, the villagers’ houses were built on the branches of this ancient tree, resembling an enormous fruit that grew on this tree. Their living environment was indeed dreamy and special.

Then, a strong wind swept past. The violet sea of Sunset Herbs swayed along the wind and the petals rose into the sky. The world before them turned completely purple, as if it was a dreamland.

“It’s so beautiful,” Xue Li reached out to grab some grass, feeling as though she had once again become a teenage girl.

It was then when Fengling pouted her red lips together and gently blew in the air. A light green puff rolled forward, pushing the purple plants to the side and a path was made before them.

“Let’s go. I’ll follow you after bidding goodbye to my clan,” Fengling said in excitement.

Seeing how gleeful Fengling was, Xue Li suddenly felt guilty, thinking that she might have gone overboard to lure such an innocent young lady to the outside world.

She was reminded of the members of the Wood Spirit Clan, who were once as innocent as Fengling, but had turned into what they were now. Xue Li could not help but shudder.

She muttered, “I’m sinning.”

When they reached the ancient tree, Chen Ziyu turned to look at the hundreds of guild members before he made an announcement in the guild live chat channel.

“Brothers, we have way too many people. Only Xue Li and Damang will come with me. The rest should just wait here.”

Upon receiving the order, the trio, including Chen Ziyu, ascended the grass woven stairs at Fengling’s heels.

[Entering the healing area of Quiet Ancient Tree, health restored by 50 points per second.]

The sudden game notification led Chen Ziyu and his gang’s eyes to this old tree. A faint yet pleasant scent was wafting around the tree.

[Quiet Ancient Tree (Ghost King Peak)]:

Detailed Explanation: The guarding spirit of Sunset Island had been cultivating for hundreds of thousands of years, but his cultivation had stagnated at the Ghost King Peak Realm. He then dismissed all the soul energy within his body in order to surpass all realms, hoping to live by dying. When the withered tree welcomes the day of spring, it will be when the Ghost Emperor reigns.

“Oh my god, this tree is as strong as the Sea King!” Xue Li’s eyes popped out of her head.

Wang Damang, who was standing to the side, instinctively touched the tree bark with his shivering hands. His fingers, which were held in the air, were pulsating.

“What are you doing!” Chen Ziyu yelled at him.

“I... I wanted to scrape it into some powder,” Wang Damang smiled nervously after regaining his senses.

“It’s just endangered but it’s not dead. What if you bring it back to life? Moreover, this is the Singingwood Clan’s turf. Don’t fool around,” Chen Ziyu condemned him on the live chat channel.

Looking at the King Level spiritual materials before them, Wang Damang and Xue Li heaved a sigh. They had no choice but to give up and follow him up the tree.

Along their journey, beautiful faces continued to peek out of the houses, which were hanging on the tree, scanning Chen Ziyu and his gang with intrigue.

However, after noticing the jerky in Fengling’s hand, their gulps could be heard resonating across the atmosphere, making Chen Ziyu and his gang wanting to facepalm.

Just how badly are they craving for jerky? Their desire for meat seems to be overflowing!

“Sister Fengling, is... is that meat in your hands?” a bashful voice came from a woodhouse on the side.

They turned to see a cute little girl, who was delicate like a porcelain doll, biting on her fingers. Light gleamed on the droplets that were hanging from the corners while her eyes were glowing with strong thirst for the meat.

Upon seeing this, Fengling looked at the jerky in her hand. She offered the jerky with her trembling hands.

“Little Duoduo, this... this is meat. You can have it.”

After Duoduo received the jerky, Fengling shut her eyes, appearing very distressed.

Chen Ziyu, Wang Damang, and Xue Li were rendered speechless.

“Thank you, Sister Fengling!” Duoduo said as she drooled. Her eyes were fixed on the jerky. She did not even lay a glance on Fengling.

After they bid farewell to Duoduo, Fengling seemed to have lost her soul along their journey. As she walked, she was quivering.

Chen Ziyu and his pals were flustered by Fengling’s disheartened expression.

How obsessed is this clan for meat? It’s as if they have lost her inheritance.

Chapter 168 - He'S Going To Be Fine (Part 2)

Chapter 168: He's Going To Be Fine (Part 2)

When they arrived at the woodhouse on the top, Fengling reached out to knock on the door.

“Mom, I’m back.”

A commotion was heard from inside the woodhouse before the wooden door was pushed open. An enchanting, beautiful lady, who carried with her a faint fragrance, appeared before Chen Ziyu. Her features were even more outstanding than Fengling’s. They did not look like mother and daughter as they stood side by side. Instead, they appeared more like sisters.

“She is even more lethal,” Wang Damang murmured subconsciously.

“Ling, who are they?” Fengling’s mother asked in confusion as she stared at Chen Ziyu and his gang.

“Mother, they have meat!” Fengling flaunted the jerky she got earlier in front of her mother’s nose.

“Gulp!” Fengling’s mother swallowed a mouthful of saliva before she quickly flung the door open.

“Welcome, my precious guests!”

Looking at Fengling’s avid mother, Wang Damang could not help but raise his doubt in the live chat channel.

“Is meat really that tasty? For the first time, I find meat so powerful.”

“Try to eat only grass and no meat for ten years before you talk about this topic again,” Chen Ziyu said in an indifferent tone.

Wang Damang shut up at once.

After being ushered into the house, a pleasant smell of herbs gushed toward them. Chen Ziyu and his gang had their eyes fixed on a silhouette that was completely covered by purple grass.

[Xiao Tian (Ghost General Intermediate Stage)]:

Character Information: The leader of the Xiao Tian Army, one of the eight mightiest armies under the rule of the Sea King. He lost the precious treasure of the Sea King due to his negligence and was removed from his position as the leader. He was punished physically to near death. After his direct subordinates risked their lives to salvage him, he escaped to the ocean and later drifted to Sunset Island before being saved by the Singingwood Clan by chance.

Character State: Heavily wounded (Extremely severe)

Chen Ziyu, “Hi...!”

Wang Damang, “Wow...!”

Xue Li, “Haha!”

Staring at the mummy-like silhouette who was wrapped in straw, a smile was gradually carved across the trio’s faces.

“We’re going to be rich!”

“Yes, we’re gonna be rich! He’s heavily wounded. Yes!”

“We’re going to earn a great profit! It’s time to harvest his remaining health and power.”

“Do you know each other?” noticing that Chen Ziyu and his friends were staring at Xiao Tian since the beginning, Fengling’s mother asked.

“Oh, we’re old friends. Of course we know each other. We’ve been looking for him for a long time. It’s a surprise to see him here. I guess we were destined to meet,” Chen Ziyu said with a grin on his face.

“Yes yes yes, he’s Xiao Tian. We’re close buddies. We’re not real brothers but we’re as close as brothers,” Wang Damang added.

With only his eyes revealed, Xiao Tian watched the men, who addressed him as their brother, with an indescribable fear across his eyes. [Read more chapter at vipnovel](#)

He certainly knew these creatures. They were the ones who led him to this stage. However, he did not expect that they would still not let him go. They were here for him even when he had lost everything he had and was barely clinging onto his life.

He recalled that these liars told him that they were sea merchants. Now, they were again lying to the mother and daughter duo of the Singingwood Clan, saying that they were his brothers. Xiao Tian despaired when he saw Fengling and her mother’s convinced expression.

Liars should all die a terrible death!

“Hey, Brother Xiao Tian, what got you into this state? As your brother, I’m heartbroken,” Wang Damang stepped to Xiao Tian’s side, gently patted on Xiao Tian’s chest as if he was extremely concerned about Xiao Tian.

If he could move, Xiao Tian would have bitten these shameless guys’ heads off.

“Brother Xiao Tian, your elderly mother is missing you dearly. She is talking about you all day. Since we’ve found you, we must bring you home regardless,” Chen Ziyu approached Xiao Tian as he said in a sorrowful tone.

Upon hearing this, Xiao Tian’s eyes were filled with despair. He knew what consequences he would face if he was really taken away by these liars.

He struggled as he began to sob.

“Brother, I know you’re excited to see us, too. However, your health is more important. Don’t hurt yourself,” Wang Damang quickly held onto Xiao Tian’s shivering body.

Fengling and her mother were both touched by the scene.

They were moved, thinking about how many intolerable days these people went through just to find their brother.

Xiao Tian put in more strength crying as he struggled.

Do not believe them, you guys! Dammit, can’t you see their cunning smiles? Are you fools? Don’t hand me to them, please!

Underneath, Xiao Tian had an urge to holler at the mother and daughter standing there. He wanted to warn Fengling and her mother, but his mouth was sealed tightly by the leaves. His body could not even move an inch as he was so badly injured. He could only blink relentlessly, hoping someone could read his mind.

However, Fengling and her mother did not even lay an eye on him. Their gazes had been completely attracted by the meat jerky in Chen Ziyu’s hand.

“Thank you for saving my brother’s life. I can never repay your kindness. Here’s some more jerky as a token of appreciation for you,” said Chen Ziyu, as he handed the meat to Fengling’s mother.

Fengling’s mother trembled as she received the jerky with both hands. Her eyes were fixed on the meat as if she was looking at a rare and precious treasure.

However, in the presence of guests, Fengling’s mother suppressed her desire to eat it right away. She put it on the wooden table before she turned to face Chen Ziyu and his mates again.

“My precious guests, your brother was discovered by a member of our clan on the shore the day before yesterday. He was dying. Although I saved him

from death's door, his health is still in a critical state. If you're not in a hurry, please give me three more days to cure him. I promise that he'll fully recover within the next three days."

Upon listening to Fengling's mother's words, Chen Ziyu and the rest were rooted to the ground.

They said in unison, "We're in a hurry. A great hurry, in fact."

The trio shared the same thought. They wanted to stop Fengling's mother from curing Xiao Tian. If she happened to successfully cure him, all of the members of the Great Dragon Guild together would be no match for Xiao Tian alone.

"However, if I don't treat him soon, your brother's injuries may exacerbate because his organs were badly wounded. It seems like he has been attacked by a powerful blow and a lot of his internal organs have been moved. If he's not attended to soon enough, he might have to face the end..."

"Thanks for your kind intent, but we can't stay any longer. My brother's injury will be fine as his elderly mother is also a skillful physician. She can revive the dead and grow flesh on bones. As long as he's still breathing, it will be alright. On top of that, my brother is really tough. He will not die easily," Chen Ziyu quickly added.

"Retch!"

Xiao Tian's injury was aggravated by Chen Ziyu's explanation. He coughed up a mouthful of blood, dyeing the grass before him red.

No matter how tough I am, my life is not for you guys to play with. Besides, you lied about my non-existent skillful physician mother. You're such liars! Liars! You'll die a gruesome death! I hate you...

Seeing Xiao Tian, who coughed up blood, Fengling's mother was stunned.

"He's really going to be fine?"

"He's going to be fine!" the three of them answered.

Chapter 169 - Fengling, The New Member Of The Great Dragon Guild (Part 3)

Chapter 169: Fengling, The New Member Of The Great Dragon Guild (Part 3)

Upon seeing Xiao Tian, who continued to cough up blood, Fengling's mother reckoned Xiao Tian was at death's door. Yet, Chen Ziyu and his gang insisted that Xiao Tian was going to be fine. According to them, as long as he was breathing, Xiao Tian's mother would be able to save him as soon as they reached home.

There was an old rule in the Singingwood Clan, saying that the doctors must be compassionate. They must do their utmost to help the wounded. If they were capable of saving a life, they should do all they could to heal the patients.

However...

Looking at the jerky on the table, Fengling's mother gulped and nodded immediately, "Then, I shall hand him over to you."

"Fret not. My brother seems ill as he is coughing up blood. But, in fact, he's actually very tough. He will not die even if you stab him twice now," Wang Damang said as he patted the dying Xiao Tian.

"Oh yes, mother, I have another issue to discuss with you," Fengling said.

"Fire away. However, you're already a grown-up and should learn to make your own decisions. You don't have to ask for my opinion all the time," said Fengling's mother while she looked at Fengling caringly. Then she reached out to ruffle her hair.

“Mom, I wanna go out to sea with them... they’ll bring me to eat delicious meat!” Fengling’s arms circled around her mother’s waist while she buried her face in her mother’s chest.

“No, you’re too young. How can you go out to sea? It’s dangerous out there. Do you still remember what I told you? Our clan was only able to survive because we hid away from the world on this Sunset Island. The older generation once had a similar idea of hunting for more food on the sea, but that voyage almost killed all of us. I will not agree to let you go.”

“But Mom!”

As Fengling spoke in a kittenish tone, she gently poked her mother in her breast. Chen Ziyu and Wang Damang could not bear to see the sight and they immediately shifted their gaze away. Meanwhile, Xue Li lowered her gaze to look at her chest before she turned to look at Fengling’s mother’s. Jealousy was plastered on her face.

“Mother will never agree. You’re my only daughter and I will not stand by as I watch you send yourself toward danger...”

At that moment, Fengling’s mother took a sniff before she set her eyes on Chen Ziyu. Chen Ziyu was taking out more jerky from his channel, one piece after another. There was even her favorite grilled fish.

Her mouth started watering.

“Fengling, when you’re on the voyage, you must take good care of yourself. If you’re in danger, you must learn to run away. If you can’t bear to live there anymore, you can always come back to me.”

Fengling was flustered as she lifted her gaze to look at her mom. Then, she noticed the saliva that was hanging on the corner of her mother’s mouth. Her mother was not even looking at her as she spoke.

“Auntie, don’t worry. We’ll take good care of Fengling and she will not be harmed. These pieces of meat are our gifts for you. Please kindly accept them,” Chen Ziyu pointed to the meat he left on the floor.

Fengling's mother looked at the meat before she nodded violently. Then, she took a glance at Fengling.

“Ling, you've grown up and it's time for you to explore the amazing world out there. You can do this! Mother will be here, waiting for your return.”

Fengling glanced at her mother before she looked at the jerky. She felt as though she was sold by her mother for a few pieces of meat.

Nevertheless, she had made up her mind. Therefore, she nodded.

“Mom, after I've finished exploring the world, I'll bring home meat that's enough to last you for a lifetime.”

Upon hearing this, a hint of sorrow flashed across Fengling's mother's eyes before she quickly nodded with a grin on her face.

“I'll wait for you to come home.”

Initially, Chen Ziyu wanted to abduct the whole Singingwood Clan. However, he gave up the idea and focused only on Xiao Tian. He decided to handle Xiao Tian before discussing with the Singingwood Clan about moving to the Netherworld.

After they made certain that it was alright to bring Fengling along on their voyage, they fixed their eyes on Xiao Tian in unison.

“Brother, let's go home to visit your elderly mother,” Wang Damang said as he lifted Xiao Tian and carried Xiao Tian over his shoulder.

Xiao Tian wailed in sorrow. This was too sad. I'd rather die at the hand of the Sea King than those of these liars.

Slap!

Wang Damang gave a tight slap on Xiao Tian's butt cheek.

“Brother, I know you're excited to go home. However, don't overwork your body and stop moving around.”

As they carried Xiao Tian, the four of them descended the tree.

In the meantime, tears fell down Fengling's cheeks. She continuously turned to wave her mother goodbye. It was her first time going somewhere far from home. Despite her curiosity and desire for the outside world, her heart was filled with the reluctance to leave her hometown where she had lived for decades.

When Fengling and the others disappeared in the distance, Fengling's mother heaved a sigh of confused relief.

“Old Ancestor, is this the right decision?”

She was her only daughter, and also her most precious girl. Her daughter should not be traded with meat. Initially, she refused to agree to Fengling's idea of joining the voyage, knowing how naive her daughter was. For an innocent girl like Fengling, the complicated world was certainly unfathomable.

However, during the conversation with Chen Ziyu, the voice of the Quiet Ancient Tree, the Guardian Spirit of Sunset Island, rang in her head, telling her to let Fengling go as it was an opportunity for their Singingwood Clan to rise.

“Do you know why I told you to let Fengling go?” the old, husky voice said.

“Even if I don't know exactly why, I understand your decision is for the best of our clan's future,” Fengling's mother spoke into the air above her.

“When they approached me, I felt an unusual soul. So I checked with the Death Talisman and I saw hope in them. It was a true hope. I don't know why they have a golden future even though they're weak. But, I know that their future is not ordinary. The same golden hope appeared on Fengling who is with them, too. Therefore, this is all for our clan and I hope that you can understand.”

Upon hearing his explanation, she was stunned.

She certainly knew what the Death Talisman was. It was a heavenly force discovered by the Old Ancestor during his near-death experience, wanting to welcome the spring with the withered wood and surpass the realm. The Old Ancestor only carried three breaths of the Death Talisman's aura. It was shocking to see that he used one of them for these outsiders.

She gave a firm nod, "Old Ancestor, I understand now."

She glanced again at the path behind Fengling and her eyes briefly glowed in excitement. Then, she entered her house.

"Meat... meat... meat... an unlimited supply of meat!"

The Quiet Ancient Tree was rendered speechless.

Along their way down the tree, they waved a tearful goodbye to the members of the clan. Finally, Chen Ziyu and the others left the ancient tree.

After seeing the mummy that was hanging across Wang Damang's shoulder, the guild members were puzzled. However, after they ran the analysis, everybody was stunned and horrified.

They had all been in the battle on Xiao Tian's Island, and were very familiar with the boss of the Ghost General level.

"Sir, this..."

Looking at the bewildered guild members, Wang Damang proudly landed a slap on Xiao Tian's butt.

"This is Brother Xiao Tian. This time we'll bring him home to see his elderly mother."

Upon hearing this, the guild members were flustered. However, their eyes quickly sparkled the very next second. They definitely knew the great value of this boss of the Ghost General level, thinking they would definitely get rich this time.

Xiao Tian began to cough up blood again, thinking that he would die of anger before he was killed. These liars were getting increasingly outrageous. Meanwhile, he swore to himself that he would seize any opportunity to take his revenge after he recovered.

Chapter 170 - Buddy Recruitment (Part 1)

Chapter 170: Buddy Recruitment (Part 1)

Before leaving Sunset Island, the members of the Great Dragon Guild harvested a huge amount of Sunset Herbs and added them to their inventory, keeping them for future use in order to increase their personal values.

As the Great Dragon Warship slowly sailed away from the shore, Fengling stood on the deck as she watched Sunset Island from afar. She was swamped with emotions.

Her long hair danced in the wind. She reached out and held her petal-woven hat in place as it was about to blow away. From the look in her eyes, she was slightly sorrowful and almost reluctant to leave.

“Sister Fengling, when we arrive in Beiqi, I’ll introduce many friends to you. Oh, yes! There’s also the Wood Spirit Clan who know how to brew wine. They’re fun people,” seeing the sorrow on Fengling’s face, Xue Li, who stood next to her, tried to offer consolation.

“Sure,” Fengling replied with a faint smile. Her charming demeanor suddenly left Xue Li, who was also a woman herself, in a trance for a moment.

Then, Fengling playfully stuck her tongue out, “Xue Li, let me sing a song for you.”

“Sure, I want to hear it,” upon hearing that Fengling wanted to sing, Xue Li immediately nodded.

Fengling blinked and put her hands together on her chest. Then, she lowered her head and began to sing.

An angelic, melodious voice echoed across the Great Dragon Warship, as if it was bidding farewell to a certain lover or telling a beautiful story. It soothed one's mind and all the members of the Great Dragon Guild immersed themselves in the song.

The warship sailed through the waves as her voice resonated across the atmosphere. Then, it slowly vanished into the horizon.

When the Great Dragon Warship docked at the Liuli Coast, the crew disembarked the ship. The first thing they did was to bring Fengling to the barbecue stall managed by the Great Dragon Guild. They wanted to treat her to a great meal.

Seeing so much meat on the table, Fengling's eyes sparkled. She refused to let go of the roasted meat in her hand even when her belly was stuffed round. If Xue Li did not stop her, Chen Ziyu reckoned Fengling would possibly stuff herself to death.

After Fengling had a full feast, the members of the Great Dragon Guild took her to the Mansion of the Dead.

All this while, they brought along Xiao Tian, who was still wrapped up like a mummy.

Originally, Chen Ziyu wanted to kill Xiao Tian on the ship to eliminate any possible sequel. However, the game notification changed his mind.

[Special Quest: Capturing the General of the Enemy]:

Quest Information: Bring the heavily injured Xiao Tian to Tong Gua's place.

Quest Rewards: 10,000 soul coins as reward, one Epic Level custom-made weapon (Level 55).

Chen Ziyu could not reject the temptations. Since he had advanced to become a Rune Master, he longed for a pair of custom-made boxing gloves.

However, it would cost him a great amount of soul coins and he could not afford to make one yet.

So, after some consideration and discussion with the guild members, they decided to hand Xiao Tian to Tong Gua, in exchange for the luring rewards.

After entering the safe zone of the Mansion of the Dead, Chen Ziyu received another quest notification.

[Special Quest: Buddy Recruitment]:

Quest Description: Make Fengling, the member of the Singingwood Clan, recite the vow below (500 words hidden)

Quest Reward: Fengling will become the NPC of Beiqi under the possession of the Great Dragon Guild. She will acquire a unique ability, Immortalized Soul!

[Immortalize Soul (A Unique Passive Skill Bound to NPCs)]:

Skill Description: The character transformed into a guild NPC will acquire an immortalized soul. After death, the character will be revived at the Guild Station after spending an amount of soul coins which is equivalent to the character's strength. (If no station is present, the soul will be kept temporarily and it cannot be revived!)

This notification greatly delighted Chen Ziyu and his gang.

Fengling was merely a weak woman. Although this area within the Mansion of the Dead was safe, nobody could ensure that the apocalypse would not happen again in the near future. If the players were killed as a group, then nobody could keep Fengling's safe.

Fengling was a game character just like Cha Na and the Rock Ghost King. Neither of them was at the player's side and could not be revived after dying.

However, this changed the game. If they converted Fengling into a NPC, this major problem would be solved.

The crowd then encircled Fengling, who was rubbing her stuffed belly.

Upon seeing this, Fengling lifted her gaze adorably. Her eyes glimmered in confusion.

“Sister Fengling, repeat a sentence after me!” Xue Li cried excitedly.

“No, no! I’m so stuffed and my belly might explode,” Fengling shook her head.

“After you recite it, I’ll reward you with ten grilled Hawthorn Fishes!” Xue Li had to show her trump card in this situation.

The Hawthorn Fish was a spiritual fish. Xue Li believed that Fengling would definitely fall for it.

Indeed, Fengling’s eyes lit up upon Xue Li’s mention of the Hawthorn Fish, “I’ll repeat after you!”

So, Fengling repeated after Xue Li, one sentence followed by another, and cited the entire vow of 500 words. Soon, the artifact detected the fluctuation of Fengling’s soul and absorbed it into the artifact.

As Fengling was not as strong as Tong Gua, Lu Wu and Bei Li did not show up this time. The artifact began to digitize her soul independently according to the program.

Within five minutes, Fengling was sent out of the channel again.

“Yawn... I think I’d fallen asleep just now,” appearing confused, Fengling lifted her gaze to find Chen Ziyu and the others staring at her expectantly.

“Sister Fengling, can you see it? Can you see the Guild Menu? We can communicate via the guild channel from now on.”

For a brief moment, Fengling did not know how to react until a notification, sent by the artifact, appeared in her head. Immediately, she understood what a Guild Menu was.

After making sure that Fengling had turned into a NPC, Chen Ziyu decided to hand Xiao Tian over to complete the quest before discussing the manufacturing of the medicinal powder with Fengling.

When they arrived at Tong Gua's Forge, the Great Dragon Guild members knew their guess was right.

Tong Gua's Forge was closed on a daily basis. The obnoxious warning sign was still hanging at the conspicuous spot.

Bang! Bang!

Chen Ziyu had no other way but to knock on the door.

As Chen Ziyu was knocking on the door, Lu Wu, who had been watching all along, growled. He woke the drunken Tong Gua up and told him what to do next.

Having no choice, Tong Gua could only get up to open the door.

“You're here? Leave it here. You've completed the quest.”

After Wang Damang placed Xiao Tian down, Tong Gua spoke again, “Oh, yea. Close the door when you leave.”

“Master Tong Gua, what about our reward, the custom-made weapon?”

After hearing that they had completed the quest, but all they had gotten were the soul coins, Chen Ziyu could not help but question Tong Gua.

“Tomorrow, come again tomorrow!” Tong Gua waved his hand, looking annoyed as if he did not want to be bothered.

Chen Ziyu and his pals had no choice but to step out of the workshop and close the door on their way out.

“Sister Fengling, we'll take you to the Wood Spirit Clan now. You can stay there temporarily until you have your own station. What do you think?”

“Oh, sure. I’d love to see the kind members of Wood Spirit Clan that you’ve talked about so much,” Fengling’s face shone with curiosity.

When Fengling described the members of the Wood Spirit Clan as kind people, Chen Ziyu and the others shot their eyes at Xue Li.

“I... I said they were...” Xue Li explained nervously.

As the crowd was moving toward the Wood Spirit Clan’s residency, Xue Li asked Fengling curiously.

“Sister Fengling, how much Sunset Powder can you produce in a day?”

“Sunset Powder? I have no idea how to make it!” Fengling blinked, appearing innocent.

“Cough... cough, cough!”

Chen Ziyu and the gang, who were eavesdropping the conversation, coughed. Meanwhile, Xue Li seemed stunned, with her mouth agape.

“You... you don’t know how to make Sunset Powder?” Xue Li, who thought she had misunderstood Fengling, repeated her question.

“No, I don’t. However, my mother knows how to make it,” Fengling squinted as she replied.

The Great Dragon Guild members were left speechless.

“Then, do you know how to make other potions?” Xue Li still carried a string of hope in her.

“Nope. It’s such a hassle to make the potions. Therefore, I never learned anything. I only focused on learning how to fish.”

This time it was Xue Li that was left with no words.

At that instance, the dreams of the members of the Great Dragon Guild were crushed. They were all glued to the ground, looking stupefied.

“What’s wrong with you all?” Fengling blinked.

Chen Ziyu and the others shook their heads and forced a smile, although they were all extremely upset.

To open a potion store and to get rich? All these dreams have been crushed!

Chapter 171 - Sweet Revenge Began From Cleaning (Part 2)

Tong Gua's Forge – Mansion of the Dead, Beiqi.

Lu Wu was left speechless as he watched Tong Gua lie back down on the bed, not caring at all about Xiao Tian. He then roared again, waking Tong Gua up.

“Aren't they just recruiting a weakling? It's such a trivial matter but still, I have to get my hands dirty. Sigh, one has to be tolerable when you're living under the same roof.”

Tong Gua was nagging as he got up from his bed, then he strode toward Xiao Tian and gave him a kick before saying, “Hey, repeat after me.”

Xiao Tian was speechless.

“I swear in the presence of reincarnation,” after finishing the first sentence, Tong Gua realized Xiao Tian remained quiet, so he fired another kick.

“Do you not hear what I'm asking you to do? Are you fooling around with me by keeping quiet?”

Xiao Tian cursed in his mind. If you truly want me to read that shit, then remove this leaf that's covering my mouth, I seriously think that you did this intentionally just to have a few blows at me for fun.

As if he understood Xiao Tian's condition, Tong Gua let out another sigh. With a wave of his wing toward Xiao Tian's mouth, the leaves were sliced apart in a second.

“You can recite it now...”

“Who are you? Where am I?” Xiao Tian asked as soon as his mouth was freed.

“Who am I?” Tong Gua’s face gradually brightened up.

“Little Xiao Tian, I busted your boss a few days ago, who do you think I am!”

Upon hearing this, Xiao Tian froze, he looked up to scrutinize Tong Gua carefully, his face growing paler.

“You... you’re the Ghost King Tong Gua!”

“Hehe, since you now know how much of a badass I am, you’d better behave, or else I have thousands of ways to torture you miserably. Also, if you are obedient, you may have the chance to get your revenge.”

“Revenge?” Xiao Tian was awestruck.

“Didn’t you get these injuries from the Sea King? Don’t you just loathe him?” as he spoke, Tong Gua picked up a bottle of wine and shook it, realizing it was empty, he then threw it on the floor again.

Upon hearing this, Xiao Tian’s heart was filled with wrath.

He had been working wholeheartedly for the Sea King his whole life, making his way up to become one of the heads of the Sea King Navy, but the Sea King ignored their relationship and had nearly killed him. If it was not for his subordinates helping him, there was no way he could breathe in this world again.

“I do!”

Since he had broken his ties with the Sea King, he had nothing to hide, and so Xiao Tian replied straight away.

“So do you want to get even?”

“Yes, but...” as he recalled how strong the Sea King was, Xiao Tian immediately went weak.

As the head of the Sea King Navy, he clearly understood how powerful the Sea King was.

His power was beyond the strength of the Ghost King Peak Realm, and on top of that, he had an enormous navy. Considering his own capabilities, there was no way he could get vengeance for himself.

“No buts. If you want vengeance, I’ll help you,” Tong Gua crouched down with a smile plastered on his face.

“You’ll help me?” Xiao Tian was bewildered as he looked at Tong Gua who was grinning from ear to ear.

If it was Tong Gua, Xiao Tian believed that Tong Gua’s strength was on par with the Sea King. After all, the news of the Sea King being severely beaten by Tong Gua back then was widely spread so he had heard of it before.

However, he did not believe Tong Gua would help him without a price.

“Just tell me what you want. I’m only left with my pathetic life, I can’t give you anything.”

“That’s it, your pathetic life is what I want. From now on, you’ll stay loyal to me... us.”

“Fine!” Xiao Tian agreed without hesitating. After all, it was only a promise. He had nothing to lose.

“It’s not as easy as you imagined, now repeat after me,” Tong Gua patted Xiao Tian’s head as he asserted.

“What do you want me to recite?” Xiao Tian felt slightly uneasy.

“The Oath of Soul Allegiance!” Tong Gua was honest. After all, with Xiao Tian’s level of understanding, he would grasp it along the way when he recited.

“What! Soul Allegiance!?” Xiao Tian was stupefied.

“After you recite this, I promise your wounds will recover and you’ll defeat the Sea King for sure. It’s not a bad deal, is it? Your pathetic life in exchange for the Sea King,” Tong Gua was not anxious at all, instead, he spoke in a calm and composed manner.

Lu Wu was impressed even though he was only watching from the outside world. Tong Gua could surely put on a show. Xiao Tian was totally falling into his lies.

“Okay! I promise you,” though there was a trace of unwillingness in his heart.

However, as Tong Gua had mentioned, the Sea King’s life in exchange for his would be worth it in every way.

Moreover, if he could not get treatment now, his health would gradually worsen, and soon he would meet his end. Perhaps committing to Tong Gua was not a bad thing. Although Tong Gua’s influence was not as great as the Sea King’s, his own strength was way stronger.

Seeing that Xiao Tian had given his word, Tong Gua nodded composedly.

“Good, repeat after me...”

After reciting the Oath of Soul Allegiance, Xiao Tian’s silhouette was immediately sucked into the Artifact Channel. The artifact ran on its own and began to digitize Xiao Tian.

As a result of Xiao Tian’s powerful strength, the digitalization continued for exactly half an hour. After the digitalization had finished, a gust of soul power flowed into Xiao Tian’s body, healing his internal wounds completely. Xiao Tian was sent out of the Artifact Channel later on.

Upon seeing Xiao Tian’s second appearance, Tong Gua patted his shoulder.

“Boy, take a look at what’s loaded into your brain and you’ll finally know what you’ve gotten yourself into now. Oh right, you’re now my

subordinate, kiddo. From now on, when I forge weapons, you'll make the fire, also, you need to know how to clean the rooms, do the laundry, and cook."

Xiao Tian clenched his fist, a look of surprise printed all over his face. His heavily injured self was restored in that short period, but he suddenly froze when he heard the words that had come out of Tong Gua's mouth.

I, a mighty Ghost General, need to make a fire? Do laundry? Cook? Clean?

When Xiao Tian was dumbstruck, lines after lines of messages emerged in his brain. At that moment, he finally came into a realization of what he got himself into.

"Boss... Tong Gua, are you a subordinate, too?" Xiao Tian pointed upward as he spoke.

"Yeah, I boarded the pirate ship by accident and I can never get down," Tong Gua lamented.

"So, who on earth are our superiors?"

Xiao Tian had never seen Lu Wu and Bei Li before, hence he questioned curiously.

"Don't ask what you shouldn't! Get your job done... don't you see all these wine bottles on the floor, go clean them. Damn it, how could I have lived in this chaotic house, it's literally a pigpen, go clean it up now!" As he pointed at all the wine bottles on the floor, Tong Gua could not help but nag.

Xiao Tian was speechless.

Although he had many questions about the identity of the artifact's manipulators, Xiao Tian did not dare ask anything further.

To him, individuals who were so capable of making such a horrific artifact must be an underworld god. It would not take too much effort to finish off a Ghost General like him, not to mention a sturdy Ghost King like Tong Gua

who had also submitted to them. It seemed like he had nothing to complain about.

Glancing at the messy house, Xiao Tian sighed. He had no choice but to start cleaning.

He would eventually get his sweet revenge, but first, he needed to clean!

Chapter 172 - A Live Assassination (Part 3)

After dealing with Xiao Tian, Lu Wu began to hang around the forum.

A post that had an increasing number of visitors had caught Lu Wu's attention.

[Subject: Who can kill Ao Jian on my behalf! The Demonic God Guild will offer 1,000 soul coins to the bounty killer as a reward for killing Ao Jian!]

Crayon_Shinchan: "Forget it, man! Ao Jian is a low-key guy, but I think his place in the Top 10 within the region is already certain, not to mention he is ranked first. Unless there is a team fight, or else no one can kill him alone. But, I think you can consider giving Ao Jian 1,000 soul coins just to kill himself (laughing emoji)"

Invincible_Loneliness: "The people of the Demonic God Guild have a big heart. To be honest, Ao Jian is really strong, I feel that I'm no match for him even when I'm already born strong."

Peppa_Boar: "This rubbish Demonic God Guild is toxic, I have yet to settle the matter that happened in Fallen Fish Island previously with you. You guys deserve to be bullied!"

Watermelon_Taro: "Well, tens of thousands of players used to be trapped in the Fallen Fish Island because of all of you. It serves you right for provoking Ao Jian this time. (laughing emoji)"

MyWifeIsTheMostBeautiful_InTheWorld (Murphy): "I'll take on the task. I'm setting up a live broadcast. (elated)"

MyHusbandIsTheMostHandsome_InTheWorld (Little Pomelo): "Task accepted. (elated)"

Crayon_Shinchan: “Fuck, aren’t these two the bounty killers that tore apart Zombie_Hunter? Since they have accepted the task, then let’s wait for a good show. Sit tight and watch the gods fight (laughing emoji)”

Xueli_The_Strongest: “It appears that they are the Dark Shadow Twins that had requested for a transfer in position. A competition between the professionals; I can’t wait to watch it!”

Originally, this kind of post was quite common within the forum, but it wouldn’t attract too much attention from the players. However, it was different this time as the two hunters that signed up for it were viewed very favorably by the players in the forum. On top of that, they were one of the top 10 bounty hunters in the region.

This battle immediately caught the attention of large numbers of players as each and every one of them placed their replies right below the post. They wanted to see if the group of bounty killers that had never missed could defeat Ao Jian, one of the most high-tech pro players recognized in the forum.

Soon, a live broadcast regarding the post appeared, then a large number of players joined in. The number of players exceeded 800,000 in less than half an hour, and it was still surging up.

[Bounty Task Accepted, Killing Target: Ao Jian is on the way...]

In order to be able to watch the competition between the expert players, the other players had even spontaneously provided the coordinates of Ao Jian’s location in the live broadcast room. After about an hour’s search, Murphy and Little Pomelo met Ao Jian in the Ascension Zone.

At this moment in time, Ao Jian was standing in a wasteland. His fingers were swirling continuously, while the Nine Spiritual Swords shuttled back and forth behind him. The wild boar with fangs he was going against was thrown to the ground before it even had the chance to come closer.

Now, a pool of black shadows came rapidly from afar. As it approached Ao Jian, two figures jumped out in unison, followed by two boning knives

chiseling toward the back of Ao Jian.

“Sword, retract!”

In the face of a sudden assassination, Ao Jian pointed to the Nine Spiritual Swords that was stabbed into the wild board with fangs. All of a sudden, the Nine Spiritual Swords turned back swiftly and sequenced themselves rapidly on the back of Ao Jian.

“Ding! Ding!”

The metal clashed and a seemingly ferocious raid was resolved easily.

Seeing that the attack was unsuccessful, Murphy and Little Pomelo quickly retreated and kept a distance of about five meters from Ao Jian.

Watching Ao Jian with the Nine Spiritual Swords on his shoulders, tension began piling up in their hearts. Ao Jian’s strength, after all, was far beyond any target they had ever come across. He was a real expert in the game, so it was extremely strenuous for them to win this battle!

“You want to kill me?” Ao Jian looked indifferently at the two who stood before him.

“We accepted a bounty task, regardless of it being right or not!” Murphy looked dignified.

Upon hearing this, Ao Jian suddenly smiled, “Actually, I would have gone to you if you hadn’t come to me. I originally wanted to challenge you to see how well you could flexibly use the hidden character class ability. Awesome, now that both of you are here, bring it on!”

After saying this, Ao Jian reached out his hand and waved. The Nine Spiritual Swords spread out behind his back automatically and arranged themselves into a fan, suspending in mid-air.

Murphy and Little Pomelo exchanged glances with each other. Then, Little Pomelo’s figure slowly integrated itself into the shadow of Murphy, while a dagger belonging to Little Pomelo emerged from Murphy’s left hand.

At the beginning of the battle, Ao Jian was clutching the sword spirit infusion in his hand, while the Nine Spiritual Swords levitated in the air behind him, hovering on top of his head. He constantly swept his eyes past them as he flashed from left to right, approaching very quickly.

“I found it!”

When the twins approached Ao Jian, Ao Jian stretched out his hand and grabbed something, then a red Spiritual Sword was in his hand. In a split second, he stabbed toward his left, which was the next landing point of the twins breakthrough.

“Hiss!”

The numbers representing the emergence of health points. This attack took away more than 100 points of their health. However, a smile crept across their face. A dark shadow under their feet stretched forward and appeared on the back of Ao Jian. Then, the figure of Little Pomelo trod her way out, stabbing Ao Jian’s at a tricky angle.

Ao Jian was dumbstruck. He frantically wanted to recall his Spiritual Swords. However, Murphy, who was in front of him, raised his dagger at the same time and stabbed his neck.

Having been attacked from the front and back, Ao Jian did not panic. The Nine Spiritual Swords in front of him spun around and stabbed Little Mo, intending to kill him first.

The moment had come where the players who were watching the scene were left dumbfounded.

The figure of Murphy began to blur, then the person that appeared in front of Ao Jian was Little Pomelo, who looked as if she was parrying his attack. However, Murphy, who was originally in an attack posture, stabbed Ao Jian’s back immediately after changing position.

-266 (Little Pomelo)

-198 (Ao Jian)

Two lines of health points appeared on top of their heads.

This time, the audience saw it very clearly.

In fact, after their bodies had separated, Little Pomelo who was standing behind Ao Jian was a feint. As Murphy was in the position to attack, she pulled back her dagger and went into defense mode. Then, they swapped bodies.

Their sudden change of position, which was completely interlinked with each other, was quite unexpected. Even Ao Jian had failed to avoid it, and on top of that, he had suffered a stab in the back.

The battle was still ongoing. At this moment, Little Pomelo who had flown backward after receiving a blow from the Nine Spiritual Swords began to blur. As she was being flung backward, her figure turned into Murphy. Later, Ao Jian felt a stabbing pain shoot through his back once more, as a number appeared on his head.

However, the injuries were not yet over. The passive effect of Dark Shadow was triggered at this moment. While Murphy and Little Pomelo each had a stab on their backs, they marked the Yin and Yang Talisman onto Ao Jian's body as well.

With the emergence of Yin and Yang Talisman together with their collision and explosion, Ao Jian shuddered. His health dropped directly to the bottom line, having less than 100 points left.

Forum:

Strike_Gold: "Fuck, I didn't know the game could be played in such a way; when one froze after backstabbing, the other substitutes in to take a blow! Awesome!"

Crayon_Shinchan: "Oh My God, I can feel the excitement running through my veins. How could they have such a good rapport so quickly? The great

part of the show is finally starting.”

Watermelom_Taro: “Wow, a feint and a wave of seamless double backstab. They really have great chemistry with each other. FANTASTIC SHOW!”

A_Mammoth: “I am convinced. This operation has been recorded. I have to research and get to the bottom of it.”

Peppa_Boar: “Perhaps they do stand a chance to win this battle, not to mention that they as Dark Shadows should show their skill to their opponents (eyes filled with expectancy)...”

Xueli_The_Strongest: “I suddenly have the urge to play this game with my boyfriend, and opt for a class advancement to Dark Shadow Twins to show off our love and skills (love)!”

At that moment, the battle was still ongoing. Even Ao Jian could not bear the two stabs that he received in a row.

His health had reached its limit. If he were to receive another blow, it would definitely be the end for him.

However, Ao Jian did not panic. He swung his left hand backward as three Spiritual Swords turned back and shot toward Murphy, who was in the midst of launching yet another attack. While on his opposite side, another set of six Spiritual Swords which were right in front of Little Pomelo flung at her fiercely.

Chapter 173 - The Realm Of Heart Sword

Chapter 173: The Realm Of Heart Sword

After hitting Little Pomelo and Murphy, Ao Jian left no room for them to maneuver. He began to perform the sword manipulation, intending to pull away for long-range strikes.

It was because he was certainly aware of the fact that if he were to let them come anywhere close again, most probably he would be hit by them due to their phantom tactics. However, he did not have enough health to survive any more damage.

Right at this moment, Ao Jian suddenly felt that the view before his eyes darkened rapidly. He was shrouded by infinite darkness – his auditory, olfactory, and visual sense were shielded soon afterward.

Two figures were quickly approaching in the darkness, but they were completely imperceptible to Ao Jian for the time being.

Two streaking glimmers appeared in an instant. Just as the audience thought that the battle was about to come to a close, the sound of metal clashing together could be heard. Murphy and Little Pomelo who were close to him, were fought off once again.

“How could you sense us!” Murphy said with great astonishment while looking at Ao Jian with his eyes firmly closed.

Ao Jian did not reply as his senses were shielded right now, he was totally unable to hear any sound from the outside. Nonetheless, both his hands were gently moving in the air. The Nine Spiritual Swords placed him as the center of attraction and continuously revolved around like a protector.

Refusing to believe it, the two of them moved in a flash and galloped toward Ao Jian once more.

“Ding! Ding!”

A clear sound could be heard. The black and white spiritual swords were floating on the left and right side respectively. Once again, he managed to resist this sudden attack.

The audience outside the field burst into an uproar in the face of this weird scene. The reasoning behind how Ao Jian managed to do it was beyond their understanding.

The battle was still going on. However, they could not break through Ao Jian’s defensive sword array no matter how they attacked, which made them extremely anxious.

Crayon_Shinchan: “Can anyone tell me why? Aren’t the senses shielded when the lights are out? How on earth did Ao Jian manage to find them? (confused face)”

Cultivating_Longevity: “If I’m not mistaken, it should be the Realm of Heart Sword where he manipulates the sword with his heart, albeit his five senses being shielded. In this realm, the spiritual sword will respond to everything that is non-kendo and make an autonomous defense.”

Peppa_Boar replied to Cultivating Longevity: “Do you think you’re making a movie? I would have been fooled by you if I am illiterate, for you explained in all seriousness and it does make so much sense. (smirking emoji)”

Invincible_Loneliness: “I think the analysis by the person above is very reasonable. Ao Jian will definitely perform Divine Sword later. (laughing emoji)”

Crayon_Shinchan: “The analysis by the person above is right. In fact, Ao Jian’s true identity is a sword deity in real life and the Realm of Heart Sword is no big deal. If later he reaches out and screams for swords, 10,000

swords will be flying over and that scene would be too scary for us to behold. (laughing emoji)”

Xue Li: “(Cover face) Enough, guys. Can’t you all just analyze the skills seriously and stop talking about these useless things. Study intensively and learn the skills from it. (slam table)”

Facing such a defensive sword array that was almost unsolvable, the two of them finally stopped as they were unable to break through the defense. Subsequently, the lights out effect diminished as well.

Ao Jian slowly opened his eyes and stared at Murphy and Little Pomelo, a flicker of excitement flashed across his eyes.

“It works as expected!”

“How on earth did you do it?” Murphy looked surprised.

Ao Jian’s face lit up upon hearing that.

“After watching the video you posted, I have been pondering on the method to crack this trick. By right, it’s totally unsolvable during the battle if the five senses are shielded. I began with this aspect and specially visited a person. He told me that the heart sword can be broken and this is the result of my research, the Realm of Heart Sword where there is no need to use five senses to defend, but I didn’t expect it to really work!”

The person Ao Jian had visited this time was none other than Wu Qing, the swordsman whom he wanted to surpass throughout his life.

Originally, Wu Qing refused to accept this challenge.

In his opinion, Ao Jian had become infatuated and if he continued to be obsessed with it, he would eventually harm himself. However, there was nothing he could do in the face of Ao Jian’s aggressiveness, so he agreed in the end.

However, this time Wu Qing was completely stupefied by the swordsmanship performed by Ao Jian, which was far more superior than

common customs.

What made him even more surprised was that he was caught off guard by the last sword manipulation that Ao Jian performed, he would have died if Ao Jian did not stop in the end.

In spite of that, Ao Jian eventually chose to let him go, saying that he was already pursuing a higher level and it was no longer important for him to surpass and kill Wu Qing.

Wu Qing was full of doubt as he did not know what happened to Ao Jian during this period of time. He no longer had anger and hatred but was filled with confidence and determination instead.

Ao Jian thought of the target for his next challenge before leaving, thus he enquired Wu Qing about it. How can we fight with our opponent if all our five senses are shielded?

Despite the fact that Wu Qing was puzzled, he gave an answer to Ao Jian's question, which was the heart sword.

Ao Jian learned that the Realm of Heart Sword was divided into attack and defense based on Wu Qing's words. Now that he had comprehended about defense, hence the next step, he would have to understand the attack!

A whirlwind of excitement swept over Ao Jian right now. Since the defense in the Realm of Heart Sword is feasible, the attack must be feasible as well.

As long as I could understand about attacking in the Realm of Heart Sword, everything that is non-kendo will become the targets of the spiritual swords. I might as well give it a try to fight against this seemingly unsolvable sensory shield.

"We can't break your defense," Murphy uttered as he put away his dagger.

"I can't beat you, either!" Ao Jian came back to his senses and waved, the Nine Spiritual Swords automatically lined up behind him.

“So this challenge is a fail!” nodding his head, Murphy turned around and took hold of Little Pomelo’s hand before retreating together.

“I’ll come to you guys, let’s battle it out next time!” Ao Jian asserted at this instant.

“Don’t come, we don’t like fighting!” Little Pomelo turned around and made a funny face at Ao Jian.

Ao Jian did not answer but he knew he would challenge them again.

It was his goal to pursue the ultimate kendo, and a powerful opponent would help him in sharpening his sword heart.

At the end of this battle, the players outside the field were astounded as well. They never expected it to actually end in a draw.

Meanwhile, the heat in the forum had yet diminished. They began to discuss and analyze the various techniques in this battle again. Many pro players even opened analysis posts for other players to learn combat experience.

“Murphy, 1,000 soul coins are gone, what a pity!” Little Pomelo pursed her lips, looking depressed.

“He is really strong, but we will definitely beat him in the future...”

Before Murphy could finish his words, a game notification appeared all of a sudden.

[Game notification: Player Qi Ming added you as a friend.]

Murphy thought it was a player who wanted to offer a reward, so he immediately clicked confirm.

A voice chat box appeared soon afterward.

Qi Ming: “Hello, are you Dark Shadow Twins?”

Murphy: “Yes, who do you want to kill? What’s your price?”

Qi Ming: “No no no, I just want to ask about the location where you got your inheritance. Of course, I’m just asking out of curiosity, it’s okay if you don’t want to tell.”

Murphy: “There’s no need to keep it a secret, it’s actually at the Arctic Abyss, which is the southernmost part of Beiqi. If you want to go there, remember to buy a lot of Revive Potion as the place is extremely cold. Also, there is a big boss of the Ghost Emperor Realm at the Arctic Abyss so try not to mess with him.”

Qi Ming: “Thanks for your guidance!”

Murphy nodded before closing the chat box.

“Ding!”

After the dialog box ended, an email appeared before Murphy’s eyes.

Murphy was stunned after opening the email for there were 288 soul coins in the email, followed by a passage.

Thank you for your guidance about inheritance. It’s a big favor and these soul coins are just a little token to show my respect!

Chapter 174 - The Treasure Of The Sea King

Chapter 174: The Treasure Of The Sea King

Void Ocean, Crystal Palace.

The Sea King was pacing back and forth with a ghastly expression on his face.

Then, a subordinate walked over with a quick pace.

“Lord King of the Sea, Coconut Island has been invaded. The foreigners have looted the spiritual materials in two spiritual fields.”

“Bang!”

Upon hearing that, the Sea King stamped his foot heavily, leaving a pothole on the ground.

This was not the first time. Recently, the islands where he placed the spiritual materials and treasures were invaded one after another, making the Sea King feel enraged.

In the Void Ocean, it was the first time such a provocative raid had happened. The Sea King was unsure which force was aiming at him.

“Did you manage to find out which force it is? Why are they so clear about the location of the islands where I placed the treasure? And how do they know the distribution of the guard force!?” asked the Sea King while glaring at his subordinate who was kneeling on the ground.

“After the investigation conducted by the people I sent out, we found that these forces have a similar characteristic. All their sailing tools are Specter

Ships and Specter Warships. Therefore, I suspect that it's done by some sea merchant force!"

"Sea merchants?"

Speaking of sea merchants, the Sea King recalled Squid, the sea merchant who was killed by Xiao Tian back then. He had paid a price for the incident to come to an end.

"We have already compensated the Western Trading Association, it can't be them. Besides, based on the strength of the Western Trading Association, they will definitely lose if they were to fight against me!"

The Sea King rejected this speculation after some thought.

However, if it was not the Western Trading Association, the Sea King could not figure out which trading association would be targeting him secretly.

After pondering for a while, Sea King spoke again, "Keep on investigating, you must find out the exact force!"

"Yes!" the subordinate quickly left after accepting the order.

While the Sea King was agitated by this matter, the official web forum of Battle Online burst into an uproar.

Right now on the official forum, a post about the guide was bumped to the top and had received more than 5,000,000 likes, creating the highest number of likes in the entire forum.

[Guide for the Sea King's Treasure in the Void Sea, produced by Little Beili: Version 1 (Official Sticky Post)]

Main Content:

Do you want treasures and spiritual materials? Follow the map, I've placed them there!

Little Beili's Friendly Reminder: Version 2 is still in the progress of collecting information, stay tuned.

(Attached figure – Area labeled where the Sea King placed spiritual materials.)

(Attached figure – Area labeled where the Sea King put the treasures.)

(Attached figure – Area labeled where the Sea King distributed the guards.)

There were a total of thirteen pictures in this top post. These maps clearly marked the storage locations of the Sea King's spiritual materials and treasures, and even the distribution of guards at these storage points was clearly shown.

This post created quite a stir in the forum.

There was particularly a label of Official Sticky Post on the subject of the post, which meant the content of this post had been officially recognized and all the internal information was true.

A large number of players immediately began to sail toward the Void Ocean, following the marks on the map.

As a large number of players obtained treasures and spiritual materials at the marked points on the map even more specific information was shared to the forum. All the players who were previously hesitant could not help but begin to swarm into the Void Ocean.

Meanwhile, those players who gained something paid a very high compliment to this post.

Invincible_Loneliness: "Thank you, thank you so much. Your post has helped our guild obtain an abundance of rewards. (Tip: 100 soul coins)"

A_Mammoth: "Oh my god, I really looted a batch of spiritual materials by relying on the map coordinates. (Tip: 100 soul coins)"

Swordsman_Who_Abhor_Evil: “Thanks, you must have made a lot of effort to explore these areas, this is for your hard work. (Tip: 100 soul coins)”

Ferocious_Beast: “Awesome, I found a material depot according to the coordinates. Although I was killed by the guards in the end, I got three spiritual materials and I just sold them. Now I have the money for class advancement. Thank you very much. (Tip: 50 soul coins)”

Fat_Happy_Water: “Our team managed to find the Water Curtain Island according to your map. We also found the treasure depot but we didn’t get anything as we were accidentally discovered by the guards. However, we still have to tip. (Tip: 50 soul coins)”

It could be said that this post had officially unfolded the Age of Discovery for the players.

After all, the main purpose of many players heading out to sea was to look for the islands. Hence, there was no guarantee that they would get something in return for sailing out.

However, it was different now. The storage points of these treasures were clearly marked on the map. Even if some players could not afford the ship, they could not help but buy the Specter Ship using the soul coins in their savings, planning to go to the marked points of these treasures to try their luck.

The whole forum was filled with the vibe of longing for the ocean.

The perpetrators behind this were naturally Lu Wu and Bei Li.

The main reason they would recruit Xiao Tian was to obtain the map of these sea areas.

Xiao Tian was originally one of the top commanders of the Sea King Navy. He knew the Void Ocean very well and even the location of the islands where the Sea King stored his treasures.

After completely becoming a member of Beiqi, he obviously had nothing to hide. Thus, he told them everything he knew.

In the meantime, Bei Li had produced more than ten treasure maps of the Void Ocean based on Xiao Tian's words. She then posted the maps on the official web forum using a smurf account and publicized the matter as a pro player. After that, she affirmed the authenticity of this post under the name of the officials.

As expected, this trick went very well. Many of the treasures of the Sea King were raided by players and a large number of spiritual materials and spiritual stuff were seized, bringing a lot of trouble to the Sea King.

Bei Li's smurf account instantly became a pro player in the eyes of the forum players, she was also awarded the title of God of Exploration by the players.

The tips below this post alone exceeded 100,000 soul coins. Of course, all the soul coins went into Lu Wu's pocket.

However, Lu Wu had prepared himself to bear the possible consequences of such a large-scale raid, which was to face a full-scale war with the Sea King.

At the current stage, there was still a wide gap between the strength of the players and that of the Sea King Navy.

Nonetheless, Lu Wu had something that the Sea King was dreadful of and that was Tong Gua.

Right now, the Sea King had no idea that the ability of Tong Gua was solely dependent on fate. This was why Tong Gua might be a potential force that the Sea King was afraid of.

Although it was unlikely for the large-scale battle to break out in an instant, small-scale battles were completely inevitable.

However, the players were certainly not afraid of the small-scale battles as they were completely immortal. While they were fighting each other, it would only incur an overall loss in strength for the Sea King Navy, but not Lu Wu and the others.

On the contrary, the players would gradually improve their overall strength in small-scale confrontations.

Therefore, Lu Wu was currently thinking of creating as many small-scale conflicts as possible over a large area, so as to consume the huge force of the Sea King Navy little by little, until it was completely defeated in the end.

Fueling war by warfare, this was the invasion route that all the players should take.

Chapter 175 - A Conversation Which Was Not On The Same Page

Chapter 175: A Conversation Which Was Not On The Same Page

Beiqi, Arctic Abyss.

A figure was approaching from a distance with a wooden staff in his hand. He slowly stepped into the world of ice and snow and his body was soon covered with heavy snow.

After learning that there was an inheritance in the Arctic Abyss from Murphy, Qi Ming made sufficient preparation and planned to explore the place to look for the hidden quest.

Qi Ming was different from Ao Jian. He had a steady desire to become stronger and had no edge at all. It was due to the fact that he was not simply doing it for the sake of becoming stronger, but his main goal for becoming stronger was to cultivate longevity. There were many hidden quests for cultivation in this game, thus he did not want to miss this opportunity.

Just like what Murphy said, it was very cold inside the Arctic Abyss. Bloody words had started to appear on his head as he explored deeper into it.

At this moment, Qi Ming waved his wand, a hideous evil ghost emerged from the ground and began to circle around him.

The stinging chill immediately subsided as the evil ghost had the ability to completely cut him off from the outside world.

Just as he wanted to go deeper, several figures suddenly appeared in front of him. The leading tall boy reached out and waved at him.

“Catch him!”

Several figures darted toward him at tremendous speed in an instant.

Feeling startled, Qi Ming quickly raised his wand to summon the ghost. However, they were moving too fast so he fell onto the ground before he could react.

“Eh! It’s not them, we got the wrong man,” after having a clear look at Qi Ming, the leading boy scratched his head, looking very embarrassed.

“It’s all your fault!” the boy next to him raised his fist and smashed into his face.

“Bang!”

The gang fight broke out, the ground was shaking and the snow was drifting around them.

Qi Ming slowly got up and dusted off his clothes. He stared at the teenagers from the Ice Snow Clan who were fighting together, looking rather perplexed.

At first, he thought it was a surprise attack, but it appeared to be otherwise. It was a private dispute between themselves and he just accidentally got involved.

After analyzing those teenagers from the Ice Snow Clan, Qi Ming’s face took on a look of surprise. He quickly walked toward the interior of the Arctic Abyss after some consideration.

I can’t afford to mess with these teenagers.

However, another silhouette landed in front of Qi Ming before he could even take a few steps. It was none other than the Lord of the Arctic Abyss, Frozen.

He reached out and grabbed Qi Ming’s shoulder, and then his body floated up in the air. All Qi Ming could feel was that the vision before his eyes began to blur. When he finally stood firmly on the ground again, he found

himself in front of an ice crystal cliff. There were many ice sculptures of creatures on the cliff.

“Foreigner, you have entered the forbidden area of the Ice Snow Clan, how do you wish to die!?”

Qi Ming was in utter confusion.

Looking at the message about the forbidden area of the Ice Snow Clan on the map, Qi Ming was somehow baffled. Aren't you the one who brought me here?

However, after analyzing Frozen's menu, Qi Ming could not help but be stunned on the spot. Never had he imagined that the boy in front of him was a horrifying existence in the Ghost Emperor Realm.

“Tell me, how do you wish to die!?” Frozen looked proudly at Qi Ming, his body hovering in the air.

“Aren't... aren't you the one who brought me here?” Qi Ming whispered.

“Shut up, you shameless guy. How dare you step into the forbidden area of the Ice Snow Clan without permission, violate the regulations of our clan and slander me.”

Qi Ming was speechless.

You are amazing, everything you said is right! Qi Ming suddenly had no intention to explain.

“Although you violated the taboos of our Ice Snow Clan, I can spare your life. But first, you have to answer some questions,” Frozen voiced out again.

Qi Ming looked up at Frozen, suddenly feeling tired. Just say if you want to ask a question, why do you want to make it so scary? I'm not even afraid of death.

“Please ask, Clan Leader Frozen!”

Frozen thought Qi Ming had compromised, he nodded his head, looking pleased with himself.

“Let me ask you, who is the current King of Beiqi?”

He had asked Murphy and Little Pomelo about this before, but they told him that it was Lu Yan, which caused Frozen to think that the King of Beiqi was dead. He almost made a big mistake because of that, so he wanted to make it clear this time.

“The King of Beiqi? The King of Beiqi is the King of Beiqi! I don’t know his surname or his given name.”

After all, he had never visited Tong Gua. He was just like most of the players who had no idea that Lu Yan was the current King of Beiqi.

“You don’t know? Are you not from the Land of Beiqi?” Frozen looked seemingly astonished.

“I’m a member of the Beiqi Army, but I really don’t know the name of the King of Beiqi.”

“Okay, then let me ask you, do you know a person named North Sea? Where exactly is he in Beiqi right now?”

“North Sea? I’ve never heard of him,” Qi Ming shook his head again.

“How could it be, he is the strongest in all of Beiqi. How is it possible that you’ve never heard of him?”

Thinking of the arrogant man who managed to suppress all their Beiqi forces at once, and reigned supremacy as the first King of Beiqi with a superior attitude, Frozen could not help trembling in his heart.

“It’s impossible. The strongest in Beiqi are the ghost kings such as Rock and Hydra, aren’t they?” Qi Ming was shocked as well. Why do I have a feeling that the two of us are not on the same page at all?

“What shit are Rock or Hydra... have you really never heard of North Sea?”

Frozen was flustered and exasperated as he could not perceive what the King of Beiqi was scheming. Why did his legend completely disappear from the Land of Beiqi? What's even stranger is that he's clearly still alive, but why is he no longer the King of Beiqi?

"I've truly never heard of this person," Qi Ming looked at Frozen with an odd look on his face.

"Impossible, that's impossible. Oh right, tell me exactly how the current King of Beiqi became the king. I don't believe that he has the strength to take over the position from my king!" claimed Frozen as he took on a ghastly expression.

"The current King of Beiqi is loved by the spirits of the Land of Beiqi. He stood high in popular demand and thus, naturally he has become the King of Beiqi," Qi Ming told him the background content that appeared when they first entered the game.

"What a fool you are, since when is there a popular demand in Beiqi, all of them fight their way out!" Frozen rolled up his sleeves in anger, his intention to hit Qi Ming was clearly written on his face.

"What I'm saying is true, the current King of Beiqi fought against the Black Dragon King for the sake of the spirits in the Land of Beiqi. He gave up his life for righteousness, turned into a fireball and died together with the Black Dragon King. He saved all the lives of the living beings in Beiqi!" Qi Ming sighed as he recalled the shocking intro at the opening of the game.

Frozen's eyes widened upon hearing this. Who the hell is the Black Dragon King? Giving up his life for righteousness? You think you're telling a story to me, is that it?

Last time, what Murphy and Little Pomelo told him sounded somewhat incredible. This time, there was an even more unbelievable one. There was even a Black Dragon King now. Frozen had a feeling that his worldview would be overturned if he were to dwell on it.

As a result, he clenched his fists and raised Qi Ming with his right hand.

“I can’t stand you anymore. Consider me a loser if I don’t beat you until you’re screaming for help today!”

Chapter 176 - Netherworld

a

Chapter 176: Netherworld

After unleashing a barrage of attacks, Qi Ming was flung onto the ground again.

Qi Ming was utterly stunned. His nose was bloody and his face was swollen from the beating. I had shared everything I knew, so why am I still being beat up? Why does this Ghost Emperor before me not have elite cultivation at all?

“Trust me, I’ll beat you to death if you spout any more nonsense!” Frozen clenched his fist, his angry face showing no signs of assuaging.

Qi Ming thought silently. Frozen might as well just kill me, what a bully.

Gazing at Qi Ming, who looked completely despondent, Frozen contemplated for some time before asking again.

“Then, do you know these two people?”

As he spoke, Frozen waved his hand and sprinkled glittering ice crystals in front of him, as the images of Murphy and Little Pomelo appeared.

Qi Ming replied curtly, “Yes.”

“I can let you go, as long as you promise me one thing,” Frozen smiled suddenly.

“Say it!”

After being beaten up, Qi Ming had no intention of helping him at all. However, he wanted to see what Frozen, who did not have elite cultivation,

had in mind.

“Help me find and kill them,” Frozen became greatly infuriated when he thought about the two people who caused him to nearly break his legs.

“Forget it, I can’t beat them in a fight!” said Qi Ming truthfully.

After watching the battle between them and Ao Jian, Qi Ming knew his limitations. Aside from self-destructing, he really had no way to fight against the phantom-skilled Dark Shadow Twins currently.

“You can’t beat them?”

After hearing this, Frozen was stunned for a moment. He lowered his head to mull it over.

“How about this, I’ll give you the ability to defeat them, and you’ll help me exact revenge. What do you think?” Frozen suggested after pondering about it.

“What can you give me?” Qi Ming had a sudden thought.

It was definitely impossible for him to help Frozen kill someone. Although he was devoted to enlightenment and eager to cultivate immortal inheritance, Murphy and Little Pomelo had hinted to him where the inheritance was. So naturally, he would not help Frozen kill them.

However, he extremely despised Frozen now, so he would be happy to swindle some benefits from him.

“What are you devoted to?” Frozen asked, looking at Qi Ming.

“The Ghost Sect!”

“Let me check,” Frozen nodded after he heard the answer. Then, he waved his hand and a small black dot appeared, hovering in mid-air. It expanded continuously as it spun around, causing its diameter to increase to over two feet in the blink of an eye.

Then, Frozen extended his hand into the black vortex and started to grasp around.

“Don’t worry, my Ice Snow Clan treasury has everything. Naturally, I can find the inheritance of the Ghost Sect for you as well.”

Qi Ming nodded in surprise, but a thought suddenly emerged in his heart.

Does this count as rewarding me after a punishment?

After fumbling around for quite some time, Frozen took a black ball out of the vortex and threw it to Qi Ming.

“This is the one. Although it’s a broken inheritance, as long as you master any part of this broken inheritance, you can learn a large number of spells from the Ghost Sect. What do you think, are you interested in this deal?”

[Netherworld (Broken Inheritance Class)]: The life-long inheritance crystal of the 23 elders of the Netherworld Clan, contains a large number of Ghost Sect spells. Some skills need to be mastered by oneself.

Qi Ming read the analysis of this black ball with a horrified look on his face. Of course, he knew how terrifying the value of this ball was. However, Frozen, a person without elite cultivation, handed it to him so casually.

After thinking about it, Qi Ming chose to use it directly.

Suddenly, a game notification appeared.

[Applying this inheritance will override the original inherited character class, do you wish to continue?]

“Apply!”

[Server Announcement, congratulations to player Qi Ming who has successfully advanced to the inherited character class called Netherworld!]

While all the players were in an uproar, Qi Ming’s body began to digitize.

[Netherworld (First Smile Stage)]: Advanced Inheritance from the Large Domain of Sen Luo, containing the power of 3,000 Ghost Sects.

Class Introduction: The Supreme Inheritance of the royal family of the Netherworld Clan from the Large Domain of Sen Luo, which contains three smiles. Reversing life and death with the First Smile, shocking ghosts with the Second Smile, and controlling the universe with the Third Smile!

Compatible Weapon: Soulstealer wand (a special custom weapon that can be forged by providing the materials and soul coins to Tong Gua or other forging NPCs.)

Default Basic Skills: 3,000 Ghost Sects (Gold Level passive ability), Netherworld Ghost Step, Soul Forging Seal, Ghost Realm, Vengeful Spirits Demonic Seal, First Smile of Sen Luo (Incomplete).

[3,000 Ghost Sects (Gold Level passive ability)]:

Skill Description: This is a special skill with no cooldown time. After using it, you can browse through the three thousand spells of the Ghost Sect. (Internal spells need to be mastered by yourself).

[Netherworld Ghost Step – Level 1]:

Skill Description: After casting this skill, the user's body will turn into a ghost form, increasing the movement speed by 500% and reducing the physical damage taken by 60%. In this state, spells cannot be cast. The duration is two minutes and the cooldown time is thirty minutes.

Skill Annotation: If the 3,000 Ghost Sect skills have all been mastered, the specific art of this type could be also performed in this state.

[Soul Forging Seal]:

Skill Description: After casting this skill on the target, it will be marked with a cursed secret seal, reducing their health by five points per second for two minutes (this effect can be affected by its own attributes).

[Ghost Realm]:

Skill Description: The user will create a Ghost Realm, and its duration is four minutes. Ten low-level ghosts will be spawned in the Ghost Realm every second, and they will target and attack enemies in the realm. Cooldown time is two days.

Skill Annotation: The strength of the ghosts that are spawned in the realm is affected by the user's attributes.

[Vengeful Spirits Demonic Seal]:

Skill Description: Targets marked with this skill will be haunted by vengeful spirits. Vengeful spirits will be randomly spawned near the target to attack them. The duration is ten minutes and the cooldown is for thirty minutes.

[The First Smile of Sen Luo (Incomplete)]:

Skill Description: The First Smile of Sen Luo reverses life and death, this skill is incomplete and has to be mastered by the player. The active effect cannot be displayed if the skill is not complete yet.

Active Effect: Unknown

Passive Effect: The seal of the Sen Luo Netherworld Clan (The Royal Family of the Large Domain of Sen Luo)

Feeling the spiritual power of the Ghost Sect flowing through his body, Qi Ming's heart began to swell with excitement.

He knew that this was the Ghost Sect's power that he had been pursuing throughout his entire life. He had lived in seclusion on the snow-capped mountaintops and worked hard for a hundred years for this, yet he had never obtained it.

However, he did not expect to obtain it so easily in the game world. Undoubtedly, Qi Ming felt extremely touched and excited.

On the other hand, Frozen's eyes widened when he found out that Qi Ming's aura had changed.

“You... you have mastered the power of the Netherworld Ghost Sect?”
Frozen asked in disbelief.

The Netherworld Inheritance Pearl was obtained after he had beheaded and killed all the elders of the Netherworld Clan hundreds of thousands of years ago.

At the time, Frozen had secretly pilfered some Ghost Sect spells from it. However, he discarded them in the Ice Snow Clan treasury because they were incompatible with his ability. After all, this was also an extremely high-level inheritance.

However, the person before him had only just obtained the inheritance, yet he had already mastered its arc and completely transformed the energy system flowing in his body. It was simply too incredible for Frozen to believe.

He’s a genius. He’s simply a peerless genius. I have never seen the existence of such a terrifying genius in my life.

Frozen was completely unaware of the artifact’s existence, so all of this seemed like a miracle to him. He was thoroughly flabbergasted by Qi Ming’s talent.

“Thank you so much!” Qi Ming’s eyes flashed with excitement, as he stood up and saluted Frozen.

Qi Ming was not overly impressed when he heard Frozen shower him with compliments, claiming that he was a genius.

In the dharma-ending age, anyone who could cultivate was a genius, and he was the crème de la crème of them all. Hence, Qi Ming casually accepted it even though he was slightly embarrassed by Frozen’s praise.

“Ahem... ahem... boy, your talent is quite exceptional. What do you think, are you interested in joining our Ice Snow Clan and becoming one of us?”

Chapter 177 - Hysterical Experiments On The Brink Of Death

Chapter 177: Hysterical Experiments On The Brink Of Death

Facing Qi Ming, an extremely talented person, Frozen suddenly had an impulse to take him under his command.

After all, there were not many men with such talents in all of Beiqi. Being a man with a great vision, Frozen was as joyful as a hunter who had just found his next prey.

“You want me to join the Ice Snow Clan?” Qi Ming was stunned.

He instinctively took a glance at the list of quests. Noticing that there was no notification, he shook his head.

“Why? You’re looking down on the Ice Snow Clan?” Frozen suddenly looked mad as he rolled up his sleeves.

“No, no, no. I’m a member of the army of Beiqi. Besides, I am not one of your original members. How can I join the Ice Snow Clan?”

“So, what? You can swear by your soul, pledge your allegiance and loyalty to the Ice Snow Clan. You would immediately become one of us.”

Hearing this, Qi Ming stared at them with his widened eyes. Swearing on my soul is too wicked.

Although this was a game, Qi Ming dared not take this risk. After all, he knew how cult-like the game was, and he did not want to imagine the consequences he would have to face if the pledge came true.

Frozen was so aggressive, though, and Qi Ming had no idea how to deal with him.

After giving it another thought, he replied, “Clan leader, how about I kill those two first, before we discuss this matter again?”

After a few seconds of silence, Frozen nodded. He vanished and reappeared behind Qi Ming before he slapped him on the back.

“I have injected soul-eating worms into your body. I will remove them once you finish the task. Otherwise, seven days later, your soul will be eaten, and you will definitely die.”

When Frozen finished talking, Qi Ming felt a burn behind him, and then a notification appeared.

[Notification: You have been invaded by soul-eating worms and your soul has been infested with parasites.]

[Notification: Failed infestation. The soul-eating worms are gradually dying. Ten minutes until their death.]

Seeing the two notifications, Qi Ming grimaced as he looked at Frozen’s gloating face.

“Well, do you feel the pain from the burning of your soul? Now, the pain is still mild. If you kill those two people as soon as possible and bring their heads to me, I will resolve it for you. Otherwise, the pain will continue to intensify and you will suffer!”

Glowering, Qi Ming nodded. He threw a glance at the clock before he spoke nervously, “Clan leader, then I shall not delay. I’ll start at once, and will soon return with two heads!”

“Good! I’ll walk you there!”

In the blink of an eye, Frozen grabbed Qi Ming by his shoulder, and flew him away before they appeared at the entrance of Ice Snow Village.

After landing, Qi Ming cupped his hands together and bid adieu to Frozen, “Farewell, clan leader!”

Frozen nodded arrogantly and flew back into Ice Snow Village.

After Frozen left, Qi Ming immediately activated the Netherworld Ghost Step and ran toward the Arctic Abyss.

The soul-eating worms were about to die. He was afraid that Frozen could sense the worms’ death and capture him again. Without a second thought, he sprinted away from Ice Snow Village.

With a speed bonus of 500%, Qi Ming, who was in phantom mode, acted like a ghost as he shuttled quickly through the ice and snow.

Ten minutes later...

Another notification popped up in Qi Ming’s head.

[Notification: The soul-eating worms are dead!]

At the same time, standing at the top of the ice crystal cliff and admiring the ice sculpture below, Frozen shuddered before he revealed his ferocious face. All of a sudden, he rose in the air and swooshed toward the edge of the Arctic Abyss.

That was when he sensed the death of the soul-eating worms. He did not know how Qi Ming did it, but at the moment, he could not allow him to escape from the Arctic Abyss. Otherwise, he would not be able to guarantee that Qi Ming would obey him.

At that time, Qi Ming had run to the border of the Arctic Abyss. Looking at the outer world which was only less than a hundred yards away, Qi Ming accelerated his pace.

“Stop running!” an enraged voice rumbled behind his back.

Hearing the roar that was coming at him, Qi Ming sped up.

Just as Qi Ming crossed the border, Frozen appeared at the border.

Looking at Qi Ming who continued to sprint forward, Frozen paused in his tracks.

He stared at the blue ice crystal line that separated the Arctic Abyss from the outer world. Frozen grimaced as his subconscious told him to take a step forward and cross the line. However, he quickly retreated before he could even land his foot.

He only needed a few seconds to capture Qi Ming, but he knew the price he would have to pay for leaving the Arctic Abyss.

The last time he tried to leave, he was warned and threatened, saying that his legs would be fractured if he ever stepped out of the Arctic Abyss. Knowing North Sea, he instinctively knew that if he left, he would be killed, not just have his legs broken.

“Ahhhhh!” Frozen was so mad at the moment and he let out a cry angrily.

As he cried, the ice spikes around him were removed from the ground and turned the area into an ice prison.

Hearing the loud noise coming from behind, Qi Ming turned around, only to find an angry Frozen glaring at him from afar. Yet, he was thankfully not following him.

This puzzled Qi Ming, but he stopped and eyed Frozen up.

“Come back to me!” looking at Qi Ming, Frozen became furious again.

“Can’t you get out of that place?” Qi Ming asked curiously.

“Come back now!” Frozen did not answer his question. Instead, he shouted in fury.

“No way!”

After he learned that Frozen could not leave the Arctic Abyss, Qi Ming was immediately put at ease. He put on a smile.

“You ungrateful fellow, I gave you this inheritance!” there was hate in Frozen’s eyes.

“You have beaten me up, and I took a share of your inheritance, which makes us even. Besides, the two people you told me about were actually kind to me. How could I bite the hand that feeds me!?” Qi Ming said solemnly.

Upon hearing this, Frozen was extremely upset. After all the time he had spent with these men, they were actually a group of people who came to steal his own inheritance. They are so shameless.

“Are you coming back or not?”

“No!”

“Do you believe that I’m going to come out and beat you to death?”

“I don’t believe you’ll do that!”

“Well, in that case, I will get you now!”

Angrily, he lifted his foot, intending to step out of the border. However, before his foot hit the ground, he quickly pulled it back, and he quickly checked his surroundings, as if to see if anyone was watching him.

After confirming that there was no one around, he raised his foot again and timidly extended it a little. But soon, he nervously pulled it back again.

Qi Ming was once again rendered speechless.

Frozen’s expression reminded Qi Ming of a picture posted by the players in the forum labeled with hysterical experiments on the brink of death.

Frozen now looked exactly like the man in the picture.

After five or six attempts, Frozen grit his teeth, and recklessly crossed the line, galloping toward Qi Ming.

Startled, Qi Ming quickly turned and sprinted.

Meanwhile, the smile on Frozen's face slowly turned ruthless and ferocious...

“Boom!”

With a loud bang, Frozen was thrown back into the Arctic Abyss at a speed three times faster than the current land speed record.

Chapter 178 - The Purpose Of Having A Dream

Chapter 178: The Purpose Of Having A Dream

Following the loud bang, Frozen, who was about to reach Qi Ming, was thrown back into the Arctic Abyss at an extreme speed.

Although he heard the loud noise behind him, Qi Ming dared not look back. Instead, he hastened his pace and disappeared into the distance.

Feeling the pain in his chest, Frozen looked extremely frightened because he knew that his boss had arrived.

At that instant, a figure appeared above the pothole. He smiled as he extended his hand.

“Oops, why are you so careless? Come on, let me help you up!”

“My... my king. I'll get up by myself!” Frozen quickly climbed out of the pothole.

“My king, why do you have time to visit? There's a situation in my clan. I'll have to go back and take care of it first,” as he said it, he turned around, wanting to leave.

However, as soon as he levitated, he was kicked back to the ground.

“Why are you in such a hurry to go back? Come on, I'll show you around,” with that, North Sea pulled Frozen by his hand and dragged him to the border.

“My king, I'm not going, I'm not going with you!” Frozen cried with a face full of despair.

At this time, Frozen completely lost his previous arrogant temperament. Instead, he appeared more like a crying child who was about to be punished.

“You did a good experiment. Do you mind showing me again?” looking at Frozen, the white-haired old man smiled grimly.

“My king, I will not repeat my mistake. I admit that I’m at fault!” Frozen knelt on the ground, acting like an innocent child.

“If you dare do it again, I’ll chop off any foot that you put out!” the old man glared at him, as his aura formed a menacing white tiger behind him. Immediately, Frozen shrank back in fear.

“My king, I know I’m wrong. Please don’t hit me!” Frozen seemed to know what was going to happen next. He quickly begged for mercy again as he wrapped his head with his arms.

However, the old man did not attack. He turned to look at the Arctic Abyss before he shifted his gaze back to Frozen.

“Frozen, what is your greatest dream?”

Upon hearing that, Frozen slowly let go of his head, his eyes bewildered.

“I... I only want to lead a peaceful and quiet life,” Frozen answered after giving it some thought.

“Thud!”

Listening to his answer, the white-haired old man kicked Frozen in the butt.

“Even a pig can notice your ambition. Yet, you want to hide it from me. Not only do you want to retrieve your power in Beiqi, you also want to become the king of Beiqi!”

The white-haired old man’s words frightened Frozen. Nervously, Frozen bowed his head.

He yelled, “My king, I have never wanted to be the king of Beiqi. I am absolutely loyal to you. You must not believe the rumors.”

“Come on, don’t do this to me. I can understand how you want to be the king of Beiqi because I used to have the same idea as yours!”

Upon hearing that, Frozen slowly raised his head. Just now he thought that North Sea wanted to have a showdown with him, and eventually kill him, but this did not seem to be the case.

“My... my king, what do you mean?” Frozen asked in a timid manner.

“It’s good to have a big dream. If you work hard, maybe one day you will achieve it,” the white-haired old man heaved a sigh as he patted Frozen on his shoulder. Then, he turned and walked away.

Looking at the back of the white-haired old man, Frozen was extremely confused. He could not understand the meaning behind the old man’s words.

At that moment, the old man stopped in his tracks. Frozen immediately took a step backward fearfully.

However, the white-haired old man did not turn around.

Instead, he stood at the spot as she spoke, “Back then, my greatest dream was to be in charge of Beiqi and become the supreme leader of Beiqi. I shed blood and tears, striving to achieve this goal. Finally, it took me 100,000 years of hard work to become the king of Beiqi. I was very excited and proud at the time.”

“However, soon after I took the throne and became the king of Beiqi, I suddenly became so confused. I even cried in despair because I didn’t know what to do next. I didn’t know what my next goal was. I didn’t know where to find a goal that could excite and motivate.”

As his words paused here, the silhouette of the white-haired old man slowly disappeared into thin air.

“It’s good to have a dream. Having a dream will not only push you to materialize your dream. Meanwhile, it will also make you realize the purpose of having a dream and enjoy the process of achieving it. Frozen, I give you this opportunity for you to grow stronger. When you’re powerful enough to defeat me, you’ll reign Beiqi!”

After the white-haired old man left, Frozen was stunned as he got lost in his thoughts.

As the white-haired old man said, although Frozen had sworn allegiance and loyalty to him, he had never truly succumbed to him. His dream had always been to surpass the white-haired old man and become the supreme leader of Beiqi. However, the white-haired old man’s today’s lecture had confused Frozen.

If I become the king of Beiqi, what will be my next goal?

Frozen got lost in his thoughts.

After a long thoughtful pause, Frozen, who was covered by the thick heavy snow, suddenly emerged from the snow wearing a determined expression.

“No matter what happens in the future, I will beat you first! Only then can I become the future king of Beiqi!”

...

“Are you sure that you don’t want to hold a Valentine’s Day event?” looking at the calendar, Bei Li whispered.

“Do we have to do it?” Lu Wu seemed very surprised.

“Other games seem to have already started many Valentine’s Day events to get players to spend money in the games,” Bei Li proposed again in a muffled tone.

“I’m not doing it. I’m afraid that I will throw up if I see the players displaying their love in public.”

“But there are a lot of players in the forum asking why there’s no Valentine’s Day event,” Bei Li continued her persuasion.

“Where are the posts? I’ll delete them,” Lu Wu put on a solemn expression.

Upon hearing this, Bei Li entered the forum, and pointed at the screen.

Xueli_The_Strongest: “What about any Valentine’s day events? What about quests for the couples to accomplish together? Why are you not giving us a chance to display our love? (slamming table emoji)”

Invincible_Loneliness: “Why are there no events on Valentine’s Day? There are so many events on the other festivals. What is happening now? (table-flipping emoji)”

Crayon_Shinchan: “I suspect that the developer of this game is single. That’s why he’s not holding an event for Valentine’s Day... (Bad rating!)”

Watermelon_Taro: “I was ready to huddle in the corner and watch you guys showcasing your relationship. But, it seems that there is no Valentine’s Day event today. (I’m so happy~)”

MyWifeIsTheMostBeautiful_InTheWorld: “I am so angry because you don’t allow us to show our affection publicly~”

MyHusbandIsTheMostHandsome_InTheWorld: “Yes, where are the Valentine’s Day events that will send us exclusive fashions and flowers?”

Assassins_Creed: “All of you who want to display your affections are unscrupulous, and should be burned to death!”

Looking at the discussion of the players in the forum, Bei Li looked at Lu Wu again.

“Are you sure you will not do it?”

Lu Wu nodded calmly as he deleted a few cheesy posts. Then, he posted a statement.

[Forum system failure. Many posts have disappeared for no apparent reason. Maintenance is ongoing...]

Chapter 179 - The Resurrection Of Cangxu (2 In 1)

Chapter 179: The Resurrection Of Cangxu (2 In 1)

Lu Wu was cultivating on the sofa when suddenly, he received a call from Wu Guoyi.

Wu Guoyi had called to inform him that they could now go online in Battle Online's foreign server at any time.

Currently, he planned to open the European server and wait for the numbers of players to increase until it was stable. Then, he would depend on the influence of the European server and local server to successively initiate an Asian server, American server, and more. Thus, Wu Guoyi wanted to know if Lu Wu had arranged everything properly.

The tentative plan for the seven large servers was, of course, Lu Wu's idea.

He had planned to set all the servers around the world to the seven large servers, which were the local server, the European server, the Asian server, the American server (North America), the Australian server (Oceania), the African server, and Brazilian server (South America), respectively. However, he never thought that Wu Guoyi would finish deploying all of them so quickly.

Lu Wu expressed his agreement immediately, but he hoped that Wu Guoyi would start to promote the game a little first. As for the European server, he would be done with it within ten days.

As a player of Battle Online, Wu Guoyi was naturally curious and asked Lu Wu if the players from the European server would join the local one.

Lu Wu had nothing to hide, so he truthfully told Wu Guoyi that the players from the new European server would be in the same position as the players

from their local server. However, it would not be in Beiqi, but in Cangxu instead, at the north of Beiqi after passing through the North Rocks.

After he found out that it was set in a large map other than Beiqi, Wu Guoyi curiously asked other questions about the new server. After Wu Guoyi had understood the situation, he followed Lu Wu's instructions to convene a deployment meeting and prepare to promote Battle Online's new European server.

Since the European server was about to open, naturally Lu Wu could not hold onto his soul coins anymore. He immediately called Bei Li, who was eating, to discuss the players' deployment plan for Cangxu and the problem with Cangxu's resurrection.

Now that Lu Wu's soul coins amounted to more than twenty million, resurrecting Cangxu would not be a problem in the slightest. Currently, the biggest issue was how to create the scenario for the players' entrance into the Land of Cangxu.

Bei Li suggested that they should make a decision only after the resurrection of Cangxu.

Soon after, the two of them appeared in the Artifact Channel.

Bei Li took out the white cotton candy that she had always used as a cushion, kneading it reluctantly.

"Let's begin!" Lu Wu reminded her.

Hearing that, Bei Li nodded. Then, an idea came to her. All of a sudden, the soul power that was stored in the Artifact Channel was extracted and flooded incessantly into a ball of white light.

As the soul power funneled into it continuously, the ball of white light beamed with a soft glow. A small black ball that was swirling inside kept shrinking and distorting, as though it was coming to life.

Lu Wu watched his digitized soul coins in the storage menu decline steeply with a heartbroken expression, as if all his possessions were being stolen away.

He initially had a total of 20.8 million soul coins, but within less than half an hour, the white light had already devoured half of them. However, it did not show any signs of slowing down, and instead became faster.

“Oh no, Cangxu’s strength is far more powerful than we had expected. I reckon we won’t be able to resurrect him without at least 50 million soul coins,” exclaimed Bei Li in surprise as she looked at the white light.

Lu Wu was speechless.

“What are we going to do now?” Lu Wu was stunned. There were less than 10 million left in his storage now. As he watched the money rapidly depleting, his heart ached terribly as though it was bleeding.

“We don’t have any choice, we must give up on his full recovery. Let’s recover a portion of him first.”

Suddenly, Bei Li hugged the enlarged light and tore it down from the air, forcing it to stop devouring the soul coins.

Lu Wu’s heart ached unbelievably when he saw the 3 million soul coins that were left. It costs too much!

However, Lu Wu found some comfort when he remembered that he would soon have an outstanding elite creature as his subordinate.

After being interrupted, the huge ball of light dropped to the ground and kept bouncing on it. Out of curiosity, Bei Li crawled on all fours to peer and bounced together with it.

“How is it, is he resurrected?” asked Lu Wu nervously.

“He is resurrected, but he’s in the middle of coming to life. You’ll need to wait a little,” Bei Li sat cross-legged on the ball of light, bouncing along with it.

As they were waiting, the sticky dark liquid inside the ball of light started to spread and gradually shrouded the inside of the ball. Bei Li climbed down from the ball of light and stood beside Lu Wu, waiting together.

After about half an hour, the ball of black light finally wobbled a little. Then, its surface layer slowly melted away to reveal the figure inside.

However, Lu Wu was flustered when he clearly saw what was inside.

A kid that seemed to be about eight to nine years old was naked and curled up on the floor, with his eyes closed.

“Did you catch the wrong person?” Lu Wu questioned Bei Li suspiciously.

Bei Li shook her head, “Maybe due to the lack of soul power recovery, this really is His Excellency Cangxu?”

Hearing that, Lu Wu used an artifact to scan the body of the young Cangxu.

[Cangxu (Recreation)]:

Character Information: Previous Lord of the Land of Cangxu, who committed conspiracies for ages and fought against Heaven just to extend the life of a beautiful woman. However, the love was broken off after he failed to defeat the Heavens. He could not walk the Bridge of Forgetfulness as he had to atone for his sins, so he voluntarily asked for his soul to be scattered.

Character Situation: Recovery was forcibly stopped during his recreation, so his ability only recovered to the initial level of Ghost King (his abilities and spells remain the same).

When Lu Wu saw Cangxu’s attributes, he could not help but cover his face in disappointment. He spent nearly twenty million for a child at the initial level of a Ghost King, when he did not even spend a penny to subdue Tong Gua or Xiao Tian.

At that moment, Cangxu’s body shuddered, as he slowly opened his eyes.

He propped himself up with his hands, seemingly confused, only to find Lu Wu and Bei Li staring at him with contempt.

“Who... who are you? Wasn't my soul scattered?” the young Cangxu asked in confusion.

Smack! Lu Wu jumped up and slapped the back of his head, “Little brat, I'm the boss here. If you ever call yourself Your Highness again, I'm going to kill you!”

Cangxu rubbed the back of his head, looking bewildered. When he lowered his head, his eyes widened in shock when he saw his naked body, “Why did I become so small?”

Lu Wu glanced naughtily at him and said sarcastically, “Hmm, it is quite small indeed!”

“Who exactly are you people!? Where is this place?” yelled Cangxu as he came to his senses and hurriedly covered his lower body, as he raised his head to look at Lu Wu.

“Little Cangxu, we're the ones who resurrected you from your scattered soul. How does it feel to be alive again?” asked Lu Wu with a smile.

After Cangxu heard his words, the memories of him at the Bridge of Forgetfulness emerged in his mind, causing him to pale instantly, “I don't need you to save me. If I'm alive, the war between the immortals and the underworld will be unavoidable. You've made a big mistake!”

“Don't worry, the group of people in the world of the immortals all thought that you had died. After all, they personally saw that your soul had been scattered!” said Bei Li with a hand on her hip, feeling very pleased.

“How is that possible? How did you do that!?”

Cangxu looked doubtful, with an unconvinced expression.

From his point of view, the people who were interested in him were as powerful as a Great Emperor. It was impossible for this kind of trick to

deceive their eyes.

“You really did die, and your soul was scattered, but now parts of your soul have been recovered. Do you understand me if I put it that way?” Bei Li explained again.

“That’s even more impossible, even the Great Emperor cannot recover a scattered soul. Don’t you dare lie to me,” Cangxu looked stubborn, the look on his face stating that he would never believe them.

Hearing that, Lu Wu jumped up and slapped Cangxu in the back of his head again, snarling, “Do I even need you to believe me? I’m not having a discussion with you. We saved you, so we are now your boss. All you need to do is listen to us!”

“What’s your purpose in resurrecting me?” asked Cangxu quickly, as though he had thought of something.

“We want you to reign over the Land of Cangxu and become His Excellency Cangxu!”

“That’s impossible, I would perish if I went back. The dumb animals from the world of the immortals would never let me live!”

“I’m not asking you to openly become His Excellency Cangxu. Instead, I’m only asking you to manage a batch of new forces from the Land of Cangxu. Start from the bottom and slowly climb your way to the top, until you rule over the Land of Cangxu again!” explained Lu Wu.

“You want me to be enemies with the troops that used to be mine? I will never do as you ask!” Cangxu looked stubborn, as though he was not going budge at all.

“Little Li, can you brainwash this fellow? He’s too stubborn. Tong Gua was much easier to control!” Lu Wu looked helpless.

Bei Li smiled gently and said, “Cangxu, we’ve already digitized you when you were being recreated. Browse through the information in your brain

then you'll understand.”

After hearing that, Cangxu quickly calmed himself down and submerged his mind into the sea of consciousness.

A golden ball of light slowly emerged in his mind, expanding as he focused on his consciousness. All the information about the artifact suddenly surged into his brain.

Cangxu stood blankly on the spot as he read through the numerous paragraphs of information regarding the artifact and the players.

After a moment...

When Cangxu looked up again, he had a perplexed look on his face, “You were the ones that stopped my plan to go against Heaven?”

Bei Li nodded solemnly, “I cannot deny that you are a genius, but in some aspects, you truly are dumb. Did you really think that defeating Heaven would be an easy thing? Even for us who have artifacts, we would never dare to be as flagrant as you!”

When he heard this, an ember of anger emerged from the bottom of Cangxu's heart. However, he soon turned gloomy and let out a sigh, “I was left with no choice.”

Bei Li was stunned when she heard Cangxu's words. When she recalled the reason why Cangxu planned to go against Heaven, she suddenly somewhat understood how Cangxu felt.

“Well, this is another opportunity for you, so hold onto it. You might still have a chance to turn your life around!”

Hearing that, a hint of sadness appeared on Cangxu's youthful face, “She's already gone, and I have nothing more to live for in this world. Furthermore, you want me to go against my own troops. I would rather die again than agree to help you.”

Lu Wu leaped onto Cangxu's shoulder and pressed his hand on Cangxu's head, "Kid, no one is asking you to kill your own troops. Don't you know that artifacts have the power to digitize things? As long as we digitize them without destroying their souls, they can still live, you know?"

Cangxu was stunned when he heard that. At that moment, he already knew about certain powers of the artifacts and the powerful feature of digitization, so he completely understood what Lu Wu was saying.

After giving it some thought, Cangxu still shook his head, "I'm tired of this, I don't wish to fight for anything anymore. But I hope that when you conquer Cangxu, you can let my troops live. If you must kill them, please absorb them into the artifact and let them become a part of your power!"

Lu Wu was disappointed when he looked at Cangxu, who had no will to fight. He could not help but be frustrated when he thought of the large number of soul coins that were wasted on resurrecting Cangxu.

"Are you sure?" asked Bei Li as she laughed all of a sudden.

"I'm tired, I won't fight anymore!" Cangxu continued to shake his head, seeming as though he wanted nothing more to do with this world.

Suddenly, Bei Li reached out and waved. A ball of white light appeared in her hands, spontaneously changing its shape as she kneaded it in her hands.

"Are you sure?" Bei Li asked again.

Looking at that ball of white light, Cangxu's expression changed as he felt its familiar scent.

"Stop... stop kneading it, please stop!" Cangxu suddenly seemed heartbroken when he saw Bei Li pulling and twisting it constantly.

"Wu, let's just send this guy for reincarnation. This could have been the best chance for you to fulfill your centuries-old destiny of love. Sigh, what a waste," Bei Li looked as if she was very disappointed.

Hearing that, Lu Wu leaped off Cangxu's shoulder and shook his head as well. "Truly a waste. Since you have no intention of living, we might as well be reasonable and send you back for reincarnation."

"No, no, no! I agree!" Cangxu looked at the white light and begged sincerely.

The expressions on Bei Li and Lu Wu's face did not change. Bei Li continued to knead the light in her hands, as though she did not hear what Cangxu had said.

"Is this her?" Cangxu's body trembled as he approached Bei Li. He wanted to reach out and touch the light, but Bei Li moved aside, dodging him.

"I promise, I promise you! Please give her back to me!"

As he stood close to it, Cangxu could feel the scent from the ball of light. He was sure that it was from the person that he loved the most in the entire world.

"Not a chance!" said Bei Li delightedly as she continued to knead it.

"What must I do in order for you to give her to me?" implored Cangxu. All his previous feelings of indifference had vanished.

"I figured that I couldn't bear to ask you to become enemies with your troops, so how about we just forget it?" Lu Wu acted as though he could not bear to see that scene happen.

"They won't be truly dead, I can definitely absorb all of them into the artifact, and have them continue to work for me," explained Cangxu hurriedly.

"Isn't that too cruel? I don't think that's a good idea."

"What's so cruel about it? The rule of survival is to fight for domination in the Underworld. It has never changed throughout hundreds of millions of years, for that is the most reasonable thing!"

“Your will to survive is so strong!”

Looking at Cangxu compromising, Lu Wu smiled and hinted at Bei Li with his eyes. Seeing that, Bei Li threw the ball of light in her hands toward Cangxu.

Cangxu hastily caught the ball of light. When he felt the scent exuding from it, his expression was filled with loving affection.

“All this love in the air is making me sick.”

Lu Wu waved his hand with a look of disgust, before asking, “Cangxu, do you want to resurrect her?”

“Yes!” replied Cangxu without any hesitation.

“Hmm, think about it carefully. From now on, you will manage all the matters regarding the Land of Cangxu, especially the publication part. I’ll be honest with you, I spent 150 million soul coins to resurrect you. Although it doesn’t require as much to resurrect her, she still needs at least 80 million soul coins. Now, all you have to do is to earn soul coins diligently to resurrect the love of your life as soon as possible.”

“Yes!” Cangxu had a look of great fortitude on his face, as a ravenous desire for soul coins bubbled in his heart.

“Look, I’m not unreasonable. You’re supposed to give us all the soul coins that you earn. After all, that is the cost of your resurrection. However, I will not take the first 80 million soul coins earned from the Land of Cangxu, so you can save up enough to resurrect Xian Ke. But I want to be clear that after that, the rest of the soul coins that you earn subsequently will be taken by me. Please remember this.”

“Thank you so much!” Cangxu seemed extremely grateful.

From Cangxu’s perception, Lu Wu was too benevolent. Not only did he resurrect him, but he also planned to resurrect Xian Ke, so that they could finally be reunited.

Now that he knew how to resurrect Xian Ke, Cangxu was filled with a blazing fighting spirit. He could not wait to start his journey to the Land of Cangxu and give it his all.

“Why don’t you stay in my house for a few days first to familiarize yourself with the world of the living. Once the European server is activated, it will be your responsibility to manage it. Remember, in the beginning, upgrade the game’s possibilities as much as possible and wait for the number of players to increase before thinking of how to earn soul coins.”

Lu Wu could not help but remind Cangxu when he saw the excitement on Cangxu’s face.

He was worried that Cangxu’s thirst for soul coins would become so overwhelming that he would exploit the players too harshly and turn the game into a money pit.

“I understand!”

Now that Cangxu had seen Xian Ke, he was thoroughly convinced about his mission. He even addressed himself differently.

Bei Li could not resist the urge to cover her face when she looked at Cangxu, who was so blinded by love that he was grateful even after being fooled.

Truly, love makes people go crazy!

Chapter 180 - That Old Fellow Was Extremely Terrifying

Chapter 180: That Old Fellow Was Extremely Terrifying

After the European server had entered its deployment phase, Lu Wu created a new layout in the forum.

Players were shocked when they entered the forum and noticed that the layout of the forum could now be switched, with the word ‘European’ added to the top of the page.

Numerous players from the local server immediately poured into it.

Crayon_Shinchan: “Hey, I’m the first person to post on the European server. From now on, I will be the ruler here (laughing emoji)!”

Xueli_The_Strongest: “Everybody look, this is the land that we will invade in the future, come quickly and familiarize yourselves with it (laughing emoji)!”

Invincible_Loneliness: “Don’t know if it’s in Beiqi or not, but I can’t wait! Even if it’s not in Beiqi, as long as it’s in the same world, we must enter the place (laughing emoji)!”

Peppa_Boar: “Let’s level up and slaughter them while it’s still early, hurry!”

Watermelon_Taro: “I hope it’s in Beiqi so that lower-level players like me would get a chance to show off my skills. By then I can yell out confidently, ‘I want to fight ten of you!’ (anticipating emoji)”

...

Bei Li was developing the translation setting as the players discussed the matter in the forum.

After all, the Lands of Cangxu and Beiqi were currently separated by the North Rocks only. Once the Rock Ghost King had fallen, there would definitely be interactions between the two large domains. Hence, there was a need for real-time translation software because of the language barrier.

Bei Li not only set up a real-time translation feature in the game, but in the forum as well.

This was to ensure that when they were in the European server's forum, the players from the local server would be able to understand. For the players of the European server, they would be reading in their own language when they were in the local forum.

Interactions without a language barrier would effectively increase the players' overall development, so Lu Wu was very meticulous about this.

As for the issue of friction between the players of different countries, Lu Wu did not see anything wrong with that. After all, there would be conflict wherever there are people. Competition between players was also a source of stimulation for them to become stronger.

...

As Bei Li was busy with this, the young Cangxu stared at the computer screen, clumsily moving the mouse and absorbing modern knowledge through the Internet.

“Did you never try to understand the world of the living when you planned to go against Heaven?” Lu Wu could not help but ask as he raised his head to look at Cangxu.

“No. Even though the Yin Talisman can allow one to travel back and forth between the world of the living and the underworld, it should not be used carelessly. Scraps from the world of the immortals would notice if they had been taken advantage of, and they would use the Treaty of the Three Worlds as an excuse to harass you in every possible way,” a flash of anger flashed across Cangxu's face as he explained.

“By the way, do you still have your Yin Talisman with you?” asked Bei Li as she looked up, her fingers moving around in the air as she controlled the artifacts from afar.

“No, but if you need it, I can summon it,” Cangxu replied at once.

“I need it very much!”

“Okay!” Cangxu nodded and made a grabbing motion in the air. Then, a black rune fragment slowly emerged, as he grabbed it in his hand.

He looked at the Yin Talisman in his hand and threw it to Bei Li without any hesitation.

Bei Li reached out and received it, before busying herself again.

“How do you still have the Yin Talisman with you when you’re already dead?” Lu Wu asked curiously.

“The Lord of every large domain from each generation will receive a Yin Talisman as a gift from the Great Emperor. The Yin Talisman was bound to my soul, so nobody could use it except for me. This one belongs specifically to me. So naturally, I can summon it whenever I wish to,” Cangxu’s gaze did not leave the computer screen even as he explained.

“What about you? Why do you need the Yin Talisman?” Lu Wu turned his head toward Bei Li.

“Fool! The reason the artifact could pass through Beiqi is because your Yin Talisman had been assimilated into it. However, our target location is now in Cangxu, so of course, we need his Yin Talisman. Although I can create a new Yin Talisman, the process is too complicated and I won’t be able to make it in such a short period of time. Now that we have an already-completed one, it could save us a lot of trouble.”

Hearing that, Lu Wu nodded before turning to Cangxu again, “Cangxu, how powerful was your strength back then?”

“Not bad, I guess. I was at the peak of the Ghost Emperor Level!”

Lu Wu was speechless.

“Have you ever met a person named Lu Yan?” Lu Wu was filled with curiosity when he thought of his ancestors.

“Lu Yan? His Excellency of Beiqi?” Cangxu turned to face him suddenly.

“Yes!”

“Yes, I have. That brat thought that he had already dominated Beiqi. Blinded by his arrogance, he impudently came to the Land of Cangxu and challenged me, saying that he wanted to rule the Underworld. In the end, I beat him up and made him return dejectedly.”

Cangxu could not help but laugh when he thought about the past.

However, as Cangxu was still laughing, he realized that Lu Wu had a strange look on his face. Suddenly, Lu Wu leaped toward him with an outstretched hand.

Cangxu did not dare to resist Lu Wu’s attack, but only lowered his head to hug Xian Ke’s soul ball in confusion.

After he had avenged his ancestor, Lu Wu heaved a sigh of relief. He sat on the computer table and asked again, “Then, do you know the first King of Beiqi?”

“Can... can I say I don’t know him?” Cangxu felt weary. Why am I beaten up when all I did was answer the question? Is there any justice left? The worst part is that I’m clearly more powerful than Lu Wu, yet I don’t dare to resist him.

Cangxu felt some comfort as he looked at Xian Ke in his arms.

“Spit it out!” Lu Wu glared at him.

He was becoming increasingly curious about the first King of Beiqi now. Even though the former King of Beiqi was long gone, Lu Wu could detect traces of his existence from the numerous activities of the players in Beiqi.

“That old fellow was extremely terrifying, I suspect that he had already surmounted the Divine state. All that’s left is for the Great Emperor to ignite the Divine Fire for him and add his name into the Underworld God List.”

“Why is that so? Is he not dead?” Lu Wu was stunned.

“I don’t think he’s dead. Aside from God Himself, it feels like no one in the Underworld can control him!”

“He’s that powerful?”

“He’s not just powerful. Do you know how scary the Land of Beiqi was hundreds of thousands of years ago? The members of every clan were like psychos. Each clan had a Ghost Emperor Elite as a commanding officer, and all of them were fighting to be the King of Beiqi. The scariest was the Ice Snow Clan, the descendants of the Deity of Beiqi. Guess what happened? All the clans failed in their quest for the throne, and were suppressed by a fellow named North Sea. For the sake of preserving their clans, even the large clans swore allegiance to him. Isn’t he amazing?”

“The Ice Snow Clan?” Lu Wu suddenly remembered the two inherited character classes that recently appeared. Both of them seemed like they had something to do with the Ice Snow Clan.

“The leader of the Ice Snow Clan is now in the Ghost Emperor Realm, and he’s still alive. Why didn’t he come out and fight for the title of the King of Beiqi, now that the first King of Beiqi is already gone?”

“How am I supposed to know? Maybe he’s tired and wants to hide from the world?” Cangxu was speechless.

Upon hearing that, Lu Wu touched his whiskers as he plunged deep into his thoughts.

The Ice Snow Clan still exists but lives in seclusion. The hidden ghost army in the Evil Nightmare City, and the Earthbreaking clan that was recently found on a barren grassland by the players, seem to all belong to the large

clan of ancient Beiqi. However, all of them are in seclusion now. Is there a secret underneath all of this?

Then, are there other clans that are secluded from the world, yet still exist in the depths of Beiqi?

Lu Wu was completely lost in his thoughts.

Chapter 181 - The European Server's New Settings

Chapter 181: The European Server's New Settings

After Bei Li had completed the translation feature in the game and in the forum, the three of them started to examine the default class menu for the players on the European server.

Contrary to the local server, Lu Wu planned to open three new development routes for this new one.

They were Barbarians, Necromancers, and Knights.

Not only were there name changes in the amendments of the default classes this time, there was also an equally big impact on the allocation of attributes after an upgrade.

Two pieces of drawings were currently laid out on the table in front of the couch. One was the default class development plan for the local server's players, and the other was the new development plan for the European server's players that was about to be put to use.

The two drawing plans were also marked with attributes and their corresponding bonus abilities.

Strength (physique strengthening): Decides physical attacking power and weight-bearing ability.

Endurance (physique strengthening): Decides striking resistance ability and tolerance (running, sports that constantly deplete physical strength, and physical recovery speed) (affects health).

Agility (physique strengthening): Decides mobility and attacking speed (increases darting efficiency).

Perception (spiritual strengthening): Decides observation ability, a strong sense of perception enables the player to notice faint changes in the surroundings (effectively upgrades low awareness).

Divine Consciousness (spiritual strengthening): Affects spell casting fluency and effects of spells triggered by the motion of the spell track (affects Manipulation slightly).

Manipulation (spiritual strengthening): Affects the summoning character class when summoning living creatures (the stronger the attributes, the more the living creatures that can be manipulated).

Perseverance: Special attributes, unable to be changed by soul power.

Elemental immunity: Special attributes, unable to be changed by soul power.

...

These were the six attributes set up by Bei Li to strengthen the players.

Every time a player kills a creature and receives soul power, the player would be strengthened according to their set character class and corresponding attributes.

One of the drawings on the table was clearly labeled with the latest growth ratio of the different classes.

Berserker (default class): Uses 50% to power up strength, 40% to power up endurance, 10% to power up agility from soul power obtained from creature killing (deducted by percentage).

Assassin (default class): Uses 48% to power up strength, 28% to power up agility, 13% to power up perception, 11% to power up endurance from soul power obtained for creature killing.

Mage (default class): Uses 75% to power up divine consciousness, 17% to power up perception, 8% to power up endurance from soul power obtained for creature killing.

At that moment, the three of them were discussing the allocation of the six main attributes for the three character classes on the other drawing plan, in order to ensure that they would be totally different from the original server's character class menu.

Lu Wu suggested westernizing the character classes, so not only must the names of the Barbarians, Necromancers and Knights be changed, but the allocation of attributes has to be entirely different as well.

Soon after, Bei Li provided a brand new growth plan in conjunction with the allocation of soul power.

The plan for the Barbarians was to go all out, making the allocation of soul power very high.

Barbarian (default class): Uses 72% to power up strength, 14% to power up endurance, 14% to power up agility from soul power obtained for creature killing.

The Necromancers' settings focused on strengthening their control of living creatures, which was also the first menu for summoners in Battle Online.

Necromancer (default class): Uses 50% to power up manipulation, 30% for spiritual strengthening, 10% to power up perception, 10% to power up endurance from soul power obtained for creature killing.

The last power-up mode for the Knights was by far the most extreme, these were set purely for players who only pursued brawn.

Knight (default class): Uses 76% to power up endurance, 14% to power up strength, 5% to power up agility, 5% to power up perception from soul power obtained for creature killing.

Each of these three new default character classes had entirely different allocations of soul power.

They then discussed whether to make amendments to the allocations of these three character classes or not.

“The growth approach is good but I don’t like the names of their character classes. For me, they should be named as Fighters (Barbarians), Psychics (Necromancers), Copper Bones (Knights) to better suit the style of the Land of Cangxu,” Cangxu voiced out his opinion.

Hearing that, Bei Li looked over at Lu Wu, “Wu, what do you think?”

Lu Wu touched his whiskers and nodded, “That’s not a bad idea, westernizing it a bit could increase the immersion into their gameplay... I agree!”

“Two votes for agreeing, one for disagree, pass!” Bei Li waved her hand.

Cangxu looked dispirited all of a sudden. It seemed like he had something to say yet he was hesitant and didn’t dare say a thing.

“Next, we’re going to discuss the training skills that are needed after their growth into these character classes. Do you guys have any suggestions?” Bei Li propped herself up with her hand and looked at the other two.

“I think since the Skill Pavilion is being kept inside the Artifact Channel and can be used by everyone, why don’t we just eliminate the parts that are not suitable in showcasing the abilities of these three character classes?” Lu Wu suggested as he raised his cat claw.

“I have some book collections in my library about the westernization of skills, but I’m not sure what condition His Excellency’s palace is in. If it’s been occupied, we could attack the palace first as our main target and plunder the internal resources. That will be our first land for development, just like the Mansion of the Dead was.”

“Great idea!” Bei Li smacked a hand on the table, showing her strong agreement toward the idea.

“No, Cangxu is much different from the Mansion of the Dead. The Mansion of the Dead was burned down in a big fire and there were no valuable resources left, so it became a good place for players to settle down. But there are still so many resources left in His Excellency Cangxu’s palace. It

has surely been occupied by many powerful individuals, so it won't be too easy to take it down. We should change to a remote location that no one would pay attention to."

"Then... then, one vote for disagreeing, two for agreeing... hmm, then we'll follow Wu's suggestion!" Bei Li gave it a little thought before once again declaring the conclusion of the discussion.

Cangxu was speechless.

Motherfucker, don't I have the right to vote? How come it meant nothing even though there was a majority of votes? Cangxu was even more dispirited as he thought about this.

"Oh by the way, Cangxu, which district of your domain has a weaker force that would be more suitable for players to start fighting?" Lu Wu turned to look at Cangxu.

"Actually, the people of Cangxu are quite united. If there are intruders, the whole area would gather together and join forces to eliminate the intruders," Cangxu said after giving it some thought.

Lu Wu was lost for words.

"So ruthless! How can the players survive?" Lu Wu widened his eyes.

"I'm not fully sure about that. There has always been friction between some of my Ghost Kings and Ghost Generals. Back then they did not dare to fall out with each other as I was in command. But now that I'm dead, maybe war has already broken out since everyone wants to be the new king!"

Lu Wu nodded, "This is a big problem. You'd better change your identity for a few days to visit the Land of Cangxu and have a look at the recent situation there. It would be best if war had broken out, but by then we could just find a secluded location that will not easily be affected to be the default birthplace for the players!"

"Alright!" Cangxu agreed without any hesitation.

In fact, he wanted the game to launch more than Lu Wu did because then he could sooner resurrect the woman that he loved so dearly.

“Oh right, what is my identity to the players?” Cangxu could not help asking.

“Change your name, any name you want, as long as it is not Cangxu. I will make up a pitiful background and identity for you, like how you were initially the heir of His Excellency Cangxu, or maybe you were the Great Lord of the Land of Cangxu that had been betrayed horribly by his subordinates. Anyway, the aim is just to initiate them to take revenge and claim back the Land of Cangxu.”

Cangxu was silent.

Cangxu wanted to voice out some suggestions regarding Lu Wu’s proposal, but he knew it was probably of no use, so he only sighed, “Call me Xian Xu then... as for my background, I leave it up to you.”

“No problem!”

“Up next for the third issue regarding the players’ Equipment Menu,” Bei Li continued.

Bei Li looked at the both of them before saying, “Hmm, actually you can leave this part to me. We only need to modify the exterior design for the pieces of equipment to meet the aesthetic views of Western standards. No changes are needed for the equipment attributes, so we can just copy the template over directly, making it seem like the equipment has the latest update!”

Both Lu Wu and Cangxu had no opinion about that, so they agreed with her.

“The fourth issue, regarding the draft for the main quests... since Cangxu has a deeper understanding of the land, you shall oversee this discussion. Let’s think about the plot and the development for the main and special quests...”

...

“The fifth issue, the NPC settings...”

“The sixth...”

The three of them continued with their intense discussion about the new settings for the European server.

Chapter 182 - Time Traveler

Chapter 182: Time Traveler

On the day of the launch of Battle Online's European server.

The night in the bustling City of Fog was unusually deserted.

Below the hazy streetlight, a teenager was lying still on the ground. A coin-sized wound was still visible at the back of his head, with droplets of blood on the ground that was still wet.

“Ow...”

At that moment, the teenager opened his eyes. He subconsciously propped himself up, feeling a sense of pain from the back of his head.

He reached his hand out to touch it and immediately noticed that his hand was covered in blood.

“Where am I?”

Reinhardt instantly felt that something was wrong. He clearly remembered that he was discussing the counterattack plan on Beiqi with his friends from the guild. So why was he lying in the street now?

“Huh?”

He then realized that the jacket he was wearing was the one that he had already thrown away a long time ago. Why was it on him now?

“Is this a prank? Or was I really abducted and robbed?”

As he thought of this, Reinhardt quickly reached into his pocket to check if he had lost any belongings.

Reinhardt was stunned again when he took out his phone and wallet.

He had already changed this wallet two years ago, the same for his phone and the jacket he was wearing. What exactly is going on?

The clueless Reinhardt started to panic. He quickly tapped the phone screen, intending to call the police.

16 February 2319?

After looking at the date on his phone, Reinhardt stood up in a hurry and looked around.

The familiar streets, the skateboard in the nearby grass, and the bloodstains under the streetlights were all there.

This scene suddenly reminded Reinhardt that two years ago, he had fallen off his skateboard and injured his head in this same exact place!

Could it be that I have traveled back in time to exactly two years ago?

This guess made Reinhardt panic, as he did not know if this was all a prank or it was really happening.

If all of this was real, then that would be incredible.

He staggered forward a few steps, but the wound on his head throbbed, causing him to stop walking as the pain was unbearable.

Reinhardt could not continue walking ahead, so he took his phone out and opened a medical service app. He chose the option for direct treatment service, then he sat on the ground to wait.

After a moment, a smart ambulance could be seen driving toward him, before stopping beside him.

“Ding! Please confirm your identification!” said the mechanical voice.

Hearing that, Reinhardt reached out to configure his thumbprint in the identification sensor that the ambulance handed to him.

“Ding! Identification confirmed. Good evening, Mr. Reinhardt. Please board the car, we will do our best to treat you.”

Click! The door of the car unlocked.

Reinhardt opened the door and sat into the car.

After he went into the back seat, a few streaks of light scanned over him.

[Scanning in progress...]

[End of scan... injury in the head... cleaning your wound now and bandaging it...]

After that announcement, two mechanical arms sprang out from each side of the door and a medical box popped up on his right.

As the mechanical arms were treating his wound, Reinhardt's attention fell on a television screen inside the ambulance. He was still thinking about the strange incident that had happened.

At this moment, the screen changed and an advertisement played.

[The European server of Battle Online has just launched today, if you would like to experience the authenticity of the game everyone is talking about...]

Reinhardt's eyes widened when he saw the advertisement, “I'll be damned, is this real or not?! Today is the launch of the European server of Battle Online?”

“Oh my God! Did I really travel back in time?”

Perhaps the incident on the street might have been a prank, but it was impossible for the advertisement in the ambulance to be fake.

Reinhardt suddenly became excited with this thought.

He was very clear about the impact that Battle Online would bring to the future.

This game marked an epoch in the world, and two years into the future, he would still just be a normal player in the European server, similar to other lower-level players, hoping every day to obtain a hidden character class or inherited character class.

Albeit, it would be different this time! Now that he had traveled back in time, his mind was already filled with various gaming knowledge about Battle Online that he had learned in these two years, and also the strategies for many quests. Did this mean that he stood a chance to become a very powerful player!?

He knew that if he could become stronger in the game, his whole life would never be the same again because anything that was valuable in this genre of a game could also be monetized in real life.

Besides, he believed that as long as his abilities became stronger, numerous large guilds would hire him into their guild with a high salary.

He immediately took out his phone and opened up his contact list. He found his best buddy's phone number and dialed.

“Hello? Reinhardt?”

“It's me! Please listen closely, I have a very urgent thing to tell you!”

The seriousness in his tone seemed to surprise the person on the other side of the phone. There was a series of rustling noises, before his friend's voice returned, “Tell me, I'm listening!”

“Stop playing Storm Legends... delete it quickly. Tonight is the launch of Battle Online, let's play that game!” Reinhardt said excitedly.

The person on the other side of the phone went silent for a few seconds before replying slowly, “Reinhardt, are you fully awake? What are we going to do with our Gold Farming Workshop if we delete the game? If we

really delete the game, we won't even be able to pay the rent, do you want to sleep in the streets?"

"Don't care about that gold farming thing any more... quickly play Battle Online! We must use this to our advantage and we'll never run out of money ever again, trust me!"

"Beep... the treatment is done, the medical fee is twenty thousand. Do I need to send you home, Mr. Reinhardt?" the mechanical doctor's voice rang.

"Reinhardt, I understand now why you're acting like this. I think you're hurt really badly. Where are you? I'll be there in a moment."

Reinhardt was speechless.

"I'm not crazy, I just injured my head a little. Are you listening to me?"

"Yes I am, you've injured your head, this is not a small matter," the voice on the other side of the phone was very solemn.

"Wait for me, I'll be there immediately, I'll talk to you again when I arrive!"

"Ambulance, send me home!" Reinhardt roared excitedly after he ended the call.

"Alright, Mr. Reinhardt. You are staying at Flying Bird Street, are you headed to that location?"

"Yes!"

...

When he reached his destination, Reinhardt quickly paid and dashed back to the place he lived.

Previously, he would be very depressed over the twenty thousand medical fee for a long time, but now he felt that it was not a problem anymore. As

long as he grabbed the opportunity of the launch of Battle Online, two million, even twenty million would not be a problem anymore.

Reinhardt did not feel an inch of tiredness even though his wound had not completely healed. Instead, he dashed up five consecutive flights of stairs, his whole body filled with adrenaline.

Reinhardt took out his keys and opened the door. He immediately saw his best buddy McCray, who was cooking noodles.

When he saw the bandages on Reinhardt's head, McCray gave him a predictable look, "Are you alright?"

Reinhardt's eyes sparkled with excitement as he stepped forward and grabbed McCray's shoulder, "Haha, we're going to be rich, we're really going to be rich!"

"Rich? How are we going to be rich?" McCray was confused.

"Through Battle Online! Today is their official launch day... an extremely important day!"

"Listen to me, I know that you're very excited and I can see that, but you must rest first!" McCray advised him with a serious face.

"Could you please trust me? We have been brothers for so many years, I would never lie to you. Tonight is the night, so come play Battle Online together with me!"

McCray was stunned for a few seconds as he looked at Reinhardt, who had changed so much.

He clearly remembered that a few hours before Reinhardt went out, he was shouting about how he was going to fight for some good things that night, but he had changed so much all of a sudden.

The way McCray saw it, he must have hit his head really hard.

“Whatever, what time is it now? We must launch the server at 10pm sharp, let’s get ourselves prepared!” Reinhardt walked to his gaming table and turned on his computer. He took out the gaming headset that was connected to the computer.

“Are you really not going to play Storm Legends anymore?” asked McCray quietly as he walked toward him with the bowl of noodles.

“Not anymore! That useless game is going to shut down soon. Don’t be blinded by its popularity now, that’s only because Battle Online’s European server hasn’t launched yet!” Reinhardt opened the website skillfully and entered the Platform173 download link.

When he saw the banner of Platform173 with the countdown icon for Battle Online, Reinhardt felt very pleased as he knew his life was about to change.

As a veteran player, he had a huge innate advantage because not only did he remember parts of the strategies for the quests, he also clearly remembered the two strategy posts in the forum that shared their process of obtaining their inherited character classes.

These posts were the key to his rise.

One was the Dark Knight, and the other was the Devilman Hunter. These two character classes were very powerful, both emerging in glorious victory multiple times during their inter-server matches in the later stages, catching the world’s attention.

Reinhardt was extremely grateful for the two fellows who shared their strategies of obtaining their inherited character classes.

He could only apologize to the world for this now!

As McCray watched Reinhardt fidgeting about in excitement, he could not help asking again quietly, “If you’re really not going to play the other game anymore, how about you give me your account? I’ll run both accounts to earn more money.”

“Why do you still want to play that stupid game? I told you, that useless game is going to shut down any time soon. Now that there is a great opportunity right in front of us, this is the chance for us to turn our lives around, don’t you understand!?” Reinhardt turned around, feeling exasperated at McCray.

“How about this, you experience the game with me for twelve hours. If you’re still unsatisfied after twelve hours, we’ll continue playing Storm Legends. What do you think?”

Met with Reinhardt’s strong demand, McCray was stunned but he eventually nodded, “Alright then... twelve hours. After that, we’ll go back to gold farming, the rent is due soon.”

“Just twelve hours, hurry, finish your noodles. I’ll download the game first and go to the forum to have a look!”

Reinhardt was extremely speechless when he saw how reluctant his buddy was, but he could understand how he was feeling.

None of these were important, though. Once his buddy had experienced Battle Online for himself, he would understand.

Thinking about this, he reached out to open the official web forum of Battle Online on the Platform173 website.

Reinhardt had tears in his eyes when he saw the familiar interface of the official web forum.

In this life, I will not let those other players from the original server bully me anymore. From now on, I am the main character in this world. Even if you guys started playing it three months ago, I will surpass all of you!

Chapter 183 - The Official Launch Of The European Server

Chapter 183: The Official Launch Of The European Server

Prior to the launching of the new server, Reinhardt could not help but log on to the official forum of Battle Online.

Seeing the European server's discussion area being occupied by the original players, he laughed and typed a line of words.

[The first player of the European server reporting. Original players, are you ready to be defeated?]

He was bombarded with replies shortly after his post was sent out.

Crayon_Shinchan: "Jeez! Look here kid, I'm not trying to brag but to be honest, I can take dozens of punches from you first when you come to Beiqi. Don't say that I bully you. (smirk)"

Reinhardt replied to Crayon_Shinchan: "Wow! The future almighty contrarian of the entire forum. Hey bro, please remember me. Let's take a group photo. (camera snap)"

Invincible_Loneliness: "Sorry to burst your bubble but the reality is cruel. We have a lot of hackers in our zone. So just face the facts. (smirk)"

Reinhardt replied to Invincible_Loneliness: "Demonic God idol! This is your first time replying to my post, come let's take a group photo. (camera snap)"

Commander_Of_Demolition_Officers: "Is the server launching over there today? All the best! Let's meet on the battlefield in the future! (smirk)"

Reinhardt replied to Commander_Of_Demolition_Officers: “Wow, wow, wow! Is this the King of Wrestling? Let’s take a group photo. (camera snap)”

Reinhardt: “So many big bosses here and you guys even replied to my post. How blessed I am! But since we are rivals I shall show no mercy. This time, the European server is going to be the world’s number one server in the future!”

Ao_Family_Sword_Style replied to Reinhardt: “Hopefully there will be more elites for me to challenge. Don’t disappoint me.”

Reinhardt replied to Ao_Family_Sword_Style: “Boss, you will have a freaking awesome existence in the future when everyone calls you the Forbidden Sword Saint. That is super cool!”

Ao_Family_Sword_Style replied to Reinhard: “What?”

...

Reinhard was flushed with excitement upon looking at the replies from these big bosses who would be unreachable for him in the future.

That was because he knew that he would be among the top players of Battle Online, just like them.

Reinhardt opened the homepage of Platform173 occasionally to check on the countdown ticker while chatting in the forum. He could barely contain his exhilaration.

As the clock struck 10pm, he promptly clicked on the pop-up game downloading button. Following that, he turned his head and shouted, “McCray, come quick! The game is starting!”

“Okay, okay, I’m coming!” McCray who was in the middle of cleaning immediately tossed the tablecloth aside and hurried to his gaming table.

With the extremely high network speed in the year 2319, Battle Online was downloaded within a second. Before Reinhardt started the game, he turned

around and looked at his best buddy McCray.

“Brother, you go for level-up right after the server launches. I’ll come back to you after I finish my business.”

Reinhardt put on the virtual helmet as he finished his words. He then selected the Battle Online icon and entered the game.

...

At this moment, Lu Wu and Bei Li were observing the increasing number of players in the European server.

Thanks to their local server’s super high evaluation score and publicity for the 100% reality simulation gaming claimed by Platform173, the game managed to hit 200,000 downloads within the first hour of launching. Countless players swarmed into the game and their souls were simultaneously bound by the artifact.

“Wu, the person whom we arranged is online,” only then did Bei Li speak abruptly.

Hearing that, Lu Wu nodded with a trace of eagerness on his face.

“I hope he won’t let us down...”

...

A momentary sense of weightlessness struck Reinhardt as he entered the game, followed by the beginning animation.

In the scene, millions of black steel riders who were under the leadership of several Ghost Kings bellowed at the man who stood at the top of His Excellency Cangxu’s palace. The battle soon began with one versus millions. However, the man shuttled freely among the armies like a descended demonic deity and kept on slaying the enemies...

Words in the background appeared right after the beginning animation ended.

[The betrayal of the clans in the Land of Cangxu unfolded under the lure of profit. Deity Xu could barely withstand the unceasing attacks from millions of troops despite his psychic power. Even though he survived a close shave with death, he was severely injured and his power weakened drastically. The flame of revenge was ignited now. As the heir of Deity Xu, it's time to shoulder the responsibility of reconquering the entire Land of Cangxu.]

Following that, the words faded and a Character Selection Menu appeared in front of Reinhardt.

[Please choose your character class: Barbarian, Dead Spirit Warlock, or Knight...]

He chose the Barbarian character class in his previous life. In spite of his brutal attacks, vulnerability was his Achilles' heel. This time, Reinhardt decided to be a knight after knowing the ways to acquire the inherited character classes.

At once, he reached out his hand to touch the petrified knight.

All of a sudden, stone pieces fell off the knight. Following that, the knight blazed brightly and a golden thorn aura radiated below his feet.

After plunging the great sword in his hand into the ground, he rested his right hand on his left chest and knelt on one knee.

“I will keep in mind the virtues of humility, mercy, justice, honor, sacrifice, bravery, spirituality, and honesty. I shall dedicate my soul and life to fight for justice. I shall shed my blood in honor on the battlefield. Here and now I vow my loyalty to my horseman sword that I will never betray it and may it be blessed for its everlasting sharpness. Till the day its owner surrenders, it shall never be broken.”

Reinhardt smiled upon looking at the knight who was kneeling on one knee, “Confirm!”

Immediately, he was blinded by darkness.

After a moment, he restored his vision.

[Place of birth: East Side of Cangxu, Hidden Dragon Valley]

The name of the zone came into his sight before it started to fade slowly.

Gazing down at Hidden Dragon Valley amidst the billowing clouds, Reinhardt raised his hands and took a deep breath, “New world, here I come! Let’s welcome your future king!”

He then glanced at the surrounding players, who were stunned by the game’s impressive graphics. He scoffed before rushing toward the center region of the village in Hidden Dragon Valley.

However, he could only jostle his way through the crowd of players in order to move forward from the place of birth. It took him some effort to reach the center of the village. As he swept his eyes around, he came across a house. He then pushed the door open and went in.

Meanwhile, Cangxu was in a daze at the moment with Xian Ke in his arms. He knew the person that Lu Wu mentioned was here upon seeing Reinhardt’s silhouette. Hurriedly, he put Xian Ke’s soul ball back into his personal channel before rising to his feet, “What’s the matter, lad?”

“Clan leader, since you’re seriously injured, let me bear the responsibility to reclaim Cangxu. I want to bring those Ghost Kings and Ghost Generals down.”

His words somehow took Cangxu by surprise. He pondered his words before speaking, “Reinhardt, you have grown. However, you still have a long way to go before you’re capable enough to reclaim the Land of Cangxu. Do not be repulsive.”

“Clan leader, I know that I’m not strong enough. Therefore, I’d like to consult you regarding the ways to grow stronger. Whatever belongs to us shall only be retrieved once we grow stronger.”

The determined look on Reinhardt's face made Cangxu want to laugh, but still, he managed to suppress his laughter.

“Ahem... good boy, I'm proud of you. Although I've lost most of my power right now, I do know a way to grow stronger. However, only a strong warrior is qualified for such an inheritance. I promise to pass you this inheritance if you're able to complete my trial!”

It was then a game notification came into Reinhardt's mind:

[Triggered the trial mission of inherited character class Dark Knight!]

As expected, it was triggered! Only the first person who took an oath to reclaim the territory in front of the village chief could trigger this hidden inherited character class. A look of ecstasy shot across Reinhardt's face.

“Yes!”

[The First Round of the Dark Knight Trial Mission Starts: Kill 100 wandering souls and three marsh crocodiles!]

“Go ahead, child. Go and finish the missions. After all, smooth seas do not make skillful sailors!”

Reinhardt hastened to assure that he would complete the mission as he listened to his advice. Soon after he turned around, left the village chief's house and ran toward the outside world.

While he was running, again he recalled the inheritance post in the forum shared by that professional player.

In the description of that post, there were six rounds of missions in the Dark Knight Trial. Other than the first round of monster killing, there were subsequent trials on stuff such as item hunting and so on.

Reinhardt could still remember the process of these missions clearly. In fact, the first round was the hardest for him. There were too many players at the current stage after all. These wandering souls without takers at the later

stage were never easy to be found initially. That explained his hasty behavior as he ran outside.

At the same time, the reason that he chose the Knight character class was because that Dark Knight player was a Knight in his previous life, too. Thus, he chose the Knight as his beginning character class just to be on the safe side. This was to prevent the situation of the failure in triggering the missions for non-knight character classes.

During the early stage, a person's power was undoubtedly finite. It would be rather impossible for him to fight on his own, especially for the marsh crocodiles in the first round. With that, he opened his friend list immediately and sent a friend request to McCray.

After adding each other as friends, both of them made an appointment to meet at the entrance of the village. Shortly after Reinhardt had gathered some players nearby, the crowd headed to the Hidden Dragon Marsh under Reinhardt's lead.

Three hours later...

Everyone no longer looked at him the same way they used to when they saw the marsh crocodiles that had fallen into Reinhardt's trap again.

"How did you do that? Since when did you know how to set up traps? Moreover, you know how to lure the marsh crocodiles as well! Also, why would you have such a skilled battling style?"

Looking at the totally different Reinhardt, his buddy McCray could no longer stand it and asked eventually.

His words made Reinhardt smile confidently.

Of course, he would not say that he was once a poor player and could not even team up with anyone. Therefore, he ended up learning this trap-based attacking approach from the forum. It was the experience gained from innumerable times of practice.

As for McCray's so-called skilled battling style, it took him two years of hard work to master it.

...

Following that, their monster-killing efficiency was highly increased with Reinhardt's command on top of the simultaneous attacks of the team.

Soon, Reinhardt was acknowledged as a professional player on the team. Some even asked him whether he intended to establish a guild for they wanted to follow him.

This made Reinhardt feel rather pleased. Looking back at the past where he had been struggling at the bottom, he got a sudden feeling of rising from the ashes.

"I can teach you guys the trap-based attacking approach as well as the secret to practice battling style. However, you have to teach others whatever you've learned. After all, our future rivals are going to be intimidated with these so-called cheats. Just a powerful person alone can do them no harm. For this reason, we, the Army of Deity Xu have to develop ourselves in an all-round way. Forget about the establishment of a guild, but we can still team up and kill monsters," Reinhardt had no choice but to say so as he looked at those eager faces.

"A powerful rival? Do you mean the Ghost Kings and Ghost Generals nearby?" McCray asked curiously.

"No. They are worse. It is the Beiqi Army that belongs to the Fourth Disaster Faction, just like us. They are publicly known as the first army of the entire server in the future. Not only that, people have even dubbed them The Exclusive Hacking Zone!"

"You mean the original server that was launched three months earlier than us?" McCray asked curiously.

"That's right!"

“How do you know about this? I’ve been hanging out with you almost every day and I’ve never seen you paying attention to this game,” McCray was shocked.

“I dreamed of it!” Reinhardt tried to act cool by blowing his hair as he spoke.

Chapter 184 - Dark Knight = Dark Chess

Chapter 184: Dark Knight = Dark Chess

While Reinhardt was working hard to level up, Lu Wu and Bei Li were paying close attention to him.

In Reinhardt's point of view, he was completely reborn. However, what he did not know was that Lu Wu and Bei Li were the ones who planned it all.

Before the European server was launched, Lu Wu had been discussing with Bei Li and Cangxu regarding the European server's development issues.

Their discussions had included the strength evaluation between these two servers.

One thing to point out was that the gaps between these two servers were in fact huge, be it the number of players or the individual's strength. On top of that, the European server was launched late and subsequently, this would only widen the gaps instead of closing them. In order to spice up the server's competitiveness, three of them started to put their heads together to sort this little issue out.

First and foremost, Lu Wu would certainly not weaken the development momentum of the original server's players. After all, the stronger the players, the more he would gain.

In that case, the boosting of the comprehensive capability of the European server players became a headache.

At the end of the day, Bei Li suggested building up an experienced player who could drive the development of the entire region.

Bei Li's idea was fairly simple, which was to retrieve a trace of memory from the future player using the artifact's power, the Six Paths of Reincarnation. The memory would then be inserted into a player in the European server, giving him a misconception of reincarnation. In fact, his future memory two years from now had just been dragged back to the present.

Nevertheless, this method was easier said than done. It had cost Lu Wu a total of five million soul coins just to activate the artifact's Six Paths of Reincarnation power and steal this trace of future memory. His soul coins were only enough for him to put it off to two years at most.

This time, his pockets were basically bled dry with less than one million soul coins left.

Of course, they could not simply make a random selection as it was related to prophecy. The person they were looking for must be someone who was willing to contribute to the development of the entire region.

However, the operation of the Six Paths of Reincarnation's power would consume a lot of soul coins within seconds. Other than the focused regions in the European server, Bei Li did not have time to select a suitable candidate at all.

Nonetheless, there was a solution to every problem.

Bei Li had made some amendments to the memory stolen from the future Reinhardt. She inserted a new notion, where it was a must for the European server to beat the original server. She then set everything up to activate this memory right before the server launched. Shortly thereafter, she asked Cangxu to go to Europe in advance and insert this memory into Reinhardt's body.

This was the reason behind Reinhardt's detailed dream for the rise of the European server as he used to care about nothing but money. He was even willing to teach the players about his gaming techniques.

Reinhardt's memory was undoubtedly real though. This had been shown based on the instant discovery of the hidden easter egg set up by Lu Wu and Bei Li.

Lu Wu could not guarantee whether this butterfly was able to change the future insight of Battle Online. Lu Wu considered him as a Dark Chess piece that cost five million soul coins. Whether or not he would come into play and trigger some ripple effects, Lu Wu could only gamble a guess.

As for the issues such as people suspecting that he was reborn since he kept on showing the technical stuff, Lu Wu was not the slightest bit worried. This was exactly what he wanted in the first place. Otherwise, how was it possible to thrust the development of the European server?

...

Under Reinhardt's highly efficient monster-killing plan, the first trial mission was finally completed after nine hours of hard work.

Since the twelve-hour time limit had not ended yet, Reinhardt hurriedly bid his teammates goodbye and rushed back to the Hidden Dragon Village. He found Cangxu and submitted the first round mission.

The following missions were no longer some simple monster-killings. Instead, he was requested to hunt for some materials and answer some questions that were related to the rules of Knights.

Despite that, Reinhardt was well-prepared in advance. He managed to complete all the missions blindfolded based on his memories.

During the eleventh hour in the game, the first server announcement of the European server was heard.

[Congratulations to the player Reinhardt for completing a hidden mission and gaining the inherited character class: Dark Knight!]

While his body was digitized, strings of messages came across his mind simultaneously. This made him clench his fist excitedly.

In his memory, this inherited character class was priceless. Although countless people had offered a price for it in the next two years, the transaction was never successful.

Gaining the inherited character class was Reinhardt's greatest dream ever in his previous life. It was just that he did not expect it to be fulfilled in such a way.

At this moment, the Dark Knight's menu appeared.

[Dark Knight]:

Class Description: The Dark Knight who came from the Western Underworld kept his dark faith and held the Spear of Death in his hand. He wanted to spread the death belief in the Land of Cangxu but he was later attacked by Fenshui Ghost King and Riying Ghost King.

Class Specialty: Death Infection, Dark Mount

Wearing Weapon: Spear, Spear of Death (A growing weapon that requires an advanced caster to cast it).

Default Class Ability: Dark Knight (passive), Dark Mount (passive), Dark Assault, Death Throw, Dark Duel.

[Dark Knight Level 1 (passive)]:

Skill Description: The Dark Knight shrouded in dark strength has 5% immunity against all elemental attacks. The lower the health, the greater the damage of the attack (The enhancing effect is affected by an individual's own level with a lower growing range during the earlier stage).

[Dark Mount (passive)]:

Skill Description: Every mount capitulated to the Dark Knight will succumb to Death Infection and gain a 20% bonus for all attributes. The ability to respawn after death is granted (Each respawn will weaken the attributes by 10% and up to five respawns are allowed).

[Dark Assault]:

Skill Ability: The Dark Knight coordinates with his mount to initiate a forward strike and drive the enemy back for five to 50 feet away (The magnitude and effect of the hit are affected by the overlapping strength attributes (speed) of his own and the mount). (The damage increases by 30% when the immobile unit is hit). (During the assault, you and the enemy who you have hit along the way will be subjected to the strength attribute determination. Those who fail the determination will be bounced away).

Skill Cooldown: 30 minutes.

[Death Throw]:

Skill Ability: To form a Death Spear and throw it toward the target. This will lead to a blast damage and cause a temporary daze (The dazing period is affected by the target's physique) (Throwing the spear during the state of riding forward can increase the damage of the Death Throw under the influence of speed).

Skill Cooldown: 20 minutes.

[Dark Duel (exclusive specialty)]:

Skill Description: The Dark Wrestling Arena will be activated after the Dark Knight chanted the duel oath. Within this period, you can choose a player as your challenging target. The selected one will be dragged into the Dark Wrestling Arena for a one on one match with you. You both will be immune to all the external damages within this period. If the Dark Knight wins in the end, the defeated one's body will be captured (Attribute is 50% weakened, skill effectiveness is 50% weakened) and turned into the Dark Knight's dark slave under his command for ten minutes.

Skill Annotation: This skill is only applicable to players and has no effect on the monsters in the external world.

Skill Cooldown: 32 hours.

...

Upon seeing himself undergoing the character class enhancement, especially when he saw the Dark Knight's Attributes Menu, Reinhardt burst into laughter.

He was clear of how powerful the Dark Knight was.

Back then during the battle between the European server and the American server, that Dark Knight player had forced his way into the American server army by himself. He chose the crucial buff of their team and activated the Dark Duel before killing the buff forcibly in the middle of the huge army.

Hereafter, he utilized the growing range of those players who became his dark slaves and his own attributes resisted the ability to kill quite a number of the American server's professional players. Only then did he return to the resurrection point instantaneously.

Moreover, the Dark Knight's defensive ability was giving headaches to all the character classes. The players used to rate it as one of the top three ultimate defending character classes in Battle Online.

In this life, I want the name of the European server's Strongest Knight! I will lead the European server to prosperity. Reinhardt clenched his fist tightly and his eyes shone with excitement.

At this moment, the twelve-hour gaming safety notification appeared and he was logged out of the game.

Chapter 185 - The Destiny'S Child Of The Multiverse

Chapter 185: The Destiny's Child Of The Multiverse

During the early stages of the European server's development, Lu Wu spent a ton of soul coins on various projects such as constructing Hidden Dragon Village and creating experienced players. At the moment, Lu Wu's pockets were running dry once again.

He thought of transferring soul coins from the players to his own artifact and issuing the coins back to them only when they needed soul coins.

However, as a bank to store soul coins, he would need to become something like a full-fledged online payment system. He could have many soul coins at his disposal anytime and anywhere.

But there would be a pitfall in doing so.

After all, the greatest difference between institutions like banks or financial apps and him was that he had no way to make soul coins, while institutions like banks could rely on lending that deposited money to gain profit.

If Lu Wu turned himself into an actual banking institution, the soul coins he spent could not be restored and the leakage would only become bigger and bigger.

One day, an emergency might happen to Beiqi players, causing most players to buy items such as consumables and equipment from the shops. However, Lu Wu would have spent this money on his projects and could not possibly fork out enough soul coins to create the items in the shop that the players required.

Therefore, to be on the safe side and to guarantee Battle Online's long-term operation, Lu Wu would certainly not make such a risky move.

However, there were still a few crucial problems that Lu Wu had not settled yet. These few crucial problems were the important turning points that he had set to accelerate the development of the European server.

To solve these problems, he required a lot of soul coins. As such, the source of these soul coins became a problem.

Although the European server players had started to create their own ways to make soul coins, its effect was insignificant as they had just started and the amount of soul coins was too little.

After a round of contemplation and discussion with Bei Li, Lu Wu set his sight on the players who had the most soul coins.

It so happened that the Lantern Festival was around the corner. So, the soul coins in the players' pockets were ripe for the harvest!

...

Recently, the development of the ocean became a popular craze in the game. The players expanded their navy capabilities while more and more warships that had special abilities were made. A few top guilds from other games had even joined Battle Online, firing the tournament up.

On this particular day, the players noticed an upcoming event notification popping up on the top right corner when they went online.

[Lantern Festival Rampage event notification]:

A thousand thanks to the players who have been supporting our game all this time! During the Lantern Festival, we will release a special event, the Lantern Festival Rampage as a reward for your support. There are four mini-events that make up this event:

[Event One: Lantern Festival Lucky Draw]

Event Details: There will be a lucky draw wheel in the shops during the Lantern Festival. Spend five soul coins to get a chance to draw these prizes.

Rewards: 120 gift choices such as rare costumes, Level 50 weapon equipment of any quality, high quality spiritual materials, a chance of getting a free skill from the Cultivation Pavilion, 100 soul coins, 1,000 soul coins, a guild warship, and so on.

Event Period: All day February 19, 2319.

[Event Two: Lucky Tangyuan]

Event Details: During the Lantern Festival event, monsters you kill have a chance to drop ingredients for making delicious glutinous rice balls, known traditionally as tangyuan. Different ingredients could be used to make different flavors of tangyuan. The higher the quality of the tangyuan that you make, the better the rewards gained after using it.

Types of Lucky Tangyuan:

Black Sesame Tangyuan (Quality Level 1):

Required Materials: black sesame, groundnut kernel, and walnut meat.

Five Seed Tangyuan (Quality Level 2)

Required Materials: shelled-melon seed, sesame kernel, pine nut kernel, almond, and peach kernel.

Lotus Tangyuan (Quality Level 2)

Required Materials: lotus root, peanut, red bean, and red date.

Event Hint: During the Lucky Tangyuan event period, there are a total of 100 ingredients that monsters could drop. Players could try mixing and matching any ingredients on their own to create a super-high quality special flavor of tangyuan.

Event Period: All day on February 18, 2319.

[Event Three: Lantern Riddle]

Event Details: Every player who logs on to the game during the event period will receive a silk bag filled with lantern riddles. You will gain a riddle related to the location of your exclusive lantern when you open a bag. Players who solve a riddle and find their own lantern would receive soul coins as a reward. (More soul coins will be rewarded with less time spent.)

Event Hint: There is a time ranking list during this event. The first 100 players who solve the riddles within the shortest time will get special titles as a reward.

Event Period: 8pm to midnight on the night of Lantern Festival.

[Event Four: Lantern Festival Auction]

Event Details: Every player can take part in this event. This event lasts for an hour. The trial mission of a hidden character class called Devilman will be auctioned in this event.

The bidding for this event will only accept soul coins. The player with the successful bid will receive the Devilman's Trial Scroll. If the player could not complete the trial mission within the limited time after using it, it would be considered as a failed mission. The hidden character class will then disappear.

...

It seemed like Lu Wu was giving back to the players in the Lantern Festival event this time. In fact, Lu Wu was employing a strategy widely used in many games. They all hinted at a single message to the players.

It's time to spend money in-game!

To make sure that the plan for the European server could be launched quickly, Lu Wu was planning to grasp this profitable opportunity during the Lantern Festival.

As for the final reward of the Lantern Festival this time, the hidden character class Devilman was a Ghost General at the lowest level of the

Spirit Summoning Palace. However, Lu Wu would not have given it up if he was not lacking soul coins.

Of course, he only sold the initial trial. This meant that the player would not certainly receive the character class after winning the bid. Lu Wu was doing this to let the players realize how precious the hidden and inherited character classes were.

Simultaneously, the players were having a lively discussion regarding the Lantern Festival event in the forum.

Invincible_Loneliness: “It seems like I have to get some more soul coins. Devilman definitely cannot rival my inherited character, but I can give it to my members and raise my guild’s strength!”

A_Large_Wolfdog replied to Invincible_Loneliness: “Boss... boss, please give me this Devilman. I don’t want to be a dog anymore. (puppy eyes)”

Invincible_Loneliness: “I refuse, you are a baby. This Devilman doesn’t have any healing ability and cannot compare with your White Phantom. Dog, I advise you to be kind and don’t think of the pie in the sky anymore. (poker face)”

A_Large_Wolfdog replied to Invincible_Loneliness: “Aww~ I’m very angry! (cheek blowing and disheartening.jpg)”

Crayon_Shinchan replied to A_Large_Wolfdog: “Patting the dog’s head as always. Silly dog, this is your blessing in disguise. Many people want your inheritance so badly but they could never get it.”

A_Large_Wolfdog replied to Crayon_Shinchan: “You will be dead on the day you expose your real identity. (mean eyes)”

Star_Universe (European): “I really love this game. The gaming experience is wonderful! I’m going to do a little sightseeing in the original forum. I hope to get familiar with you guys. At the same time, I want to say that the Devilman in this event is not bad XD!”

High_Ping_Warrior (European): “Why does the original server have four Lantern Festival events but the European server only has the last one? I want to protest!”

Crayon_Shinchan replied to High_Ping_Warrior: “It’s because the Lantern Festival isn’t widely celebrated in Europe. Buddy, your awareness isn’t sharp enough (smirk)!”

Reinhardt (European): “As expected, the original server is prevailing at the early stage. I’m very worried about the development of the European server. However, we will have the last laugh! :D”

...

Due to the inequality in the Lantern Festival event, many European server players who received the news flooded into the official web forum. They started to protest and wanted an official explanation.

Lu Wu really had nothing to say.

The highly proficient original server players were controlling Beiqi now. They occupied the three big regions, which were the Mansion of the Dead, Liuli District, and the Burial Grounds. They acted independently and defied the Ghost Kings. They did whatever they wanted in Beiqi. However, the European server’s players were still huddling up in a corner of the Hidden Dragon region in the Land of Cangxu. With the current strength of the European server players, they would only be beaten once they stepped out. They could not travel far at all.

This could not be blamed on Lu Wu.

...

Europe, Paris, France.

A youngster took off his virtual helmet slowly. There was a trace of bitterness on his pale face.

A little more and he would have killed the marsh crocodiles and leveled up. However, he was forced to leave the game at the crucial moment because of the twelve-hour gaming limitations. This was too difficult to bear.

His name was Li Xing and his parents were from the Dragon nation. Due to business, they settled down in France and he was born here, too.

Li Xing did not have many friends. He indulged in games and was just an antisocial kid afflicted with eighth-grader syndrome.

Usually, Li Xing was concerned about internationally launched new games. He had anticipated this so-called 100% realistic game for a long time. And finally, the European server of this game was formally launched. He immediately downloaded it and experienced it.

After that, he was totally hooked on this game and became a loyal player.

However, the twelve-hour safety gaming limitation time gave him a headache. He had been sending feedback to the official forum and protested. However, he did not receive a single reply from the officials. They were unfathomably heartless and cold.

This made Li Xing so angry that he was planning to uninstall the game on the spot. However, he downloaded it back after half an hour.

This is because he could not put himself into any other game after playing Battle Online. He could no longer be attracted to games with stiff actions and unrealistic graphics.

Battle Online was too wonderful!

At the moment, Li Xing glanced at the Jie De Corporation's gaming pod beside him and could not help giving it a kick, "What is your damn use?"

The more he thought, the angrier Li Xing got. He took out his phone at once and made an after-sales' call to the Jie De Corporation.

After Li Xing's complaint, he got the same reply again.

The gaming pod was not the problem. Instead, the game was incompatible with the gaming pod. They had no way to settle this but they were working hard to discuss and settle this with the company behind Battle Online.

Li Xing flashed his mobile phone at once and checked whether the Black Sea Corporation's gaming pod would be arriving any time soon.

[The order is being delivered and has arrived in Paris. The courier is out delivering the order...]

When Li Xing saw that the gaming pod had arrived in Paris, a trace of excitement came across his face. He had been looking forward to this new gaming pod for many days. It was delivered finally and the twelve-hour problem could be settled.

Ding-dong!

Suddenly, the doorbell rang. Li Xing was overjoyed. He thought that his express delivery had arrived. He ran to the doorway hurriedly and opened the door.

“Hello, please verify here to acknowledge receipt of your gaming pod!” the courier lowered down his cap and handed over the tablet in his hand.

Li Xing nodded his head excitedly and pressed his fingerprint on the screen.

“Do you need me to bring it in?” the courier asked.

“Yes, please do!”

This courier carried the huge gaming pod with ease and walked into the house step by step while Li Xing was looking at him with an astonished expression.

After about five minutes of installation, the man said goodbye and left.

Li Xing was very excited when he looked at the gaming pod with a black metal frame. He opened the gaming pod and scurried inside.

As expected, the Black Sea Corporation's gaming pod was compatible with Battle Online perfectly. It was installed perfectly and successfully. This made Li Xing think of returning the other gaming pod. It did cost him some money after all.

When he entered the gaming pod and activated the game, Li Xing had a headache suddenly. A voice rang loudly:

[Congratulations! The host is bound to the Destiny's Child system in the pan-multiverse gaming world!]

[Checking the host's condition...]

[The host is Li Xing. Congratulations, you shall begin your journey to the top. As long as you keep completing the system missions, you will become a legendary character in Battle Online!]

[Hint #1 of the system's regulations: Do not tell anyone about the presence of this system. Otherwise, the host will be erased!]

[Hint #2 of the system's regulation: This system is only limited to assist the host to become a powerful individual in the game and will not help the host to interfere with reality...]

[Hint #3 of the system's regulation...]

...

There was no gaming frame in front of him but the unfathomable sound was heard constantly. This totally confused Li Xing, following which he pushed the gaming pod open and went out of it.

He took out his phone and dialed the number for the after-sales service center after glancing at the gaming pod.

Li Xing told the reason for calling after the line was connected. However, the Black Sea Corporation's customer service personnel asked Li Xing to wait for a moment to check his order.

After a while...”Hello, Mr. Li. We have confirmed that your gaming pod is still in delivery. It has not arrived yet. Here’s the contact number of the courier.”

Li Xing was stupefied after he hung up the phone.

This gaming pod has arrived, why is it still in delivery? What’s with this gaming pod?

[Hello, host...]

At this moment, the sound was heard again. Li Xing was taken aback.

Was the voice from my mind? The system is really living inside my body!

He had read some novels so he understood what this meant. This happiness came too suddenly and caught him off guard.

Don’t tell me that I’m the main character of this world!?

Ding-dong! At that moment, the doorbell rang again.

“Hello, your parcel has arrived! Please come out and sign for acceptance!” a shout was heard from the door.

Chapter 186 - The System Quest

Chapter 186: The System Quest

The moment Li Xing was bound to the system, he danced for joy and excitement as he thought he was Destiny's Child. At the same time, Lu Wu and Bei Li, who were observing him furtively, burst into laughter.

The special system that Li Xing inherited was undoubtedly Bei Li's creation.

The purpose of this system was to let Li Xing guide the European server's growth according to Lu Wu's will. Li Xing was equivalent to Lu Wu's spokesperson among the European server players. After all, Lu Wu's principle ideal was to never go to battle personally.

However, although he was supposed to be Lu Wu's spokesperson, Lu Wu allowed Cangxu to manage him. He also gave him permission. After all, his main focus was on the highly proficient original server players. Therefore, he did not have much energy left to manage the European server.

As a matter of fact, the system created by Bei Li was not as powerful as Li Xing thought. This was mentioned right when the system was introduced. The system would not interfere with reality but would only aid his growth in the game.

It was difficult for Li Xing to gain any benefit from the system because the difficulty of unlocking the system was proportional to the collective increase of the ability of the European server players.

Lu Wu chose him as the system host because Li Xing was the player with the strongest overall ability among the entire European server now, save for Reinhardt.

It was not easy to become the overall strongest among millions of players in the current European server. He was truly a professional player by

definition as he could kill marsh crocodiles with his bare hands on just the third day after the launch of the region.

To nurture a super player who could assume personal responsibility and lead the emergence of the European server was also one of Lu Wu's reasons in choosing him as the system host.

Another reason was, although Li Xing was a nerd in reality, Lu Wu and Bei Li found that he was the leader of the strongest guild in Storm Legends called Zore.

A top player, coupled with the cheating codes specially given by Lu Wu, he believed that Li Xing would play a significant role in increasing the overall strength of the European server players.

“Wu, what should we do when the Asian server and American server are launched? Do we have to create another system host? Or will we shift to other settings like creating an old man or sage?” Bei Li asked curiously.

Lu Wu put on an ambiguous smile upon hearing her words.

“Don't you think it's interesting?”

Bei Li rolled her eyes, “You almost made them believe that they are children of destiny in the world.”

“Hahaha. Just arrange everything as I said!”

In Lu Wu's point of view, the so-called Destiny's Children were just old farmers who were helping him to grow his chives.

And as the boss behind the game, his happiness mattered the most.

After a brief celebration, Li Xing took a deep breath before he opened the door.

Upon looking at Li Xing's blushing face, the delivery man put on an astonished expression.

“Hello, Mister Li Xing. Please sign for the receipt of your gaming pod!”

Li Xing nodded and beckoned the delivery man to bring the gaming pod into his house after pressing his fingerprint.

This time, the delivery man did not carry the pod into the house alone. The delivery man called out the porters in the car and moved the heavy gaming pod into Li Xing’s house.

Also, the delivery man did not help him to install the gaming pod as it was not his job, after all. In the end, Li Xing set about and installed the gaming pod on his own.

Li Xing’s face showed a trace of helplessness upon looking at the three gaming pods. One of them was incompatible and one of them was a vacant shell which carried a system binding, and could not access the game. Only the latest pod was practically usable.

Li Xing entered the gaming pod excitedly and started the game.

The screen turned dim, before it became clear again. His silhouette appeared at the Hidden Dragon Marsh Region where he had gone offline previously.

He heaved a sigh after looking at the marsh crocodiles that had disappeared in the surrounding area. He had spent a few hours wearing down their health. He was a little unhappy that they vanished just like that.

At this moment, the system menu appeared abruptly in front of him.

[Game Multiverse Destiny’s Child System (Stage One: 0/500)]:

Ability One: Monsters Explore Level 1 (able to scout out monsters within 100 yards).

Ability Two: Unknown (Will be activated in the advanced system).

While the menu appeared, he heard the system’s voice again.

[Ding! The host has entered the game! The first wave of system quests has been activated: Rise of the Guild, Path of the Strong, Ruler of the Server!]

[Rise of the Guild (Quest of Beginner Level)]:

Quest Description: Create your own guild and recruit 500 guild members.

Quest Reward: A clue to advance to an inherited character class, and gain 30 system points.

[Path of the Strong (Quest of Beginner Level)]:

Quest Description: Get listed as one of the Top 100 players on the leaderboard for ten consecutive days.

Current Progress: Current Rank – 2nd Place; Duration: 1/10 days.

Quest Reward: A map piece revealing the location of spiritual materials in the Hidden Dragon region, gain 20 system points.

[Ruler of the Server (Quest of Legendary Level)]:

Quest Description: Lead the European server to become the best server among all.

Quest Reward: One million soul coins, gain 150 million system points.

Li Xing was stunned as soon as he read the system menu. Soon, his face beamed with delight as he did not expect that the system could help him find clues that would lead him to the inherited quests.

He certainly understood the value of this inherited quest.

As a professional player, he had studied Battle Online carefully before the European server was launched.

The most valuable things in the game now were the inherited character classes. They were priceless and could not be bought with money. He had

seen rich players who offered 30 million to buy an inherited character class, but no one wanted to sell it. It was evident how precious it was.

Li Xing was taken aback when he saw the last quest of legendary level.

One million soul coins? That's insane!

The trading volume in the European Server Soul Coins Transaction Center was extremely high. The value of a soul coin was skyrocketing.

Other than soul coins that were priced exceptionally high, the other soul coins that were sold at market price or even slightly higher were cleared out by the rich players. Therefore, it was set at a high price but had no demand.

The normal conversation rate for one soul coin in the European server was one to 500. As such, one million soul coins was equal to 500 million euros. Li Xing took a deep breath as this reward was too tempting.

However, Li Xing did not know that this was one of the bargaining chips that Lu Wu offered to lure Li Xing to help build the European server. As for whether the European server would win in the future Server Wars, Lu Wu was not worried at all.

He was very confident in the Beiqi Army of the original server.

Furthermore, even if the European server could really defeat the original server, Lu Wu would not mind paying him the money. What he would gain was far more valuable than one million soul coins.

Chapter 187 - The Lantern Festival Event

Chapter 187: The Lantern Festival Event

At midnight, the Lantern Festival event of Battle Online had officially begun.

The lucky wheel appeared in the shops just like what the players anticipated.

This was the first ever lucky draw event in the game. Basically, all of the players were eager to give it a try. They couldn't resist going to the shop. They threw in their soul coins and awaited the judgment of destiny.

At this moment, a group of players sat in a circle in front of Tong Gua's Forge. All of them held a set of cards in their hands.

Among them, Tong Gua was the most agitated one.

Tonight, he had lost more than ten consecutive rounds. If he continued to lose, he would have to make a bet with his underpants. He had almost finished betting all the soul coins that he earned from his work of forging equipment.

This next round would determine his life or death.

"Three!" Ye Chen threw out a card of three after he took a glance at the set of cards in his hands.

"Joker bomb!" Tong Gua lifted his clothes upon seeing the card thrown out by Ye Chen. He followed up by throwing out two cards aggressively.

"You guys have no more cards to play, right?" Tong Gua swept his eyes over the others arrogantly. When he saw that everyone else was silent, he

eventually threw out the card of three in his hand.

“Hahaha. All of you are shocked, right? Do you think you all just keep beating me? Come come come, pay up!”

Tong Gua was overjoyed as this was his first win. After getting his soul coins back, he grabbed the bottle of Wood Spirit Wine from his waist pocket and took several big gulps out of it.

“Come come come, let’s continue! I will spell my name backward if I can’t make you cry tonight!”

The players, including Ye Chen, felt deeply ashamed upon hearing this. They could not remember how many times Tong Gua had promised to spell his name backward.

“No, no. The big event is starting. I want to keep my soul coins for the lucky draw. Then, I need to make some traditional tangyuan later. That’s it for today!”

“Yes, yes, yes. The Lantern Festival event has just begun. I’m done for the day, too...”

“Let’s go, let’s go!”

Tong Gua was glued to his spot when he watched as the other players rose to their feet and left him alone.

I’ve finally won a round, but they want to end it now? At that moment, there was a hint of bitterness in Tong Gua’s heart as he was not done with the game yet.

“What’s so great about a damn wheel? Is it really that fun?”

At this thought, Tong Gua picked up the clothes on the floor before he turned around and entered his house.

After lying down on his bed, Tong Gua could not help opening the shop interface. He wanted to see what the so-called lucky wheel was all about. Is

it more fun than playing cards?

Five soul coins per roll?

Upon looking at the brief introduction on the wheel, Tong Gua glanced at the thousand plus soul coins left in his inventory. He pondered it over and decided to give it a try.

Hence, he exchanged five soul coins with a lucky draw.

After Tong Gua pressed the start button at the center of the wheel, the wheel started spinning rapidly and the image began to blur out.

After about three seconds, the wheel slowed down and the pointer became distinctive before it gradually stopped at nothing.

Tong Gua could not help but heave a sigh upon seeing this. As expected, this was not reliable, he thought. How can they give out soul coins to the players for no reason?

[Game Notification: Congratulations! You have hit the jackpot and won 500 soul coins!]

The despairing Tong Gua opened his eyes wide when he saw this.

I really won a prize! Is this a scam?

Tong Gua was in doubt. He bought a chance for the lucky draw again before he pressed the draw button for a second time.

[Game Notification: Congratulations! You have hit the jackpot and won 300 soul coins!]

Tong Gua felt giddy after receiving another price. Two rounds and he had already earned 800 soul coins, which could buy him many bottles of the superior quality Wood Spirit Wine.

Under the great temptations of the prizes, Tong Gua bought twenty chances for the lucky draw in one shot. He started to spin the lucky wheel

continuously.

[Game Notification: Congratulations! You have won 1 soul coin!]

[Game Notification: Congratulations! You have won a Level 10 (white) weapon!]

[Game Notification: Sorry, you did not win any prize...]

The barrage of notifications stunned Tong Gua. After that, he got up from bed with a pair of reddened eyes. He tossed his clothes onto the bed.

“I don’t believe that I can’t win!”

Tong Gua’s gambling addiction was aroused. He bought a hundred lucky draws and wanted to regain his investment by aiming at the grand prize. Winning the grand prize twice would bring him a load of fortune. As for the other things like weapons or armor, he could sell them off to the other players at a low price. In short, he would not suffer from any deficit.

[Game Notification: Sorry, you did not win any prize...]

[Game Notification: Congratulations! You have won a Level 1 (white) armor!]

After he drew all the lucky draws, Tong Gua’s face was pale. Other than the highest reward, which was 30 soul coins, the other draws were a bunch of metal scraps that were worth nothing more than a few soul coins.

Facing this situation, Tong Gua was very regretful. Why did he not quit when he was ahead? It was obvious that it was a cheat released by the developer behind the scenes. How did I fall for this trick?

However, while Tong Gua was regretful, he bought another hundred tries.

He thought that he would not draw anymore after this. He only wanted to get back what he had earned from playing cards just now. He decided he would not be greedy anymore.

With this mentality, Tong Gua rolled the dice of fate once more.

Ten minutes later, Tong Gua's feet turned jelly as he fell onto his bed all of a sudden.

This damn wheel is such a scam!

This time, he not only lost his profit, he also lost quite a bit of money.

However, Tong Gua could not allow himself to stop now. These were the soul coins that he earned by forging armor and equipment painstakingly every day.

Hence, Ting Gua changed his target this time. He was thinking about getting his capital back and he would never touch this wheel anymore.

Upon looking at his remaining 800 soul coins, Tong Gua's heart ached. He pondered over and did not buy the extravagant package. Instead, he chose the single draw.

After ten more minutes, Tong Gua's heart pained as he looked at the 400 soul coins and a bunch of metal scraps in his inventory. His heart was almost broken.

However, what was done was done. What else could he do? He wanted to bet everything he had on one last round; he'd either earn his money back or lose everything!

As a result, Tong Gua turned the wheel of destiny again.

This time, as expected, the wheel could not have been more predictable. All of his soul coins were gone and he finally had nothing to his name.

When the draw ended, Tong Gua stared blankly into space as he lay on his bed. He was resentful. Why did I touch that damn wheel? Am I a fool!?

Since there were many players playing the lucky wheel, server announcements about rare draws by players, such as special weapons or costumes, were heard from time to time.

This gave the players an illusion that their bad draws were just because of their own bad luck. When they saw the others getting some valuable prizes, they would think that they had a chance, too, if they continued to bet on it. They would think that winning an item worthy of a server notification would help them earn back their capital and make them rich. The lucky draw event went on like a raging fire.

Meanwhile, Lu Wu who sat behind the scene looked as the soul coins piled up in his storage. He picked up his teacup and took a sip out of it leisurely.

At this moment, he experienced the feelings of a plotter who organized a lucky draw event. It was a pleasure to cheat on the people and let them spend money.

That's awesome!

During the third hour of the lucky draw event, some players in the forum were grumbling, while others flaunted their wins. Several questions were raised by the players as well.

Watermelon_Taro: "Screw you, lucky players! I did not expect my luck to suck so badly. This is too unbearable. I am a weak player to begin with, and I have not seen any chance for my comeback yet! (sobs)"

Fat_Happy_Water: "I suspect something is wrong with this damn lucky draw. Other than a 300 soul coin reward, I have gained nothing. I have lost so much money that I have started to doubt my life... (Gillfish_Clan_Selfdoubt.jpg)"

Crayon_Shinchan replied to Fat_Happy_Water: "What's the problem? Instead of real coins, you are spending soul coins on the lucky draw. So, the bank doesn't make money from it. Why would they cheat you with this? Silly kid, just face the truth that your luck is bad. (laughing emoji)"

Xueli_The_Strongest: "I won a beautiful costume. I'm satisfied. Thanks to the lucky wheel. However, I have stopped drawing after I've won the prize, so I would not comment on the probability. (laughing emoji)"

Although there were only one or two doubting voices in the forum, the majority of the players had the same thought as Crayon_Shinchan. They thought that the lucky draw event was only carried out in the game. Whether the players won prizes or not, the bank wouldn't earn a cent.

Moreover, if everyone won grand prizes, the balance of the game would be toppled. Thus, they treated this event as pure entertainment.

Five hours after the lucky draw event had launched, the number of participants started to decrease. Most of them headed to the wilderness to kill monsters. They wanted to collect the ingredients to make tangyuan.

Two silhouettes were sitting by the Liuli coast as they counted their ingredients under the morning glow.

Murphy and Little Pomelo had different thoughts from most players. They did not participate in the lucky wheel event at all.

In their point of view, every single coin earned should be used to build the foundation for their future happiness. They were not willing to spend them on some unreliable luck.

Therefore, they were looking for their prey in Liuli District while the other players were getting excited for the rain of server notifications. They wanted to gather more ingredients to make high-quality tangyuan, so that they could produce more when the time came.

To them, the rewards from this event were more reliable.

After five hours of hard work, they harvested a hundred types of different materials. Adding in the duplicates, they had about 300 pieces of special material altogether.

“We're almost there. Let's try to synthesize them!” Little Pomelo squinted and smiled when she looked at Murphy.

“Okay. Make them according to the official recipe first.”

Soon after, Murphy reached out his hand to summon the Synthesis Oven given out by the game for this event, he opened the official tangyuan recipe and threw the ingredients into the stove accordingly.

As the game notification appeared, the tangyuans were ready.

[Black Sesame Tangyuan (Quality of Level 1)]:

Item Description: Players will gain 100 experience points after consuming it.

[Five Seed Tangyuan (Quality of Level 2)]:

Item Description: Players will gain 300 experience points after consuming it. Players are also given a rare and limited chance to get one random point of attribute bonus permanently.

After synthesizing around ten servings of tangyuan, Little Pomelo spoke with her eyes sparkling in excitement, “Murphy, how about we try synthesizing them on our own? Perhaps we could make a very delicious tangyuan!”

He nodded when he saw Little Pomelo’s eagerness.

“You first... all the best!”

Murphy knew that Little Pomelo had always wanted to learn how to cook. Unfortunately, she was blind. It was unrealistic to do this in reality. So he agreed decisively when he saw the eagerness in Little Pomelo’s eyes.

It did not matter if the materials were wasted. In his point of view, Little Pomelo’s happiness surpassed everything.

In the meantime, Little Pomelo had no idea how to match the ingredients to synthesize a delicious tangyuan. She followed her feelings and threw in whatever delicious ingredients into the Synthesis Oven. Then, she waited eagerly for them to turn into a tasty tangyuan.

The first serving of tangyuan would be fresh out of the oven soon.

[Ginseng Soy Sauce Tangyuan (Quality of Level -3)]: Made of ingredients such as ginseng, soy sauce, and ginger.

Item Description: Players will earn a poison debuff after consuming it. Under a poisoned state, the certain player will lose 5 points of health per second for a duration of ten minutes.

Official Message: Don't eat it! Don't eat it!

Murphy burst into laughter upon looking at this abysmal tangyuan.

Little Pomelo, who stood to the side, was so embarrassed she grit her teeth and started on her second attempt.

After a moment, her second serving of tangyuan was out.

[Osmanthus Flower Durian Matcha Tangyuan (Quality of Level -15)]: Composed of ten types of ingredients such as osmanthus flower and durian.

Item Description: Highly poisonous. The player will lose 15 points of health per second for twenty minutes.

Official Message: Warriors, cheers!

Little Pomelo was angry when she saw Murphy suppressing his laughter. Do I have no talent in cooking at all?

She did not give up and started to make another one. She swore in her heart that she would make the tastiest tangyuan this time.

Creating two poisoned tangyuan did not lead Little Pomelo to be defeated. Instead, she got more determined with every setback.

When the eighth serving of tangyuan was out, some black smoke came out from the oven as well. Soon after, a server notification was heard.

[Congratulations to player, Little Pomelo, for successfully making a limited edition tangyuan. She gains a hidden bonus of 100 soul coins!]

The game notification stunned the both of them. Following that, they looked at the freshly cooked tangyuan.

[A Trip to the Road of Forgetfulness Tangyuan (Quality of Level -100)]:

Synthesis material: Unknown.

Item Description: Certain death after consuming it. The player will lose 100 points of health per second for a whole day.

Official Message: This bowl of poisoned tangyuan will give you a trip to the Road of Forgetfulness. You will be reborn after three hours.

“Pfft... hahaha!” this time, Murphy couldn’t stand it anymore. He burst into laughter.

On one hand, Little Pomelo was very upset. The server notification misled her into thinking that she had made a superior quality tangyuan. However, she did not expect to have synthesized an even more poisonous tangyuan.

Looking at Murphy, who was still laughing angrily, she pinched him hard.

He sensed the pain and suppressed his laughter on his beet-red face, but there were still tears at the corners of his eyes, which could be either tears of joy or of pain.

Upon looking at the remaining ingredients, which were not much, Little Pomelo gave up. She squatted down and started crying.

At that moment, Murphy took a cooked tangyuan and passed it over to her.

“Take this. Let’s continue killing monsters for ingredients after eating. You will certainly make the tastiest tangyuan.”

“Really?” Little Pomelo looked up and asked.

“Of course, you’re the best in my heart!”

Little Pomelo smiled when she heard him, and then received the tangyuan.

The two eagerly took a bowl of tangyuan each and started enjoying their meal. They planned to go and collect the ingredients after eating.

However, both of them trembled when they ate the tangyuan.

As both of them were eating different flavors of tangyuan. Coupled with their shared senses as they chewed on the tangyuan, a strange taste continued to linger on their palate.

Both of them exchanged books before they burst into laughter.

The two happily ate their tangyuan as they sat by the coast and enjoyed the sea breeze under the morning glow. They were overwhelmed with happiness.

Chapter 188 - Cross-Server Auction

Chapter 188: Cross-Server Auction

At night during the Lantern Festival event, Lu Wu was reading forum posts about the different types of bizarre tangyuan some players had made. A few of them were hilarious.

There were ridiculous creations such as A Walk Across Reincarnation Bridge, Reaper's Death Stare, Rest In Peace Brother, The Warrior's Challenge, Til Death Do Us Part, and so on. All of these bizarre tangyuan provided ample entertainment for the players. It seemed like the number of talented players in the Beiqi Army were increasing, so they could literally have so many outcomes.

Of course, besides the toxic ones, there was a delicious variety of tangyuan, too.

Aside from being scrumptious, they also had powerful attributes. The players who successfully made them proudly flaunted their creations in the forum.

At 8pm, the Lantern Riddles event officially began.

At the Mansion of the Dead, Sun Qi the dog eagerly took out the Lantern Riddles event's brocade bag from his pocket. This bag could only be opened after a specified time.

When he took out the paper strip from the brocade bag, he saw a line of words written on it.

[A peaceful place for the dead. (Guess the name of a place...)]

When he saw the hint, he understood instantly. It was undoubtedly referring to the Burial Grounds.

In Beiqi, the Burial Grounds were the only truly peaceful place for the dead, so he concluded that his exclusive lantern was located there.

The dog sprinted excitedly toward the Burial Grounds.

He had to run because all the portals were closed in the interest of a fair game during the event period.

He took half an hour to arrive at the Burial Grounds after his mad dash. As he entered, he took out the paper strip again.

At this moment, he noticed that the content on the paper had changed.

[A shattered future, a god's trample...]

Sun Qi was stunned for a few seconds when he saw this hint.

However, after giving it some thought, his face broke out into a knowing smile as he thought of the Demonic God. The god that caught most of the people's eyes in the Land of Beiqi could only be the Demonic God.

At the Burial Grounds, the shattered future and a god's trample must be referring to the place where the Demonic God and Hiderigami fought. The Burial Grounds were completely destroyed because of that battle.

Consequently, Sun Qi started to run again. He ran toward the district where the Demonic God and Hiderigami had battled.

The dog skimmed across innumerable lanterns of other players before he finally reached the district where the Demonic God and Hiderigami had fought.

At this moment, he was standing in the center of the Burial Grounds. However, there were still many lanterns in front of him. Although he had reached his destination, he didn't know which of them belonged to him.

He glanced at the leaderboard of the Lantern Riddles event. He noticed that no one had made the list yet. He anxiously took out the paper strip again.

There were no more hints on the paper strip. It only showed that he had reached the district where the lantern was located.

Left with no other choice, Sun Qi could only check one by one in order to get his rank on the leaderboard.

There were almost a hundred lanterns in this district alone. He checked each and every one of them meticulously. When he reached the halfway mark, a player's silhouette appeared within the vicinity of the area. The player was looking at his paper strip with the same astonished face that he had. Soon after, he started to look for his lantern swiftly, too.

At the appearance of a rival, the dog increased his speed.

That person saw him speeding up so he did the same, too. Both of them were stressed out. After all, the one who found the lantern first would be more handsomely rewarded.

However, Sun Qi had the advantage as he arrived first. A flash of triumph raced across the dog's eyes when he saw only three lanterns left.

It was not the first one...

Not the second either...

When his gaze landed on the third lantern, he saw that it was being held and checked by the player who arrived after him.

At this very moment, the player also noticed the dog, whose face could barely contain his excitement.

The both of them stared at each other for a short time. After that, the other player lowered his head and looked at the lantern in his hands silently. Quickly, he took to his heels and dashed away.

“Hey, you asshole! That’s mine! Mine! Give it back to me!” Sun Qi was furious. How could someone use such underhanded tactics to win? This was too much.

“Just wait, I’ll give it to you when I find mine!” the player spoke as he raced away.

“Go to hell, asshole! Are you that Crayon_Shinchan? I’ll rip you apart!” the dog bared his teeth and growled menacingly.

However, to the dog’s amazement, this person had very swift body movements. He shuttled back and forth continuously by using the Assassin’s Advanced Shadow Step, so fast that even Sun Qi couldn’t seem to catch the person.

The dog was so upset that he could only watch as the player dodged while checking to find his lantern. He was obviously cheating.

“I found it!”

Unbridled excitement sparkled in the player’s eyes. He reached out to take the lantern.

Meanwhile, Sun Qi accelerated from the side and rammed into him. The player was flung away by the impact. As the dog made contact, he bit down on the lantern that the player wanted to claim.

“Give it back to me!” the player’s eyes widened when he saw the dog taking his lantern.

“You give me mine, first!” he threatened fiercely.

“You first! Quick, since no one has completed the mission yet, I can take first place and you second... a perfect plan!”

“You’re shameless! I was the first! You should give it back to me, first!”

...

As the two of them argued on for a few more minutes, a game notification rang.

[Congratulations to player Wen Kele for being the first player to complete the mission of the Lantern Riddles event!]

Both of them were shocked before they engaged in the debate again.

“Give it to me faster! I’m the second, you’re the third!”

“Shameless little kid, I’m the second, you are the third!”

[Congratulations to player Le Baishi for being the second player to complete the mission of the Lantern Riddles event!]

“Give me! I’m the third, you are the fourth! Quick! Otherwise, we get nothing!”

“Shameless! I’m the third, you’re the fourth! This is your last chance, you better take it!”

Two hours later...

[The first 100 players of this event have ranked. Those who finish the mission after this will not receive any title reward for this event!]

Both Sun Qi and the other player’s faces went pale at the appearance of this message, their hands started to tremble.

The one and only chance to make the rankings was right in front of them...

...

At 10pm on the night of the Lantern Festival, the last event began.

[Server Announcement: the Lantern Festival Auction officially begins...]

When the game notification tone ended, the players found a Bidding Menu in front of them. There was a chat box for the players to converse at the

bottom, too.

[Lantern Festival Auction is limited to one hour. The auction item is the hidden character class Devilman and only soul coins are accepted as bids!]

Soon after, a black inheritance ball appeared slowly at the center of the Bidding Menu.

Upon seeing this black ball, a lot of the players' hearts were filled with eagerness.

When the auction button changed from grey to red, the bidding began.

Within a few seconds, the price of the Devilman's inheritance ball rose to ten thousand soul coins. Meanwhile in the event's chat box, the players from the two districts were debating fiercely.

Star_Universe (Europe): "I've spent 50 million just to buy soul coins before the event. The Devilman is mine!"

Crayon_Shinchan replied Star_Universe: "Before that, you will have to ask the filthy rich players from our server! (laughing emoji)"

Reinhardt (Europe): "Brothers from the European Server, please support your friends! Although this isn't a battle, we can't lose as well."

Xueli_The_Strongest: "Since you are so rich, have you asked permission from Invincible_Loneliness? (laughing emoji)"

Invincible_Loneliness: "Let's wait and see. Come on!"

...

While the players chatted, the bid price inflated steadily. When the figure reached 50,000 soul coins, most of the players could no longer afford it and backed out. After this, the price started to inflate at a slower pace. Nevertheless, the bidding war raged on and did not lose any intensity.

[Player from the local server, Gu Yu, placed a bid of 100,000 soul coins...]

[Player from the European server, Jason, placed a bid of 110,000 soul coins...]

[Player from the local server, Gu Yu, placed a bid of 120,000 soul coins...]

[Player from the European server, Jason, placed a bid of 125,000 soul coins...]

...

While the two protagonists competed for the top prize, the atmosphere in the event chat box became very tense.

Crayon_Shinchan: “Tsk tsk tsk, it seems like brother Jason could not stand it anymore. He only increases every bid by 5,000 now instead of 10,000. As expected, Boss Loneliness is the richest! (laughing emoji)”

High_Ping_Warrior (Europe): “Jason is the billionaire in our guild. He is just unwilling to end the battle too soon so that he could play a little while more.”

Watermelon_Taro: “I’m trembling. Does it rain money over there? I’m shocked in my little corner here. You guys are loaded!”

...

[Player from the local server, Gu Yu, placed a bid of 140,000 soul coins...]

[Player from the European server, Jason, placed a bid of 170,000 soul coins...]

Suddenly, Jason increased the bidding price by 30,000. This came as a shock in the forum. Gu Yu stared at the Bidding Menu and the color drained from his face.

He had only prepared 150,000 soul coins this time. He had not expected a European server player to be so well-prepared and put up such a fierce fight.

Gu Yu remained silent when he saw his soul coin balance. It was too late to collect any more soul coins now.

The Bidding Menu showed no activity.

The European server's players started to cheer in the chat box.

High_Ping_Warrior (Europe): "Did you see that? This is called real ability! Do you admit defeat?"

Mechanic_11 (Europe): "The players from the original server... just tremble and wait to be killed in the Cross-Server Battle!"

Dimension_Traveler (Europe): "It seems like we've won! As expected, the legendary tycoon is still the number one billionaire when he comes here!"

Dr_Gray (Europe): "Wow... it looks like we've won! Our European server is awesome!"

...

Gu Yu had an unsightly expression when he read the chat of the players from the European server. It was not that he was unwilling to spend the money, instead, he was just not as well-prepared. If he was given another chance, Gu Yu would collect one million soul coins to wage a much higher bidding battle.

At that moment, though, a few chat boxes popped up on the Friends Menu.

Liu Chai: "Brother, our guild has collected 50,000 soul coins. We just sent to you in the mail. Hang in there!"

Ye Xue'er: "Boss Gu Yu, don't worry. Just do it. I've sent 50,000 soul coins to you!"

Wu Guoyi: "Our guild has collected 60,000 soul coins. It doesn't matter whether it's worth the coins or not. The most important thing is our dignity. We can't let them be so arrogant anymore!"

Chen Ziyu: “Our guild has collected 30,000 soul coins. Brother, hang in there! I’ve sent you them.”

...

Gu Yu was touched as he read the notes sent from his friends. Soon after, he retrieved all the soul coins sent to him..

There were about 690,000 soul coins given to him. Along with his 150,000, there were 840,000 soul coins altogether.

Gu Yu typed in a series of numbers after he glanced at the Bidding Menu. Then, he pressed the bid button.

[Player from the local server, Gu Yu, placed a bid of 250,000 soul coins...]

The inflation of 100,000 coins came as a shock in the forum. This time, the players from the European server were no longer as haughty. Conversely, it was time for the local players to show off.

Crayon_Shinchan: “Oh no~ The one who talked about the tycoon of some unknown legend, come out, do you know what a slap in the face sounds like?”

Watermelon_Taro: “He deserves to be called the number one tycoon, our server is awesome!”

Xueli_The_Strongest: “Cool! Increase the price for 100,000 in one shot and beat everyone!”

High_Ping_Warrior: “The battle has not ended yet. Don’t be anxious, Jason will not lose. I’ve never seen him lose.”

...

At this moment, the players from the European server began to discuss solutions after seeing the criticism received from the original server’s players.

Li Xing, as the leader of the Zero Guild, abruptly began to request assistance from the other guilds in the European server.

Jason even swore on his honor that any soul coins lent to him this time would be returned at a ratio of 1:600. Again, an enormous amount of soul coins were collected.

After collecting enough soul coins, Jason inserted the total amount that he had into the Bidding Menu. He would not give up this battle until his last breath!

[Player from the European server, Jason, placed a bid of 450,000 soul coins...]

The price was raised by 200,000 in a single click. This made everyone hold their breath.

This price was only maintained for a few seconds before suddenly, a game message appeared again.

[Player from the local server, Gu Yu, bids 800,000 soul coins...]

“Rumble!”

The forum was driven into a frenzy, spamming the screen at an inhumane speed.

Gu Yu’s bid this time had brought out the imposing manner of the proud players. A sky-high price of 800,000 soul coins blew the competition out of the water.

Jason felt defeated and wanted to bid again but the production of soul coins based on the current development level of the European server could not compete with the original server. The other guilds could no longer support him with enough soul coins for the auction either.

The auction had only taken half an hour and Gu Yu’s bidding price remained at the center of the menu.

However, all of the players knew that Gu Yu's bid price this time was already a zenith that nobody could hope to reach!

As expected, the event ending tone was heard and Gu Yu won the auction.

All of a sudden, the players from the local server celebrated joyfully in the forum while the European server players left without a word.

The failure in the auction had instilled an intense desire in the minds of the European server players to someday defeat the original server players for this utter humiliation.

Chapter 189 - Building A Super-Warship

After they failed the bid to win the coveted item during the auction, many European server players undoubtedly felt upset about it.

The trend in the game's current stage was showing that there would definitely be a cross-server battle in the near future.

The Land of Cangxu was very near to the Land of Beiqi, so they would definitely have interactions with each other during the later stages as well. As such, the players in the European server faced the huge problem of how they should make up the three-month disparity when they tried to gain the upper hand against the players from the original server.

With this kind of foresight, many European server guilds united together. They started to discuss a strategy for their future counterattack.

When the cross-server auction ended this time, many European server players suddenly noticed a number of professional players turning up in their forum.

Every day, they would publish several strategy posts to guide the growth of new players.

The most important thing was that these strategy posts were not just some general guesses. Instead, they could definitely be used practically to steer themselves in the right direction in the game.

For example:

[Demonstration of setting up traps in the wild. There are eighteen types of traps, suitable to be used in various kinds of environments. This is an essential strategy post to level-up by killing monsters and attacking lone rangers!]

[A practical demonstration of a Knight taming various kinds of living creatures in the wild. A knight who has no mount is soulless! (A Knight who has a mount can obtain a 30% increase of abilities!)]

[The detailed explanation of the Sea of Bones strategy of a Necromancer, how to deal damage and protect yourself simultaneously!]

[Barbarian, a set of techniques that could kill the enemy within a second during the early stage of this burst damage-type character class!]

...

The consecutive appearances of these professional gamers led to the development of the European server in many aspects, upgrading the gameplay to another level.

At this present stage, there were two legendary players in the European server's forum.

One of them was Mad_Knife_Style (Li Xing), the leader of the Zero Guild who was already very famous in the European server. The other was Reinhardt, who had been named the first legendary player. He was initially unknown to the public, but had demonstrated his extremely strong innate skills in Battle Online.

These two players were respected by many European Server players.

Aside from their own powerful abilities, they constantly published strategy posts in the forum, helping a lot of players who encountered problems when raiding lands in the early stages.

Reinhardt, who was currently the strongest player, received an invitation from the Zero Guild after the auction ended.

After giving it much thought, Reinhardt, who never intended to establish a guild in the first place, decided to join this well-established guild instead.

After all, joining the Zero Guild was a very good way to increase the overall strength of the European server.

And in his memory, the Zero Guild would be very strong in later stages of Battle Online. Besides the guild-stabilizing funding support from Jason, the server's first real tycoon, they also had many experienced players with powerful techniques.

The leader Li Xing was especially powerful. Despite the increasing number of players in the later stage, his individual strength would always be within the top ten in the entire region. During the inter-server skills tournament, he would even be placed within the top ten in the Versus Arena that was dominated by the original players.

However, after seeing Li Xing, Reinhardt felt that something was not quite right.

He was planning to mention the importance of the European server's development to Li Xing. However, before he could open his mouth, Li Xing took the initiative to discuss with him on how they could increase the development speed of the European server, asking his opinions on the matter.

This seemed a little incredible to Reinhardt. The present Li Xing was totally different from the leader of the Zero Guild in his memory.

However, Reinhardt only treated it as an insignificant butterfly effect that he had caused, and didn't think much more of it.

...

Land of Cangxu, Hidden Dragon Village.

Hundreds of players wearing black armor assembled, discussing how they should expand their forces and territory.

At this time, the guild leader, Li Xing, gazed at Reinhardt, "Number one legendary player, do you have any ideas? If we don't expand our territory and only depend on the resources around the Hidden Dragon Marsh, we won't have enough resources to use at all!"

Reinhard nodded upon hearing this. He then looked at the burly, bald-headed man with deep blue eyes, “Jason, you still have 450,000 soul coins with you, right? Are you planning to return those soul coins to the other guilds or use them for your own purpose?”

The bald-headed man named Jason was silent for a moment before he spoke.

“I bought these 450,000 soul coins from different guilds based on the ratio promised, so these soul coins completely belong to me now. Aside from spending some of them to establish our guild, I was planning to purchase some high-level equipment and spiritual material resources with what’s remaining. This is because I gained some information from the other server that we need many spiritual materials in the later stages of character class growth, especially when the naval battles start!”

Reinhardt’s eyes were shining as he listened, “Jason, I have a suggestion... if you dare to give it a try, perhaps we can gain innumerable resources!”

Reinhardt’s words instantly aroused the curiosity of all the people present. Everyone looked up at him, waiting for him to explain in detail.

“Tell us about it... if it works, of course I’m willing to spend these soul coins to try. But what’s your idea?” asked Jason doubtfully.

“It’s quite simple. Use all the 450,000 soul coins to build a guild-level warship!” suggested Reinhardt enthusiastically.

Upon hearing this, the people present went into an uproar. They felt that Reinhardt’s idea was too unrealistic. They hadn’t even started any land development yet, let alone marine forces.

However, his words caught Li Xing’s attention.

“Reinhardt, you mean to build the best warship currently in the game, go to the Void Ocean and plunder the resources from the players of the original server?”

“That’s right!”

“A warship made from 450,000 soul coins... no one has a warship at this level yet. As long as this warship is built, when we arrive at the Void Ocean, we wouldn’t have to be afraid of any of the warships of the other players at all! We could plunder their resources thoroughly if we encountered them one by one. Did you know that items from the players’ personal channel would explode at random when players from different servers kill each other? In that case, we could have a huge development just by depending on the resources taken from the players of the original server!”

“What if we are surrounded?” one of the players could not help asking.

“First and foremost, a warship built using 450,000 soul coins would have a much higher sailing speed compared to those other warships. Besides, we should naturally expect situations like these when plundering resources. However, the harvest is plentiful. Whether it works or not, it all depends on how you think about it,” Reinhardt reassured.

Everyone was lost in their own thoughts after listening to Reinhardt’s words.

However, they could not deny that plundering resources was in fact a good expansion path indeed, but none of them were certain about whether it was appropriate to spend 450,000 soul coins in one go to build this super-warship.

“I think it could work!” Li Xing gave his opinion. Then, he turned his head to look at Jason.

Jason met the guild leader’s gaze and blushed in embarrassment. He raised his hand after giving it some thoughts.

“Does anyone have any other suggestion? If you don’t, I’ll spend all these soul coins on building the warship!”

None of the people objected, so Jason eventually decided to spend all 450,000 soul coins in exchange for a super-warship!

After this decision was made, hundreds of Zero Guild members headed toward the ocean. They planned to start the development in advance by relying on the warship's power.

...

However, as the European server had only just started, there were not many spiritual materials in the Transaction Center. They were unable to buy enough spiritual materials even if they were willing to offer a high price for it.

Nonetheless, this was not a big problem.

Jason directly opened the Cross-Server Transaction Center. He started to mop up various types of spiritual materials from the original server by paying a premium price of 10% for the procedure fees.

They had to admit that the other server's spiritual material market was huge. Even after spending all their soul coins in there, they could only collect a very small part of it. They did not affect the market even one bit.

Soon after, they bought a guild-level warship in the shop. They started to feed the warship continuously by the sea, planning to build the best warship among all the servers.

After a discussion between Li Xing, Jason, and Reinhardt, they decided to cultivate it toward the direction called a calamity form. The specified increase in the toughness and speed of the warship could be used against the opposing warships.

After half a day, a Level 12 giant warship the size of an aircraft carrier appeared on the Eastern Ocean of the Land of Cangxu.

The data in its Attributes Menu was the highest among all the warships in the present stage.

[ZEero (Level 12 Calamity Form Specter Warship)]: Evolved by consuming a large amount of spiritual materials. 354 yards long, 301 yard waterline,

95.5 yards wide, 13.5 yard draft.

Attributes description: Toughness Level 13, Sailing Speed Level 12 (There are 24 levels altogether in ascending order).

Ability description: Spiritual energy cannons (30 pieces), Armored Impact, Consume and Plunder, Free Sailing, Realm of Storm, Deep Sea Movement, Wrath of the Zero Guild (exclusive).

[Spiritual energy cannons (30 pieces)]: A spiritual weapon used in long-range attacks, refill soul coins as energy before every attack (players have to control and aim, high level of difficulty).

Energy Refill Message: This warship is equipped with spiritual energy cannons, its energy refill can be split into six stages, which are:

Level 1 Spiritual Energy Bullet: 5 soul coins per shot.

Level 2 Spiritual Energy Bullet: 10 soul coins per shot.

Level 3 Spiritual Energy Bullet: 20 soul coins per shot.

Level 4 Spiritual Energy Bullet: 50 soul coins per shot.

Level 5 Spiritual Energy Bullet: 150 soul coins per shot.

Level 6 Spiritual Energy Bullet: 500 soul coins per shot.

[Armored Impact (Level 3)]: Speed increases by 100% in 20 minutes, toughness of the ship increases by two levels, cooldown time is 5 hours.

[Free Sailing (Level 3 Passive)]: In non-battle state, sailing speed increases by 20% (this state disappears when entering a battle).

[Consume and Plunder (Level 1 passive)]: All warships bombarded and sunk by the Zero Guild in naval battle would lose 1% of their total experience points. This loss will be converted to the Zero Guild's Warship by leveling-up their experience points.

[Realm of Storm (Level 1)]: An ocean storm will occur within one nautical mile with the warship that cast the spell at its center. Enemy warships nearer to the center region will suffer greater damage and effects. (This warship remains in a state of territorial exemption after the ability is activated.) Duration is 30 minutes, cooldown time is 24 hours.

[Deep Sea Movement (special)]: This warship will be submerged underwater after activating this ability. Sailing speed reduces by 50%. A protection circle will be formed under this state and the internal members will not be affected. Duration is 3 hours, cooldown time is 48 hours.

[Wrath of the Zero Guild (exclusive)]: The spirit of the Zero Guild's Warship will be summoned into a spiritual battle. Duration is 30 minutes, cooldown time is 24 hours (The higher the level of the warship, the greater the strength of the Zero Guild's spirit!)

...

The appearance of this warship lifted the spirits of all the Zero Guild members.

Especially since they had gained the Deep Sea Movement and the Consume and Plunder abilities from the cultivation this time. To them, these two abilities were quite suitable in helping them carry out their subsequent missions.

One ability enabled this warship to utilize the experience points consumed from the enemy's warship whenever they were bombarded and sunk to develop itself. The other ability enabled them to move under the water and escape from the enemy's encirclement. The combination of these two were the best skills for guerrilla warfare.

Looking at the giant warship in front of him, Li Xing waved his hand.

“Everyone, board the warship and get ready to start plundering!”

Chapter 190 - Titanic (Part One)

On this day, there were many posts requesting for assistance in the game forum.

A video was even attached to one of the posts.

In the video, a giant warship the size of an aircraft carrier was heading toward the warship of the player who recorded the video. Soon after, it mercilessly crashed into the warship that they were in.

The powerful force of the impact tore through their warship from the middle and the entire warship was hacked in half.

After the warship sank, numerous players fell into the water. Meanwhile, a game notification appeared in front of the player who shot the video.

[The warship that you were in has been hit and sunk by the Zero Guild's Warship (Europe), with plundering ability activated. 1% of the total experience points of your guild warship will be plundered.]

When they realized it was a warship from the European server players, the players in the water wanted to climb aboard the warship and kill them all. However at that moment, a storm started brewing on the surface of the sea.

Huge waves pulled all of them underwater where they drowned in the vortex that was gradually forming.

At the end of the video, the screen dimmed, but many European server players could be seen jumping off the giant warship to collect the goods that fell randomly from the dead players.

This scene immediately caused resentment among many of the original players.

Watermelon_Taro: “Where did they get so much money to build this aircraft-carrier warship? Besides, this warship is obviously messing with us on purpose!”

Xueli_The_Strongest: “Counterattack! Counterattack! I’m contacting our guild leader now. Let’s get ready to sail our Great Dragon Warship out to sea and attack them!”

Invincible_Loneliness: “This warship is probably at least a Level 10. Its level of toughness is high indeed, as it was still intact after the hit. However, since they have the guts to come and mess with us this early in the game, there’s nothing more to say about it. Let’s start a war!”

Ye_Xueer_Is_The_Cutest: “They are now at large! I thought we would wait a little and allow them to develop steadily for a while first, but now that they have taken the initiative to plunder us, there is nothing more that needs to be said. Let’s fight them!”

Crayon_Shinchan: “I guess this is the only warship in their entire region. If we bombard and sink it, does that mean we have destroyed the marine power of the entire European server? (laughing emoji)”

...

Soon after, many players started to log into the game, headed toward the Liuli Coast and assembled there waiting for their retaliation.

According to their calculations, this super-warship from the European server had bombarded and sunk more than 30 guild-level warships so far. As for Specter Ships, more than a hundred had been attacked, and this thoroughly provoked their wrath.

At that moment, a large number of players assembled in the safe zone off the Liuli Coast. Approximately 10,000 guild-level warships and a few hundred thousand Specter Ships docked there, preparing to launch a huge counterattack.

Liu Chai, who acted as the interim commander, yelled out loud, “The live chat channel of the interim navy is activated. Everyone who is joining in the war, please enter the navy’s live chat channel. Pass this message along to each other!”

The members of other guilds nearby who heard Liu Chai started to pass this message on to their respective guilds’ live chat channels. Many players then started to enter the new navy live chat channel that Liu Chai created.

Soon, there were around two million people in the army live chat channel.

“The number of people is almost enough. This time, we shall sail out to sea, defeat the enemies and prove our nation’s prowess!” Liu Chai commanded as the warships left the safe zone of Liuli Coast one-by-one and sailed toward the Void Ocean.

During the journey, Liu Chai started to arrange the strategy.

If a large-scale encirclement like this appeared collectively, the super-warship from the European server would definitely choose to escape. Hence, Liu Chai planned to lure the warship out by using decoy ships as bait before carrying out the siege and destroy strategy.

When their fleet sailed into the Void Ocean, Liu Chai led them toward Vulture Island according to the clues provided by the players in the forum.

At this moment, the Great Dragon Warship moved out of the fleet formation and sailed forward to explore.

Seeing that the decoy ship had moved out, Liu Chai immediately shouted in the guild’s live chat channel.

“Everybody get in the water and keep your warships! Stay undetected!”

The players quickly dropped into the water like dumplings, before keeping their warships. The colossal fleet suddenly disappeared from the ocean immediately.

Under Liu Chai’s lead, they waited there silently.

Meanwhile, somewhere around the territorial waters of Vulture Island, Li Xing stood at the top of the Zero Guild Warship's mast, checking the situation of the surrounding ocean using the telescope that he bought from the shop.

Their journey out to sea this time was just as Reinhardt had said. They had bombarded and sunk many warships and plundered abundantly. These were goods that they could never obtain from killing monsters. The large amount of returns made the people aboard the warship very excited because they knew that this kind of plundering had worked as expected.

Just then, Li Xing found a blue warship floating on the sea at a short distance.

“Brothers, the goods are coming at eleven o'clock!”

Upon hearing that, Jason who was below him had a sudden thought. The Zero Guild Warship below his feet let out a roar and turned quickly, sailing toward the direction Li Xing was pointing at.

...

As the Zero Guild Warship approached, the people of the Great Dragon Guild noticed its presence.

“Boss Liu, attention please! I'm leading them toward the encirclement. Ready for assistance, please!” Chen Ziyu growled into the navy live chat channel, before turning the Great Dragon Warship around, speeding away.

Liu Chai, who was lying in ambush a few nautical miles away, replied abruptly, “Boss Chen, it's all on you. The brothers here are ready!”

At this moment, Li Xing who stood at the top of the mast held the mast with one hand, and a telescope in the other. He observed the Great Dragon Warship turning around from afar and smiled.

“Brothers, our prey is running away. Speed up!”

There was a six level difference between the two warships. As the Zero Guild Warship started to accelerate, the distance between them gradually decreased.

Chen Ziyu's face paled as he looked at the scene before him. All he had to do now was make sure this super-warship sailed into their formed encirclement.

However, the sailing speed of this warship was so fast that it was way beyond their expectations.

“Great Dragon, activate our armor!” Chen Ziyu shouted decisively as he looked at the Zero Guild Warship that was already less than a hundred yards away.

After the golden light of their armor covered the Great Dragon Warship, the sailing speed of the Great Dragon Warship increased as well. However, a golden light flashed on the Zero Guild Warship, too, causing its speed to increase substantially. In a flash, the distance between the two warships was closer than ever.

Chen Ziyu had a horrified look on his face as he watched the huge naval ram coming straight toward the rear of his warship. Their only mistake this time was underestimating the actual strength of this warship.

Boom! The Great Dragon Warship shook violently, the golden light on its outer surface tore apart instantly. The naval ram ruthlessly crashed into the rear of the warship, destroying its entire aft cabin. Soon after, the Great Dragon Warship started to tilt, the ship's bow lifting in the air due to the stress from the rear of the ship.

“Hahaha! This warship has skills! It looks like the players on this ship have a lot of goods!” bald-headed Jason stood at the ship's bow, laughing as he watched the scene unfold before him.

The surrounding guild members had smiles on their faces as they looked at the Great Dragon Warship sinking slowly into the water, causing the players on the ship to jump into the water.

“As usual, ten shots per person. The goods go to whoever hits the target!” said Li Xing to the guild members after jumping down from the top of the mast.

Their individual strength could not rival the other players, so naturally they didn't dare go into the water and fight with them recklessly. Therefore, they used the spiritual energy cannons to strike down the players who had fallen into the water.

Chen Ziyu was livid when he saw energy bullets being shot at them. He could not help but shout in the live chat channel.

“Boss Liu, I've been attacked and my warship has sunk... their warship is just too fast... mission failed!”

Upon hearing Chen Ziyu's words, Liu Chai, who was lying in ambush a short distance away, pondered about it before he spoke.

“Ye Xue'er, you lead the guild members to be the second decoy ship. However, you must pay attention to their sailing speed. Return immediately once they have noticed you!”

Chapter 191 - Titanic (Part Two)

“Roger that, Boss Liu! I shall complete the mission without fail!” upon receiving orders, Ye Xue’er summoned the Guardian Warship. After all of their crew had boarded the warship, they began cruising toward the spot where Chen Ziyu had fallen into the water.

Meanwhile, near the Zero Guild Warship, Chen Ziyu and the others along with him were attempting to jump aboard the warship in order to confront the players face to face. However, the spiritual energy bullets constantly raining down from above did not give them any chance to do so as they were struck down one after another.

Even if they were able to avoid the spiritual energy bullets by diving underwater, it was merely a momentary escape. The moment they resurfaced, they would still suffer the constant bombardment.

Under such circumstances, the members of the Great Dragon Guild were slaughtered continuously.

Watching the glowing orbs of spiritual materials and equipment in a floating state of protection, Li Xing and the others that boarded the Zero Guild Warship laughed in elation.

Just then, their attention was caught by a pink warship that emerged from the water far away.

“Brothers, we’ve got new cargo coming our way, hurry and get rid of these few people underwater! Let’s begin the next round of hunting!” a fleeting sneer flickered in Jason’s eyes. He continued bombarding the water surface with spiritual energy bullets, killing Chen Ziyu who had just resurfaced and only had a sliver of health points remaining.

“Let’s dive underwater and scavenge the spoils! Then, we shall move on to our next target!”

Jason sneered viciously as he noticed that the Guardian Warship from afar had fled after becoming aware of their presence.

After all the glowing orbs were looted, a huge rumbling noise sounded from the interior of the Zero Guild Warship as it zoomed toward the Guardian Warship like a released arrow.

“Boss Liu, the target is coming after us. They’re too fast – we might not be able to hold on. It’s best if you prepare another warship to use as bait, too!” Ye Xue’er grit her teeth as she watched the super warship approaching.

Hearing this, Liu Chai’s expression grew serious. He had not expected that they could possess such a powerful warship.

The Great Dragon Warship and the Guardian Warship were both considered top-tier in their fleet, yet they still paled in comparison to the European server’s super warship. It was clear that this was an extremely high-level ship.

Liu Chai began his preparation immediately. He dispatched another warship in the direction of the Guardian Warship.

Just as Ye Xue’er had predicted, the Zero Guild Warship caught up with them quickly. The large naval ram plowed a huge hole through the rear of their warship, causing the seawater to gush in.

As the Guardian Warship began sinking, cheers erupted from the crew aboard the Zero Guild’s Warship.

Such an overpowering victory gave them enormous satisfaction.

However, at the same time, another warship emerged not far away. The moment it appeared, it veered sharply and sped away.

“This time, let’s sink the other warship first before returning for the loot!” as he spoke, Jason willed the Zero Guild Warship to crush over the half-submerged Guardian Warship, letting it completely sink into the water.

“Looks like our presence is already known to the others,” Reinhardt let out a smile on his face.

“If you take a look at the forum, you’d see that they planned to launch a siege attack against us!” Li Xing shrugged.

Upon hearing this, the rest of the crew cackled in amusement.

They had full faith in the Zero Guild Warship. At the very least, its speed was unrivaled in this territory. Even if a large fleet of enemies were to appear before them, there would be no difficulty in escaping.

While they were still goofing around, densely scattered heads began emerging on the surrounding water’s surface.

A single ship appeared... then a dozen... followed by hundreds...

Numerous warships suddenly appeared in all directions, leaving Li Xing and the rest in shock.

In the blink of an eye, hundreds of thousands of ships emerged and formed multiple layers, encircling them at the center.

“Oh my god, what’s going on? Why are we surrounded? Where exactly did they come from?” Jason looked around in disbelief.

“Oh no, the two ships earlier were meant to lure us in. They were lying an ambush underwater as we came closer, waiting for us to enter their trap!” said Li Xing with a somber look on his face.

“Quick, retrieve the warship! We’re going offline!” Reinhardt bellowed furiously as he looked at the huge number of warships scattered around them.

Yet, at that moment, a Mage player, who was aboard a ship close to them, condensed a globe of water in his palm and launched it toward them.

Splash! The globe of water struck the surface of the warship and dispersed into a spray of water droplets.

[Under battle mode, players may not retrieve their warships or go offline!]

The faces of the crew aboard the Zero Guild Warship fell as the game notification appeared before them. They finally realized that they had truly been ambushed.

Although being killed was not a terrifying thing, being killed in an inter-server battle would cause a random amount of one's supplies to burst out. Each player was carrying a large number of supplies, so the cost of each death would be very high.

Moreover, if this Level 12 super warship was destroyed, the spiritual materials needed to repair it would cost a fortune.

“On my command, smash into the enemy's warship and surround them! Mages on the remaining warships, ready the cannons! Warriors and Assassins, rush forward and strike them down!”

Hearing Liu Chai's orders, the warships near the Zero Guild Warship disregarded their damage losses and rushed forward wildly, surrounding it. Behind them, more warships sailed forward, further tightening their hold on the super warship.

The gap between the warships grew smaller. Warriors and assassins leaped over the warships toward the Zero Guild Warship in an attempt to board it and fight in close combat with the enemy.

Facing an ambush of such a scale, the players aboard the Zero Guild Warship were dumbfounded and at a loss of what they should do.

Waves of spells sent ripples spreading across the protection layer outside the warship. It was only a matter of time before the spells broke through.

“There's still a chance, we must go underwater! We haven't tried going underwater before. Hurry, Jason!” Li Xing bellowed.

He knew that once the enemy players came aboard their warship, they would be dead for sure.

Upon hearing this, Jason quickly instructed the warship to dive underwater.

Roar!

A deafening roar sounded as the huge warship began submerging underwater.

Seeing that the strategy of diving underwater was effective, Li Xing and the rest of the crew cheered. Once they were underwater, escaping the encirclement would not be a problem at all.

On the other hand, Liu Chai and the rest of the old players stared furiously at the scene unfolding before them. They did not expect that this warship was capable of doing such a thing.

As the Zero Guild Warship dove underwater completely, the only thing that was visible from the surface was a dark shadow slowly traveling forward.

“All warships, after them! Surely they won’t be able to remain underwater forever!” upon command, the fleet of warships altered their directions and began moving forward as they maintained their circle around the shadow in the water.

An hour later...

Below the water surface, a solemn expression remained on the faces of the Zero Guild’s members.

Since resistance was stronger underwater, their speed was restricted. As a result, they were unable to shake off the pursuers. If this were to go on, they would be back in the trap when they eventually resurfaced.

They tried diving deeper into the sea, too, thinking that this would prevent the others from locating them.

Yet, this was to no avail either. They seemed to have locked them under target. No matter where they went, their warships would tail after them. They simply could not think of a way to shake off the warship fleet’s encirclement.

The situation was distressing to the crew of Zero Guild members.

“Oh right, we could try the ocean safe zone! Attacks are prohibited there, so there’s nothing they can do about us!” Reinhardt suggested suddenly.

“You’re right! Once we’re in the safe zone, they won’t be able to cause damage to us!” Li Xing’s expression brightened.

“Hahaha, why hadn’t I thought of this? We can still remain underwater for two hours, it should be sufficient to cover the distance. Hurry, toward the safe zone off the Liuli Coast!” Jason laughed as he heard Reinhardt’s suggestion. He hurriedly turned the warship around and cruised toward the Liuli Coast.

On the surface of the water...

“Boss, something’s not right. It looks like they’re moving toward the Liuli Coast. That’s our territory though – are they looking for death?” a player asked, peering at the tracking compass he was holding.

“Damn it, they’re aiming for the safe zone, we have to stop them!” Liu Chai barked into the army live chat channel immediately.

Upon hearing him, most of the players realized that the situation had taken a turn for the worse. If the enemy were to enter the safe zone where battle was prohibited, it would be equivalent to allowing their escape.

Instantly, numerous spells were bombarded underwater. However, the Zero Guild Warship had dove deep enough to ensure that none of the spells were able to reach it.

As they approached the Liuli Coast, Liu Chai’s expression darkened.

“Boss Liu, I know a way to defeat them!” a voice sounded in the live chat channel.

During the third hour of pursuing the Zero Guild Warship, an enormous warship surfaced within the safe zone off the Liuli Coast.

Behind it came a flurry of warships of different sizes, which proceeded to encircle it at the center.

“Safely arrived, perfect!” Li Xing and the guild members stood at the bow of the ship. Witnessing the original players’ infuriated looks, they felt a pang of triumph.

As all damages inflicted within the safe zone would be nullified, they were not afraid of being sunk.

“Brothers, I beg your pardon, but we’re now as safe as can be!” Jason climbed to the top of the mast and laughed as he overlooked the scene below.

Watching the smug enemy, a hint of a smirk flashed across Liu Chai’s eyes. Then, he faced the live chat channel and shouted, “Brothers! All aboard the enemy’s warship!”

Upon his command, mobs of players crowded the Zero Guild Warship and climbed up the ship’s body. One after another, they occupied the deck.

Jason shrugged as he watched the scene occur.

“Brothers, I remind you that this is a safe zone and we are protected here. It’d be useless no matter how you attack us!”

As the number of players occupying the deck grew, Li Xing and the others could feel their anger. However, they were not worried at all since they were invincible in the safe zone.

“Brothers, dump out the heaviest objects you have within your inventories. Let’s weigh this ship down!”

Upon his orders, the players aboard the Zero Guild Warship broke into devilish smiles and began rummaging through their inventories.

Watching the players as they dumped objects onto the deck, Li Xing and the others were dumbfounded. They had no idea what was going on.

However, Li Xing soon caught on to the problem as he frantically turned to the ship's status menu.

[Weight capacity: 34/100]

“They're trying to weigh us down!” Li Xing cried in disbelief.

Hearing this, the Zero Guild's members turned white. They finally realized the enemy's intentions.

“Damn, buddy, I can't believe you kept two boulders in your inventory! You're fantastic!”

“Hey, you're not bad yourself... walking around with such a huge bunch of rusty old metal – how interesting!”

“Woah, that chap over there, you must be a genius to be carrying an elephant carcass around with you!”

“You there with an inventory full of rubble, perhaps you can enlighten me on what you were using them for?”

As the supplies on the deck piled up, the Zero Guild Warship's weight capacity gradually transformed into a yellow hue, which eventually turned into a shade of red symbolizing the maximum weight capacity.

At this moment, someone began playing the theme song from the Titanic in the live chat channel...

In the midst of the music, the Zero Guild Warship began sinking. All the original players heartily began cheering!

Chapter 192 - Mu Te Coffin

Liu Chai broke into a smile as he watched the super warship gradually sink into the water due to the overwhelming weight.

When the Zero Guild's Warship had entered the safe zone, he was certain that the operation to encircle it would be a complete failure. Yet, at that exact moment, a player gave a quick suggestion.

His strategy was very simple, which was to gather the strengths of each player. By stacking up their supplies, they would be able to overwhelm the weight capacity of the unsinkable warship that had invaded them.

At the same time, to prevent the crew from escaping the Zero Guild Warship after it had entered the safe zone, that player also provided a key solution, forcing the opponent to remain in battle mode.

As he listened to that player's explanation, Liu Chai realized that at the current stage of this game, there were still certain loopholes present within the ocean's safe zones.

It was similar to the time when they intruded on the Mansion of the Dead. Despite the fact that it was a safe zone at the time, the rules were utterly inapplicable to other living creatures that were not players. If they were to attack, even within the safe zone, players would still be forced into battle mode.

On a similar basis, the strategy was for the players to release tamed but not-yet-digitized zombie wolves before the Zero Guild Warship resurfaced. The zombie wolves scratching the surface of the warship forced the players aboard to enter battle mode, making them unable to go offline.

Under these conditions, they immediately boarded the huge warship and began stacking supplies on the deck. The increasing weight of the supplies eventually overwhelmed their weight capacity, causing it to sink.

As for the Zero Guild Warship, despite its ability to dive underwater, they had already exhausted all three hours of its diving skill's time limit. The underwater protection layer had dissipated a while ago, causing large volumes of seawater to flood the warship, further increasing its weight. This, combined with the weight of the supplies, led to the warship sinking deeper and deeper, which resulted in the durability of the ship degrading tremendously as well.

Soon, cracks began appearing on the body of the ship. Under the expectant looks of the more experienced players, the Zero Guild Warship's durability eventually depleted, disappearing into a black mist.

Without the protection of the warship, the Zero Guild's members quickly swam to the surface of the water. Update by vip novel

Yet, as soon as they reached the surface of the water, they watched in horror as enormous zombie wolves leaped down one after another from the surrounding warships, pouncing toward them.

The forum was in a celebratory atmosphere after they successfully managed to seize victory in the end by counterattacking in unity.

Crayon_Shinchan: "Who's your daddy now!? Haha! To defeat a super warship by taking advantage of loopholes in the game – where's the guy who came up with this idea? You've got to be a genius (laughing emoji)!"

Captain_Of_Demolition_Officers: "I have to agree that the player's strategy was truly ingenious. He gave two suggestions: first, force the opponent into battle mode using external creatures, then overwhelm the warship's weight capacity. How amazing!"

Crayon_Shinchan: "New GIF added into the Battle sticker collection – sinking due to unbearable pressure.gif"

Xueli_The_Strongest: "Hehe, great job brothers! Since they were the one who attacked first, once we get rid of the Rocks, we'll invade their territory (laughing emoji)!"

Strike_Gold: “We’ll leave them to develop in peace for a while, then we’ll pay them back double when the time comes! Our Beiqi Army is the strongest, there’s no need for explanations (laughing emoji)!”

Invincible_Loneliness: “This is strangely soothing to my mood, how exhilarating!”

This naval battle lifted the spirits of many of the original players.

The crisis stirring in the Void Ocean for the past two days caused by this humongous warship’s harassment had finally been resolved as well.

In anticipation of future invasions, the players began diligently upgrading their warships to prepare themselves for the next big naval battle.

As a result, materials in the shop experienced inflation once again.

This elated Lu Wu as each transaction completed in the shop yielded commission for him. His depleted stock of soul coins had once again received significant replenishment.

In the meantime, a personal Specter Ship bobbed up and down upon the crest of the Void Ocean’s waves.

Hu He, who was seated on the ship, was staring intently at a compass in his hands. Occasionally, he would raise his head and glance at the water surface, as if he was reconfirming his location.

At that moment, the compass value suddenly jumped and its needle began spinning.

“Here it is!” Hu He glanced at the surface of the sea excitedly.

Recently, he had tried more than a hundred ways of cultivating Hiderigami. Due to the huge strength difference between them, though, merely breaking through his protection layer was challenging enough, much less any attempt to fully cultivate him.

After being convinced that cultivating Hiderigami was impossible, Hu He proceeded to spend a significant effort in escaping the safe zone. Since then, he had sailed the Specter Ship, starting his escape journey on the sea.

After all, he would not dare to return to land anymore as long as those two jinxes were there. No matter where he hid, he would still be sentenced to the safe zone by the cruel backstab.

Left without a choice, Hu He decided to go on a corpse-searching journey at sea, returning only when he was powerful enough.

He had originally planned to search for islands where powerful individuals might have been buried, but as he passed by the northern region of the Void Ocean, his compass suddenly responded.

Realizing that there might be a powerful corpse nearby, Hu He decided to probe around a little.

He glanced at the empty-headed Cha Na zombie spirit beside him before opening the store and making a search in the special tools inventory. He reluctantly bought a special diving suit, which he proceeded to change into.

With everything prepared, Hu He leaped into the water and anchored the Specter Ship before heading deeper to explore.

Despite the diving suit's protection, the temperature underwater was freezing. Rays of light swayed in ripples underwater. Looking down, there was nothing but darkness.

As he dove deeper, Hu He had the illusion that he was swimming down into the gaping mouth of a giant water beast.

The deeper he dove, the greater the water pressure upon him. The limit of diving for humans is 332 yards, but by relying on strengthened physical fitness levels within the game as well as protection from special gears, diving to a depth of 500 yards was still easily manageable.

At this point, Hu He was completely enveloped in darkness. A person's perception of fear usually intensified under such environments, and even a slight movement of the currents around him made him feel like an enormous sea creature was swimming past him. If it was not for his desire for powerful corpses and assurance of immortality, there was no way Hu He would be doing such a thing.

As his vision was unclear, Hu He turned on the lamp fastened to his forehead.

A strong beam of light streamed forward, lighting up the darkness within ten yards before him.

Hu He suddenly turned pale.

At the end of the light, an enormous fish eye, three yards in diameter itself, was staring straight at him, the capillaries within the eye socket clearly visible.

“Holy shit!” a stream of bubbles escaped Hu He's mouth as his heart thumped in his chest.

This experience was way more terrifying than a horror movie, the shock almost knocked him unconscious.

[Giant Grouper (Spiritual Fish): Docile giant spiritual fish, with a diet mainly composed of seaweed, small shrimp, and fish.]

Seemingly disturbed by the intense beam of light, the giant grouper quickly dove downward with a flick of its tail. It was gone in the blink of an eye.

Hu He was still recovering from the shock even after the giant grouper swam away.

As he checked his compass to determine the intensity of the surrounding zombie energy, he felt a little hesitant. Even his ancestors were not as hardcore as himself, to extend the search for corpses all the way into the sea. Was this considered a business expansion?

“I don’t need to be afraid of dying anyway!” Hu He grit his teeth and continued diving downward.

He continued on for a further 200 yards. By now, the water pressure could clearly be felt as Hu He sensed his breathing growing more difficult. However, he was not going to give up after coming so far so he continued swimming downward. Behind him, Cha Na’s zombie spirit followed along thoughtlessly.

After diving for a while, Hu He glanced at his current depth on the map and realized he had already reached a depth of over 1,200 yards.

Just as he was about to continue his journey downward, a ghostly beam of green light shone through the darkness from his right. Hu He’s heart jolted as he turned abruptly toward the source.

A worn and decayed Specter Ship was cruising slowly toward him from the right.

The Specter Ship appeared ancient, its surface covered with a thick layer of green moss. What Hu He found eerie about the ship was the oil lamp hanging on the half-broken mast that was still giving off a ghostly green light.

Each time the oil lamp swayed, the dark inner parts of the ship became vaguely visible, as if numerous black silhouettes were hidden within, writhing with each sway.

Hu He shuddered at the sight of the eerie scene before him.

“A game, this is only a game!” Hu He mumbled words of encouragement to himself.

As the underwater Specter Ship drew closer, Hu He’s compass began twitching. The value displayed turned red almost instantly as a beeping noise sounded.

The powerful corpse is in the Specter Ship? Hu He was surprised.

However, the creepy aura given off by the Specter Ship made him hesitate a little.

As he watched the Specter Ship cruise by him, Hu He grit his teeth and muttered in his heart, “The bold will be full but the timid will starve to death!”

He reached out and grabbed onto the decaying rails, drifting along with the ship as it slowly continued forward.

He steadied himself and landed slowly on the ship’s deck.

Then, he waved at Cha Na’s zombie spirit hovering next to him.

Upon receiving his command, Cha Na’s zombie spirit drifted toward the inner part of the ship as Hu He trailed after it cautiously.

In the endless darkness of the deep sea, Hu He was without a doubt under heavy psychological stress. It was similar to watching horror movies, even if one knew that everything was unreal, the approaching terror would still be enough to cloud up one’s judgment. Currently, being in the midst of a horror scene, the chilling atmosphere made him extremely tense.

Huff! Hu He inhaled deeply and calmed himself down. He then began swimming toward the cabin of the ship.

As he went in further, Hu He noticed that there were still small organisms residing within the mossy habitat of the decaying ship. However, the interior space was closely packed and most of the objects were already severely corroded, disintegrating into a cloud of musty dust upon the slightest touch.

The further he went in, the stronger Hu He’s compass vibrated.

Eventually, he stopped before an inner wooden door that corroded in several parts.

A little force from Cha Na’s zombie spirit caused the wooden door to break into smithereens of drifting rubble.

There was a cloud of fine sawdust wafting in the dim light. Hu He waved his hand around in an attempt to dispel the sawdust obscuring his vision.

He then turned his gaze slowly beyond the wooden door frame.

The light pierced through the dusty, brownish water to reveal half of a black skeleton within Hu He's line of sight.

Seeing the skeleton, Hu He's expression lifted. He knew that he had found his target.

However, his expression clouded as he noticed something odd about the black skeleton. It appeared as if it had been gnawed upon before. The torso's fracture did not match up with the lost half, and the surface of the fracture was jagged and sharp, with multiple bone spurs poking out. It looked as though the owner of the skeleton had been forcibly torn in half.

Despite his suspicions, Hu He did not dwell on the matter. He was only after the corpse anyway. Moving his arms, he entered the room and swam toward the black skeleton.

As he got closer, the black skeleton's statistics appeared.

[Mu Hu (Mu Te Sea Warrior)]:

Character details: Clansman of the ancient Mu Te Sea Empire. A martyr in the battle against the underwater Dead Clan's invasion. As a warrior of the Mu Te Sea Clan, he was buried in a Mu Te Coffin and left to wander at the bottom of the sea with only a ghost lamp for company.

Strength level: Mid-Stage Ghost Commander

Chapter 193 - 35,000 Yards Under The Sea

Chapter 193: 35,000 Yards Under The Sea

Mu Te Sea Empire? Dead Clan?

As he read the descriptions on the Analysis Menu, Hu He averted his gaze toward the remaining half of the broken corpse in puzzlement.

Like I'd care what you are, I'll dig up anything as long as it's a corpse!

Thinking of this, Hu He grabbed the black skeleton and tossed it into his channel.

“Sigh...”

All of a sudden, a long, drawn-out sigh echoed down Hu He's ear canal, scaring the wits out of him.

Just as he whirled around in search of the source of the sigh, the Specter Ship began trembling. Looking through the cabin, Hu He noticed that the ghost lamp hanging outside the ship was flickering as if something had happened.

Hu He could feel the Specter Ship accelerating, causing him to float backward, pressing him against the moss-covered wall.

It feels like something's about to happen!

Realizing the terrible situation he was in, Hu He swiftly moved his arms and slipped out of the cabin. He swam toward the exit in an attempt to escape the ship.

The two figures stumbled about the narrow pathway hastily, bumping into each other as they scrambled forward. The cloud of sawdust wafting around made their vision hazy.

However, at this point, Hu He could not be bothered about it at all. He had a bad feeling about this situation.

With only his memory to rely on, Hu He finally managed to find his way out of the tangle of pathways after a good bit of effort, appearing outside the Specter Ship.

As he looked forward, he was dumbfounded by the scene before him.

A bottomless trench stretched out before him. Pairs of ghostly green eyes appeared on both sides of the trench as an enormous snake-like figure floated about, probing toward him and the Specter Ship.

Hu He stared blankly for a moment, before deciding to return to the inside of the ship along with Cha Na's zombie spirit.

[Death Sea Viper]:

Creature information: Inhabits the surface of the Death Abyss. Mutated from black sea vipers after prolonged exposure to death energy, highly venomous.

The surface of the Death Abyss?

Looking at the bottomless trench, Hu He had a hunch that this alleged Death Abyss was probably the intended destination of this Specter Ship.

As the Specter Ship descended, Hu He began experiencing difficulty in breathing. It felt as if there was an invisible force compressing against him.

The ocean depth displayed on the map was steadily decreasing.

-2500 yards

-2700 yards

-3000 yards

By now, Hu He's face had turned an abnormal hue of red from the pressure. He felt as though his blood vessels were ready to burst apart at any second. If it was not for the diving suit's protection, Hu He felt that he would have probably imploded on the spot.

Glancing at Cha Na's zombie spirit, Hu He tapped the zombie storage bag with his trembling fingers to keep the zombie spirit. Then, with an expression of despair, he awaited his death.

The thought that he would have to return all the way back to the resurrection point made Hu He feel terribly frustrated. After all, there was no guarantee that he would make it out in the first place.

At this point, he had already reached a depth of 3400 yards. Hu He could no longer breathe as he felt his lungs being compressed and jumbled up inside him.

He was not the only one affected. Even the Specter Ship had begun falling apart under the pressure, numerous holes appearing on its hull.

However, at that moment, the ghost lamp hanging upon the mast of the Specter Ship swayed gently, releasing a ghostly green light that flowed like liquid, slowly covering the body of the entire ship.

The ship immediately stopped falling apart, and Hu He discovered in surprise that his discomfort had faded.

Looks like I've been saved!

A look of relief appeared on his face. That experience he had moments ago was horrible.

It appears as though the ghost lamp has protected me along with the Specter Ship, Hu He hypothesized as he looked at the ghost lamp.

However, the crisis had not ended as the Specter Ship was still continuing its rapid descent.

-4000 yards

-6000 yards

-8000 yards

The ship's descent grew faster and faster as smoke-spewing underwater volcanoes began appearing in Hu He's line of sight. The smoldering lava flowed along the slanted clefts of the trench toward the endless darkness below.

-16,000 yards

-19,000 yards

-25,000 yards

By the time the map displayed a depth of 30,000 yards underwater, Hu He was left absolutely flabbergasted.

This was way too much of an adventure to think that he had arrived at a depth of -30,000 yards! To put it simply, that was a depth much deeper than any point of Earth's ocean floor that had been discovered by humans.

As the ship reached a depth of 35,000 yards, its descent suddenly slowed and it began traveling forward. Hu He stared in bewilderment as a huge, green glowing statue appeared in the vicinity.

Upon approaching closer, Hu He estimated the statue's height to be at least a thousand feet or more.

For a statue to remain erect 35,000 yards below sea level and under such horrifying pressure, Hu He felt this place was increasingly spooky by the minute.

The Specter Ship was slowly advancing toward the statue.

When the body of the ship touched the statue, the protective green energy dissipated and the ship started falling apart instantly. Just as Hu He thought

that he was done for, a wave of energy appeared on the surface of the enormous statue and enveloped him, gradually bringing him closer to the statue.

The wave of energy expanded abruptly as it reached the tip of the statue, separating the seawater surrounding them. At the same time, it formed a pale green protective layer covering the entire statue. Thanks to the protective layer, Hu He managed to land on his feet.

Glancing at the pale green protective layer above him, Hu He found the situation extremely eerie no matter how he looked at it. He had a strong urge to simply burst out of the protective layer and start all over again from the resurrection point.

After all, who knows what kind of terrible monsters may be around here.

Yet, when his gaze landed on a figure on the shoulder of the statue, his expression suddenly became solemn.

Wait a minute... I'm not going to leave just yet!

[Mu Zhiguang (Final-Stage Ghost Emperor)]:

Character Details: The ray of hope of the Mu Te Sea Empire that controls the Power of Death. In order to avenge his clansmen following the collapse of the Mu Te Sea Empire, he sacrificed his physical body to suppress the Dead Clan within the Abyss (main body).

Character Status: Unknown.

When he saw that the figure sitting cross-legged upon the statue's shoulder was, in fact, a Ghost Emperor, Hu He suddenly decided not to leave.

Even if he could not cultivate a Ghost Emperor Elite at his current stage, there was no doubt that he would be able to do it one day. Furthermore, as a Zombie Forgemaster, there could never be too many powerful corpses in his possession.

Hu He rubbed his hands together, his eyes shining brightly as he inched toward Mu Zhiguang.

First, he circled around Mu Zhiguang. When he was certain that there were no longer any signs of life in Mu Zhiguang, he pulled out a short shovel and knocked on Mu Zhiguang's head with it.

Still seeing no response from him, Hu He chuckled as he grabbed Mu Zhiguang's shoulder and proceeded to stuff him into his channel.

[Game Notification: You may not store live objects within your personal channel...]

“Hmm? He's still alive?” Hu He was astonished.

The game notification placed him in a dilemma. He badly wanted to bring it with him, but he would be dead the moment he stepped out of the protective layer. If he could not keep it in his channel, there was no way he could bring it back with him.

Hu He crossed his legs and sat down opposite Mu Zhiguang, as he thought hard on how he could kill off the half-dead Ghost Emperor Elite before him.

After a moment of thought, Hu He hauled the golden shovel and smashed it over Mu Zhiguang's head.

He intended to test out the hardness of Mu Zhiguang's body, after all, not all Ghost Emperor Elites trained their physique to the same level as Hiderigami's.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

After a series of blows, Hu He felt his fingers growing numb and he stopped his attacks.

Why in the world are you Ghost Emperors this tough? Don't you know anything about inner cultivation?

Hu He glanced exasperatedly at his personal channel. He dug out a bottle of zombie poison powder of his own creation, intending to poison Mu Zhiguang.

Faced with Mu Zhiguang's tightly pursed lips, Hu He stuck the shovel between his lips and began to pry them open.

However, this was to no avail either. After a good bit of struggle, Mu Zhiguang's lips were still not the slightest bit agape.

Running out of ideas, Hu He stuffed the zombie poison powder up Mu Zhiguang's nose. He was intent on finishing him off.

After all, it's just not a Zombie Forgemaster's style to leave such a precious treasure behind!

At that moment, Mu Zhiguang's eyes opened abruptly. Two beams of black ghostly light shone past Hu He, passing through the protective layer into the seawater.

Two black vortices formed instantly outside the protective layer, with faint flashes of black lightning appearing within them.

Holy shit! He's alive! Hu He was dumbfounded.

As Mu Zhiguang's gaze turned toward him, Hu He, still holding his self-made zombie poison powder, stared awkwardly at him. He slowly withdrew his hands and hid the zombie poison powder back into his channel.

“Uhh... hi!”

Chapter 194 - The Surging Undercurrent

Chapter 194: The Surging Undercurrent

A white glint appeared in Mu Zhiguang's dark eyes. His mouth was moving slightly and a croaky voice resounded in Hu He's ears.

“You're not my clansman. How did you get here?”

Hu He was startled by the sudden voice in his ears for he had never dealt with the Mu Te Sea Clan before.

Mu Zhiguang's question somehow made him tongue-tied. After all, he could not just say that he got here accidentally while he was trying to steal his clansman's corpse.

“Why did the ghost lamp escort you here? What ties do you have with my clansman?” the croaky voice rang again.

“Ahem...that's a long story,” Hu He revealed an awkward expression on his face as he met Mu Zhiguang's blank stare. His brain churned as he tried hard to fumble for a worthy excuse.

“Just tell me your purpose for coming here!” Mu Zhiguang shook his head gently.

“My purpose... Boss Mu, do you know that your Mu Te Sea Empire is gone?” Hu He spoke after thinking for a moment.

“It has collapsed for a long time. What's left to be gone?” Mu Zhiguang's tone was plain.

“No, what I mean is... your remaining clansmen are all gone.”

Hearing this, Mu Zhiguang's indifferent expression cracked a little.

He had dedicated his whole life for the sake of his clan. Even when they treated him as a heretic and intended to execute him, they were always his clansmen, bound by blood in Mu Zhiguang's eyes. Such a bond will never dissipate, and it was his most precious possession.

So, when he heard that the last generation of his clansmen was gone, Mu Zhiguang could no longer remain calm.

“Tell me the reason!”

This time, the note of anger in Mu Zhiguang's voice was obvious.

Thinking on his feet, Hu He blurted, “They were exterminated by the Sea King, the commander of the Sea King's Navy!”

...

Meanwhile, in the Crystal Palace, the Sea King was pouring wine into his mouth from a giant golden wine cup. Suddenly, his countenance grew solemn.

For a moment, a vague premonition crossed his heart.

Most of them who had reached his level would have some form of premonitions. Although these premonitions might not be accurate, they would not show out of thin air without certain verifications. This made the Sea King feel agitated as he pondered on the unknown force that was targeting him.

...

“Who is the Sea King? And why did he exterminate my clansmen!?”

“He's the commander of the Sea King Navy, the overlord of the Void Ocean! Does he even need a reason to exterminate your clansmen? He could've just done it because he felt like doing it!” Hu He explained hastily.

Mu Zhiguang was speechless.

“Are you sent by my clansman to inform me of this?” Mu Zhiguang asked.

“That’s right!”

“Why didn’t he just come in person?”

A tinge of suspicion flashed across Mu Zhiguang’s eyes. He had a hunch that Hu He was not very trustworthy, however, since it was the ghost lamp that brought him here, he had no choice but to believe him.

“He was severely injured and had passed on right after he placed me into the Mu Te Coffin,” putting on a sorrowful face, he tried to squeeze out some tears but to no avail.

“Understood. The new overlord of the Void Ocean, is it? It’s time for me to go out and have a look!” Mu Zhiguang said as he slowly rose to his feet.

At the same time, the statue beneath his feet began to shake with deafening wails reverberated from below. Large numbers of eerie green silhouettes swirled and expanded as they grasped in the upward direction ferociously.

“Hmph!” Mu Zhiguang snorted. All of a sudden, the enormous statue raised its foot and stamped furiously.

Boom!

An undercurrent started to surge and the wails ceased instantly. The eerie green silhouettes that had emerged were torn to shreds by this overwhelming power.

“What’s under there?” Hu He questioned as he stared at the statue’s feet.

He could clearly see a spiraling dark pit just now when the enormous statue raised its foot. He caught a glimpse of innumerable twisting tentacles inside it.

“The Dead Clan, a squirm of emotionless abyssal parasites!” Mu Zhiguang replied faintly.

“So you were suppressing them? What’d happen if you let them out?” Hu He could not hide his curiosity.

“Let them out?” hearing this, a hint of anger flashed past Mu Zhiguang’s eyes.

These intruders – the Dead Clan, were in fact the reason behind the collapse of the Mu Te Sea Empire, a once glorious nation. The hatred of genocide had once driven him mad, to the extent at which he plunged into the abyss and was resolved to perish together with them.

However, Mu Zhiguang realized that it was impossible to wipe the Dead Clan out after decades of endless bloodshed in the abyss. The only method was to suppress and seal them.

Mu Zhiguang was, by no doubt, unreconciled back then. Nevertheless, he still chose to sacrifice his physical body eventually to suppress the abyss beneath the ocean. With that, he intended to bury the Dead Clan deep under the abyss for all eternity and never to be reawakened.

This was his revenge against the Dead Clan of the abyss.

Thus, it really set Mu Zhiguang off when Hu He mentioned letting them go.

“Is there anything else that you want to say?”

“Ah, that’s it!”

“Okay, I got it!”

As he finished his sentence, two beams of black light shot from his eyes. It was then Hu He’s body was torn apart instantly and turned to a wisp of dark mist.

He got a feeling that Hu He was hiding something. Even if Hu He had been the benefactor of his clan, it did not make much difference to Mu Zhiguang

since he was not his clansman. He had never been merciful toward people who were not of his clan.

Just then, Mu Zhiguang reached out his hand and grasped the place where Hu He had died.

Hmm? Slightly puzzled, Mu Zhiguang grasped once again... and again...

His soul disappeared?

He had originally planned to extract Hu He's soul and check on the truth of his words. Never did he expect Hu He's soul to simply disappear without a trace.

The scene was rather spooky to him. As a wielder of the power of death, he could clearly sense Hu He's soul just moments ago while he was standing before him. His soul was suddenly gone once he was dead. This was a little beyond his comprehension.

After a moment of silence, Mu Zhiguang stomped his foot lightly. Immediately, the enormous statue began to glitter with dirt peeling off its body as if the statue was coming alive.

“Spirit of Mu Te, I leave this place in your hands for now. I'm going up to take a look at what's going on!”

Roar!

Huge waves spread across the surrounding sea, almost like a response to Mu Zhiguang's request.

After giving his instructions, Mu Zhiguang morphed into a beam of black light as he sped toward the water's surface.

In the meantime on the Liuli Coast, Liu Chai, who was enjoying roasted fish with his friends, was shocked to find his right arm trembling involuntarily.

“What's wrong, boss?” a guild member asked curiously.

“No idea, it just trembles uncontrollably!” Liu Chai was perplexed, too.

“Maybe you have overused it... take it easy!” Sun Qi the dog, who was seated close by, commented subconsciously.

“Scram!”

At the summit of the Cliffs of Desperation, the black skeleton next to the pillar pagoda started to vibrate all of a sudden, too. At the same time, the white-haired old man appeared and gave the black skeleton a good kick. It stopped vibrating at once.

“The atrocious Mu Zhiguang is back!” the white-haired old man stated plainly as he gazed toward the distant Void Ocean.

“Who’s stronger, that lad or you?” a pair of crimson eyes emerged at the summit. It was staring tauntingly at the white-haired old man as it spoke.

“He might be comparable to me in his full form. But now, I can defeat him without my hands!” the white-haired old man glanced at the pair of crimson eyes before he replied.

“You’re boasting, lad!” the Demonic God laughed.

“Oh yeah, I have never understood why you’ve never requested a pardon from the Great Emperor. With your capabilities, your name will appear on the Underworld God List once you pass the test. You will then become a god recognized by the underworld and take command of your own territory! Isn’t that wonderful?” the Demonic God asked suddenly.

“Request a pardon? That sounds boring. There’s actually another path to becoming a god!” the white-haired old man shook his head.

The Demonic God seemed surprised when he heard this. His crimson eyes constricted rapidly, “You’re a mad man after all!”

The white-haired old man gave a light smile at his remarks. His hair swayed wildly in the wind while he murmured and stared into the distant sky, “Things are only interesting with challenges, else I will be lost again!”

His long robe rattled in the wind, revealing a special ancient character amulet hung around his belt.

...

Back in the crystal palace, the Sea King was still contemplating the bad premonition he felt earlier during his meal. Suddenly, his expression changed drastically as a piece of half-chewed meat fell from his mouth.

“Damn it! Which bastard did this!?”

Chapter 195 - The Ethnomaniac

Chapter 195: The Ethnomaniac

To the north of the Void Ocean, a dark glow shot out from the bottom and turned into a humanoid in the air.

It was then that another streak of blue light came sprinting from the south and appeared ahead of the black figure.

“Mu Zhiguang, it’s really you! You’re still alive!” the Sea King was somehow taken aback upon looking at the familiar silhouette in front of him.

Turning around slowly, the same surprised expression crossed Mu Zhiguang’s face the moment he saw the Sea King.

“You’re not dead?”

With his eyes fixed on Mu Zhiguang, the Sea King could not help but swear internally. Deep down, he kept on mumbling. For God’s sake, this fellow is still alive! So now what? Is he going to rob me of the sea power again?

“Hahaha, I’m so glad that you’re still alive!” in a flash, Mu Zhiguang threw his arms around the cursing Sea King.

The Sea King was speechless.

“I thought the entire clan had fallen with everyone as dead as doornails. I couldn’t be happier to see you alive and kicking!”

Staring at Mu Zhiguang’s beaming face, the Sea King was at a loss for words.

Nothing has changed. This ethnomaniac is still the same old dumbass.

“Did you escape from the abyss under the ocean?” the Sea King asked tentatively.

“Escape? Why should I escape? I’ve been guarding the entrance to the death canal in the abyss all this while. That’s because I want to make sure that the Dead Clan will never see the sun again!” as Mu Zhiguang mentioned the Dead Clan, he revealed deep hatred in his eyes.

The Sea King was left speechless again.

At first, he thought Mu Zhiguang had died in the abyss under the ocean. He never knew that this fellow was suppressing the Dead Clan at the entrance of the abyss for a few hundred thousand of years. He felt rather frustrated thinking of how powerful Mu Zhiguang was.

The Sea King spoke righteously, “Then why did you come out? What if they try to escape again? Such a deadly feud shall not be taken lightly. In my opinion, you should keep guarding the place and lock them down at least for another million years.”

Mu Zhiguang’s face lit up with a gentle smile, “No, I have something more important to do!”

What on earth is that important? Can’t you please just go back? The Sea King scolded silently.

“I’ve heard that somebody bullied our clansmen, so I came to see what exactly was going on,” Mu Zhiguang’s face grew stern as he spoke of this matter.

“Who? Who did that? I thought all our clansmen had died,” the Sea King was puzzled.

Mu Zhiguang looked murderous as he uttered, “It’s a guy called the Sea King. I have heard that he has dominated the Void Ocean for millenia. But since he dares to bully my clansmen, I will make him pay for this with his life!”

Once again, the Sea King was left speechless.

He felt extremely awful as he swallowed his curse. Who the hell made him the scapegoat and even spread this rumor to the abyss under the ocean?

“Do you know this guy? Bring me to him and I shall take his life. This Void Ocean originally belonged to the Mu Te Sea Clan. After killing him, I will pass you the sea power for you to rebuild a whole new Mu Te Sea Nation.”

The Sea King was tongue-tied.

“Ahem... Brother Mu, this news is simply a rumor. You cannot believe them!”

“How can it be a rumor? A living creature purposely came to the abyss under the ocean and passed me this message. And even if this Sea King did not bully our clansmen, he shall at least die since this Void Ocean belongs to the Mu Te Sea Nation. We must not let it fall into the hands of outsiders!”

Embarrassed, the Sea King was hesitant to tell the lunatic in front of him that he was actually the one known as the Sea King. His stomach was in knots.

“What’s wrong? Is this Sea King a very strong adversary?” seeing the troubled look on his face, Mu Zhiguang could not help but ask.

He patted the Sea King on his shoulder like a big brother and said, “Don’t be afraid! No matter how strong that fellow is, as long as I find all my body parts, he will be no match for me!”

“Brother Mu, I have something to tell you but before that, promise me that you will stay calm and won’t beat me up!” the Sea King pondered and spoke with a sense of guilt.

Now that Mu Zhiguang was back, he knew that he could not hide the truth for long.

Mu Zhiguang smiled and replied, “Tell me then, why would I ever beat you up? You’re my clansman. You will always have my unconditional support regardless of whatever mess you’ve made!”

“I’m the Sea King!”

“What?”

“I’m the Sea King. The news that you got is fake. I would never kill my fellow clansmen. Besides, all our clansmen transformed into zombie ghosts and you scared most of them away. The rest likely fled from the Void Ocean long ago. There aren’t any of us left!”

Mu Zhiguang’s expression turned stiff upon hearing this.

“You mean, our clansmen are all dead?”

“Yes!” the Sea King forced the word out.

The Sea King’s affirmative reply made Mu Zhiguang look dejected. Once again, he hugged the Sea King with tears in his eyes, “So this means that you’re my only clansman now. How sad...”

The Sea King looked embarrassed and tried to push Mu Zhiguang away but he found that he could not budge him an inch.

Mu Zhiguang grieved for a while before wiping off his tears and said, “If so, this means that fellow who came to the abyss under the ocean was trying to make me kill you? What a brilliant trick! And schemeful indeed! He even wanted to wipe out my entire clan by killing my last clansman! Fortunately, I’ve killed that fellow! He deserved to die!”

“And by the way, you must have some potential enemies around, or else why would they plan this to kill you? Don’t worry, I will help you get rid of all your enemies since I’m here!” Mu Zhiguang grabbed the Sea King’s shoulder and asserted angrily.

Mixed emotions flooded the Sea King as he fixed his gaze on Mu Zhiguang.

This fellow was the one who initially snatched his Mu Te royal power away. However, to be frank, Mu Zhiguang had no greed for power at all as his priority was always the benefits of his clansmen.

Anyhow, Mu Zhiguang's words had triggered his thoughts of destroying all his current enemies and expanding his control over the ocean.

“Yes, there are some of them over at the Liuli Coast who are under Tong Gua the Ghost King's influence. I suppose they are the culprit behind this. Previously, they had been sending out battleships to rob my supplies!”

“Alright, I'll help you!”

The Sea King felt awkward but still, he replied, “Thank you, big brother.”

It was then that Mu Zhiguang took on a serious expression, “I shall leave for a while to deal with something. I will come back to you later!”

Before the Sea King managed to reply, he then saw Mu Zhiguang make his move and vanish into thin air in the blink of an eye.

At this moment, the Sea King felt very disturbed as he was unsure whether Mu Zhiguang's reappearance was a good thing for him. Nevertheless, he felt quite intimidated by the presence of a lunatic with such strong power.

...

Meanwhile, on the south region of the Void Ocean, a private specter ship was moving forward. Sitting by his bed with a fishing rod in his hand, Liu Chai was looking out at the sea. He slapped his shaking right arm intermittently in frustration and cursed in his heart.

Suddenly, a dark silhouette came into sight on top of the specter ship and landed on the ship slowly.

“A fellow clansman? No, that can't be right... but why do you have my power in you?” Mu Zhiguang asked curiously as he stared at Liu Chai.

Liu Chai could not help but yell, “Who are you?”

“I am Mu Zhiguang!”

“Holy shit! Really?”

Hurriedly, Liu Chai turned around and at the same time, Mu Zhiguang noticed his right arm. There was a trace of nostalgia in his eyes.

“You have been acknowledged by my right arm and now you can become my clansman!” kindness flashed across Mu Zhiguang’s eyes as he stared at Liu Chai.

“No, no, I don’t want to. Just a question, did you lose your memory? What was it about again?” Liu Chai blurted out his question as he thought of his mission.

Instead of answering, Mu Zhiguang gave another nod and his eyes were still on Liu Chai, “You are very talented, and you have the heart of a warrior. No wonder my right arm will choose to be at one with you. Surely you have great potential!”

“Are you going to take it away?” alarmed, he held the right arm to himself abruptly with his guard up.

“No. You can have it,” Mu Zhiguang shook his head.

Liu Chai sighed a breath of relief at his words. The glance that he stole from Mu Zhiguang’s solemn expression just now almost scared him to death. He feared that Mu Zhiguang might actually take his right arm back.

“Oh yeah! Do you want to be my son?” Mu Zhiguang asked smilingly.

“What? Your son!?” Liu Chai was dumbfounded.

Chapter 196 - The Covenant

Chapter 196: The Covenant

Mu Zhiguang's absurd request somehow gave Liu Chai a sudden urge to smash his head.

This guy was obviously trying to take advantage of him. How could he have his own way just because he was a Ghost Emperor Elite?

“What do you think? Once you're my son, no one in this ocean will ever bully you. You can even get plenty of resources for your own cultivation!”

Now that Mu Zhiguang had lost all of his clansmen, he started to value the Sea King more. He was the only one who had the bloodline of his clan. Seeing Liu Chai with his arm turned out to be an unexpected surprise to him. It was right then that he had the idea of recruiting him into the clan.

Frustrated looking at Mu Zhiguang's sincere face, Liu Chai snapped, “No!”

“I never had an heir in my whole life... if you would be my son...”

Liu Chai interrupted him abruptly, “Hold on! Why are you going on about sons? Watch your words, can't you? Do you think you can start insulting people just because you're the Ghost Emperor?”

Mu Zhiguang was astonished, “You really don't want to be my son?”

I want to be your father! Liu Chai whispered to himself.

“Alright, since you don't wish to, I shall not force you. But you do have my blood in your body, therefore you are one of the Mu Te Sea Clan. If you were to encounter any danger, you can always summon me. I will help you!”

Mu Zhiguang waved his hand as he spoke, and a dark glow pierced through Liu Chai's right arm. At the same time, a notification rang in his head.

[Game Notification: You have received a one-time skill, The Call of Death.]

The Call of Death (Binding: Mu Zhiguang): By executing this skill, Mu Zhiguang will be able to hear your request and obtain your exact location!

Seeing that Mu Zhiguang was about to leave, Liu Chai quickly asked, "You still haven't told me about your memory..."

Mu Zhiguang replied calmly, "I'm not sure about that either. It might be something related to the huge secret of the Dead Clan. I will have to collect all my body parts in order to awaken this strand of memory. So, I have no idea for the time being."

Liu Chai was dumbfounded after hearing what he said. How was he going to complete his mission if his brain knew nothing about the memory?

"So where are the rest of your body parts? Just go and collect them!" Liu Chai prompted.

"That's what I am planning to do now. But since my right arm suits you so well, I'm not going to take it!"

Stunned, Liu Chai questioned, "Does that mean that you won't be able to collect all of your body parts?"

"Yeah, the most I can do is to collect a few more parts of my body. Perhaps this can help to unlock some memories. I will let you know once I find them," smiling, Mu Zhiguang's figure started to fade.

Glancing at his right arm, Liu Chai felt rather depressed. This mission is getting increasingly harder.

However, there was another option for Liu Chai. He could wait until he was strong enough to kill Mu Zhiguang and collect the body parts himself.

Nonetheless, he sensed no malice from Mu Zhiguang despite being pissed off by his intention to make him his son. Being a righteous man, this made him even more ambivalent.

...

Liuli Coast, Beiqi.

Tong Gua was drinking and playing cards with Ye Chen and some other friends on the beach. A dark silhouette caught their attention as it descended from the sky.

The silhouette stood by the shore for a while before it slowly dispersed. When it reappeared, it was right beside Tong Gua.

Looking at Tong Gua, Mu Zhiguang said curiously, “The spirit of a Demon King in such a weak body? How rare!”

“Who are you?” Tong Gua threw his cards to the floor and ranted while pointing at Mu Zhiguang.

“I’m Mu Zhiguang.”

“What a shitty name... Mu...” Tong Gua was about to burst out swearing before a look of horror crossed his face.

“You’re Mu Zhiguang? The previous king of the Mu Te Sea Nation?” Tong Gua seemed skeptical.

“Mhmm,” Mu Zhiguang nodded.

“You’re not dead?”

“It seems like many people thought that I was dead,” Mu Zhiguang put on a smile. “Anyways, I’ve heard that there’s a creature named Tong Gua here who has attained the Ghost King Peak Realm. Do you know where he is?”

Sensing that something wasn’t right, Tong Gua coughed a little, “He went out to sea and hasn’t come back for quite a long time. Right, boys?”

Upon hearing this, Mu Zhiguang shifted his gaze to Ye Chen and the others.

Ye Chen and the rest shook their heads firmly as if they had no idea either.

Mu Zhiguang looked disappointed for not getting a usable answer. He disappeared on the spot.

“Shit, things are getting interesting now that this lunatic is out!” Tong Gua stared at the spot where Mu Zhiguang stood just now.

Ye Chen and the others asked curiously, “Who is Mu Zhiguang?”

“He used to reign over the Void Ocean before the Sea King. He was also the Sea King’s clansman and thus, in terms of status, could be considered as the Sea King’s former boss.”

Tong Gua’s words made their faces taut with tension for they knew how tough this matter was going to be.

After all, their fight with the Sea King was at its peak. The sudden appearance of such a strong opponent would definitely give the Sea King an advantage over them. A full-fledged war might be triggered at any moment.

“But as far as I know, he should be dead in the abyss under the ocean. Why did he pop up all of a sudden? Unless someone went to save him from the abyss?” Tong Gua started to speculate.

...

The Peak of the Cliffs of Desperation.

A dark silhouette emerged and charged toward the black skeleton beside the pillar pagoda.

At this moment, the white-haired old man’s silhouette came into sight and stopped in front of the dark silhouette.

“I’ve come to take back what’s mine!” Mu Zhiguang, who had appeared physically, exclaimed to the white-haired old man.

“I’ve heard that you went to the abyss under the ocean, and I thought you were dead,” the white-haired old man replied with a smile.

“Do you want to stop me from taking back what’s mine?” Mu Zhiguang’s face was grave.

“You sound so rude and I don’t like it! What are you going to do if I don’t return it to you? Do you think you can defeat me with your current incomplete body?” the white-haired old man retorted.

“I can’t defeat you!” Mu Zhiguang replied honestly.

Feeling as if his reputation was tarnished, Mu Zhiguang added, “But if we are at the same level of power, you would be no match for me!”

Upon hearing that, the white-haired old man smiled, “You know about the new king of the Mu Te Sea Nation, right? What do you think of his strength?”

Mu Zhiguang nodded, “The king is strong. If it wasn’t for that battle with Tao Wu that caused him to be drained out, his strength would be on par with me when I was in my peak realm.”

Grinning, the white-haired old man waved and a hologram appeared amid the golden sparks.

“Stop beating me! Stop it! I promise you that the Liuli Coast is yours and I won’t attack it!”

A voice arose, followed by the scene of a blue-skinned man with his upper torso exposed being ruthlessly beaten up. His face began to distort under the massive, ceaseless blows.

Seeing the king whom he remembered being regal and dignified was begging for mercy with his tail between his legs, Mu Zhiguang’s jaw dropped.

“Do you see that? This was how I snatched the Liuli Coast from your Mu Te Sea King back in the day. So, frankly speaking, you are nothing to me,”

the white-haired old man grinned hideously.

“You...”

Mu Zhiguang clenched his fist and anger rushed through him as he thought of how this fellow in front of him used to treat his king.

“What? Wanna have a fight now? I might not be able to stop and kill you, but you better think carefully about this!” the white-haired old man threatened with the same nasty smile lingering on his lips.

Taking a deep breath, Mu Zhiguang’s face became solemn, “King of Beiqi, I may not be your equal now, but I can still surpass you in the future. You keep this body, I will come and retrieve it someday.”

The white-haired old man immediately blocked Mu Zhiguang’s way as he saw that he was about to leave, “Oh, don’t leave! I can give it to you, but you have to promise me something!”

Mu Zhiguang’s brow furrowed when he heard that, “What do you want me to promise you, King of Beiqi?”

The white-haired old man let out a cunning chuckle, “I am no longer the King of Beiqi, so stop calling me that. Besides, this land is no longer under my dominance. I hope I’ve made myself clear. As for my request, it’s simple. If you go to war with Beiqi, you must not be involved personally.”

Mu Zhiguang was stunned as he heard that, “What do you mean?”

“Since you’re out now, you must have thought of rebuilding the Mu Te Sea Nation. With that, the conflicts with those forces in Beiqi are inevitable. I don’t care about this but you have to promise me that you will not be involved in the conflict!”

“Why do you still care about the power games of Beiqi since you’re no longer the King of Beiqi?” Mu Zhiguang asked in puzzlement.

“Stop asking questions! Just tell me whether you agree or not. If you don’t agree, I will grind this black skeleton and drink it up. It’s time for some

supplements now that I'm old," the King of Beiqi snapped and threatened him.

"You..."

Mu Zhiguang was holding back his frustration because he could not fight with a guy. Such a feeling was so unbearable.

"Do you agree or not? Tell me!" as the white-haired old man spoke, the black skeleton flew into his outstretched hand.

Mu Zhiguang shuddered as he saw the white-haired old man's fingers randomly tapping on the black skeleton. He had crossed paths with many strong opponents in his lifetime but he had never met anyone like this before, who was powerful yet mean and graceless at the same time.

Mu Zhiguang inhaled deeply before nodding, "I agree, I won't get involved. Give it to me now!"

"Ah, that's how things should be. If you disagreed just now, I probably would have dismantled your remaining body into pieces."

Now Mu Zhiguang was speechless.

Reaching out to catch the black skeleton thrown by the white-haired old man, Mu Zhiguang had a rather wistful look on his face. At the same time, the black skeleton started to melt and seep into his body in the form of blackish liquid.

A sudden gust of demonic wind swept through the place, followed by a dense mist of dark energy that expanded rapidly before shrinking back into Mu Zhiguang's body.

The white-haired old man nodded after seeing how quickly Mu Zhiguang had improved, "Hmm, half a step away from the Ghost Emperor Peak Realm now. Not bad!"

Clenching his fist, he felt the surge of familiar energy circulating in his body. He then fixed his gaze upon the white-haired old man, "I will keep

my promise!”

“Alright, alright. Just go. I want to go get some sleep,” the white-haired old man stretched his body lazily and disappeared with the wind.

Mu Zhiguang decided to get going when he saw the white-haired old man leaving. It was then that something unusual about the pillar pagoda caught his attention and his curiosity drove him to take a closer look at it.

Just as Mu Zhiguang stretched his hand out to examine it, a voice suddenly rang in his mind, “Young man, are you looking for a beating? I dare you to touch it.”

“Who’s there?”

Mu Zhiguang’s expression turned serious. He was sure that this voice did not belong to the white-haired old man.

“You are standing right on top of me, who do you think I am?” the Demonic God’s arrogant voice sounded again.

Immediately, Mu Zhiguang looked down and as his pupils started to be covered with darkness, he began to see through the ground.

Then, he saw a gigantic body bound by millions of metal chains. The Demonic God, with his head lifted up, was smiling sinisterly at him!

“The Demonic God!” Mu Zhiguang was appalled.

He was aware of an ancient demonic deity being sealed under the Land of Beiqi, but he didn’t expect it to be sealed here.

Chapter 197 - Warring Crisis

Chapter 197: Warring Crisis

Mu Zhiguang was shocked when he felt the powerful energy contained in the metal chains. He could not think of anyone else as strong as this, capable of sealing a demonic god.

However, after finding out that the Demonic God was underneath this place, he didn't dare to stop, afraid that the deity might kill him. He disappeared in an instant.

At that moment, the Demonic God who was buried deep underground shouted, "Rubbish!"

...

At this time, Tong Gua and his friends were still playing cards down by the Liuli Coast.

When Tong Gua lost once again, his eyes were absolutely bloodshot. He took his shirt off and threw it to the ground, "Bastard, how come I always lose? Did y'all cheat!?"

Ye Chen and the rest of his friends laughed out loud. However, as they were pondering what to say, they suddenly froze in their seats.

Tong Hua was distracted by their action, too. He followed their gaze to turn over and found out that Mu Zhiguang was standing behind him.

"So, you're Tong Gua!" Mu Zhiguang revealed murderous intent.

This man was, after all, his younger brother's opponent, the enemy he had always wanted to get rid of.

He coughed as he tried to explain, “No, you heard wrong. I just got a flush in poker! We are simply playing cards!”

Mu Zhiguang shook his head, “If it were earlier, I would have killed you myself, but now, I should leave this chance to the Sea King!”

Mu Zhiguang sighed when he was reminded of the promise he made earlier with the white-haired old man. He then flew toward the sea.

When he left, Tong Gua was relieved as he thought of the time he punched the Sea King. He was sure that Mu Zhiguang would not let him off the hook.

.....

Crystal Palace, Void Ocean.

The Sea King looked at him in disbelief, “What do you mean Tong Gua was a fluke? He has no power at all? How is that possible? I had a fight with him and I saw his strength with my bare eyes!”

“I am sure of it. If what you say is true, then I know the reason behind it. It could be the doing of the God Sealing Edict left by the Beiqi Clan.”

“What is the God Sealing Edict?” the Sea King was confused.

“There was once a goddess named Bei, from the Land of Beiqi, who left a holy book before she disappeared. She told her descendants that if they truly understood the holy book they could become gods. Our clan tried to fight for it after Bei disappeared, but we failed. Although we failed, I read the texts from our ancestors and found records saying that living creatures who meditated and cultivated according to this holy book will become very unstable. When they are weak, they might be even weaker than normal beasts.”

Upon hearing this, the Sea King’s expression changed.

“I remember now! It is true! Tong Gua was so weak, he couldn’t even stand. Then, he suddenly became strong. During our last fight, he yelled out

something about returning to the truth! Then, all the power in him disappeared. I thought that he was about to do something incredible, but it was all a fluke!”

“Darn it! Damn his friggin’ truth!” the Sea King became more enraged after he heard Mu Zhiguang’s explanation.

“What do you plan on doing next?” Mu Zhiguang asked.

“Since you’re here, let’s expand our territory and take over Liuli District!”

“I can help you to conquer everywhere else in the sea, but Beiqi? No way!”

The Sea King could not help but ask, “Why?”

“Don’t ask, I just can’t. If someone stronger than a Ghost Emperor doesn’t appear, I will not do anything. If you want to take down Liuli District and enact revenge, you may do it yourself. Besides, something as small as Liuli will not be able to stump you, right?”

“Since Tong Gua was just a fluke, then Liuli should not be a threat. I had been fearing Tong Gua before this, and they have snatched my resources away repeatedly, but now, I have nothing to fear.”

As Mu Zhiguang heard this, he nodded and patted the Sea King’s shoulder.

“Don’t worry, as long as there’s no one who’s stronger than a Ghost Emperor, Tong Gua cannot stop you!”

The Sea King heard this and nodded, then stood up, saying to his subordinate not far away, “Water Dragon, go send my orders and get the Navy ready. Five days! I will take down Liuli District completely within five days!”

...

Mu Zhiguang’s presence was noticed by both Lu Wu and Bei Li as soon as Hu He entered the depths of the sea.

Lu Wu was speechless. Whenever Hu He did something, it would always result in a harsher world to survive in for the players.

Does this man have something against the other players?

However, Mu Zhiguang's presence made him very anxious, too. He was afraid of the fact that Mu Zhiguang being alive would allow the Sea King to be less cautious of Tong Gua, and would dare to challenge the rest of the players again.

There was no way they could win against the Sea King Navy with their strength and potential right now.

Besides, he noticed that there had been some huge changes in the Sea King Navy since Mu Zhiguang's appearance.

From the forum discussions, one could tell that the Sea King Navy was assembling, and this was not a friendly sign.

During the Sea King's previous visits, he only brought part of his Navy's forces, but this time, he gathered all four fleets. If his target was Liuli District, Lu Wu thought that he should be considering how to allow the players to retreat.

...

Barren Grassland, Beiqi.

West Beiqi was barren and full of dried grass, completely lifeless.

Gu Yu and Sun Qi the dog walked on the grassland, moving West without stopping.

"Boss, why are we looking for the Earth Breaking Clan?" the dog asked curiously as he ran ahead.

"Some players mentioned in the forum that the Earth Breaking Clan has Earth Breaking Stones. This material is an important material for a Rune

Master to open up the gem, Lie Shan. I want to know whether they can trade it for some of the materials I brought along.”

“But what do you need it for? You’re not a Rune Master.”

“It’s for the members of our guild!”

The dog couldn’t help but ask, “What if the Earth Breaking Clan doesn’t wish to trade?”

“If they refuse, they’ll have to eat dog meat!” Gu Yu shot a glance at him.

The dog was speechless.

This barren land was different from other places in Beiqi. There were fewer monsters and creatures here, and there was almost nothing to do with food here. It was probably because of that, that the animals choose to stay away.

“Boss, where is the Earth Breaking Clan? My legs are sore!”

“Hold on!”

As he said that, Gu Yu stopped and opened up his gallery, and found the picture he found on the forum to check if he had arrived at his destination.

“Boss, look over there, quick!” the dog started pulling Gu Yu’s pants.

Gu Yu turned and found out that a boy with brown skin was looking at them with his snot-filled nose while chortling.

[Lie Xiaolang (Member of the Earth Breaking Clan)]:

Character Information: Member of the Earth Breaking Clan, Ancient Beiqi Power.

“Found it!” Gu Yu smiled with joy as he and the dog walked toward the boy.

“Hey, you there, how are you? Can you bring me to your elders?” Gu Yu waved in front of Lie Xiaolang, urging to draw his attention.

Lie Xiaolang turned his head dumbfoundedly. He looked at Gu Yu, then at Sun Qi. Later, he pulled the straw rope beside him and a huge net suddenly appeared on the ground, tightly wrapping around the both of them before hanging them in mid-air.

“Got you!” Lie Xiaolang yelled with a silly smile.

Chapter 198 - The Earth Breaking Clan

Chapter 198: The Earth Breaking Clan

The sudden appearance of ropes caught Gu Yu and Sun Qi completely by surprise.

The dog bared his fangs at Lie Xiaolang, who still wore a silly grin, as he thrashed his claws around trying to break free from the net.

However, the net was made from a very tough and sturdy material, even the dog's razor-sharp claws could not tear it apart.

"Father, I caught something!" Lie Xiaolang started yelling.

The two players were terrified.

The things that characters could do in the game were unlimited. Although they had not been to Gillfish Island before, they still knew about how that place was a nightmare for many players. At this very moment, they expected inexplicable things to happen to them.

They struggled hard but could not escape because the net was too strong.

In a flash, two silhouettes clad in yellow armor appeared and quickly approached them.

"Father, I caught an Earth Essence!" Lie Xiaolang inhaled sharply to suck up his dripping snot and shrieked again.

The two silhouettes stopped beside him and looked at the two of them that were suspended in mid-air inside the net. Then, one of them slapped the back of Lie Xiaolang's head.

“Does this look like an Earth Essence to you? How many times have you caused trouble for me! You’re getting on my nerves again!” When he was about to take a step toward his son, he was stopped by a woman with a darker complexion.

“What? Are you stopping me from punishing him again?” Lie Dalang questioned angrily.

“No! We will punish him together!” the woman stepped forward to pick Lie Xiaolang up and beat him fervently. After she was done, she passed him on to Lie Dalang for another round of punishment.

Both Gu Yu and Sun Qi were speechless at the sight.

The dog was perplexed as he witnessed such a fierce domestic violence scene. “Boss, I’m scared!” he uttered timidly.

“I have a feeling that this child’s so dumb because he literally got his senses beaten out of him!” Gu Yu uttered with his heart thumping.

The two finally stopped after another five or six rounds. However, instead of being on death’s door, Lie Xiaolang’s body was only bruised and swollen. His howls of pain echoed clear and loud, but he did not look severely injured at all.

At that moment, the gaze of Lie Xiaolang’s parents fell upon the two players.

“I’m sorry, foreigners!” Lie Dalang apologized. He then stretched out his hand to grab the net. It immediately relaxed and they fell to the ground with a thud.

“My apologies, Xiaolang is still immature, therefore he has some growing up to do. Hope you don’t mind!” Lie Dalang scratched his head remorsefully as he uttered.

Assuming he survives till he turns into a grown-up! Gu Yu and the dog knew better than to say this out loud.

Gu Yu asked curiously as he eyed the net on the ground, “It’s alright... by the way, what were you catching?”

“We’re trying to catch Earth Essence!” from his pocket, Lie Dalang fished out a round ball the size of a watermelon as he explained.

The round ball was highly peculiar, it had a mouth, ears, and eyes that blinked. This thing was a living creature!

[Earth Essence (Level 9 spiritual material)]:

Object Detail: Beiqi Barren Grassland’s special spiritual material. Ranked between half creature, half spirit. It will mature into a King Level Herb!

A treasure! Gu Yu and Sun Qi’s eyes sparkled with excitement.

The dog raised his paw to ask curiously, “What does it do?”

Lie Dalang pointed at his son, who was still wailing, “It can cure poisons. Do you know why my kid is so mentally challenged?”

“No!” they both shook their hands in response.

“That’s because he ate an Earth Breaking Stone and was severely poisoned. So, he’s rather confused and oblivious about the things around him now!”

Lie Dalang looked at Lie Xiaolang impatiently and found that he was still crying. He threw the Earth Essence at him and his son was knocked to the ground from the impact!

After hearing the term Earth Breaking Stones, the two players were filled with excitement. It was, after all, the purpose to why they made this trip.

“Right, why are you here? Don’t you know that this is Beiqi’s forbidden area?” Lie Dalang quizzed casually.

Gu Yu and Sun Qi became embarrassed. They were players, after all, so forbidden areas did not apply to them. However, they could not disclose

that, so they instead responded, “We had no idea that this place was a forbidden area. Why is this place a forbidden area?”

Lie Dalang surprisingly accepted the excuse and clarified, “So you really have no idea! Take my advice and leave now, this was declared a forbidden area by the King of Beiqi... no foreigners are allowed to enter.”

The dog couldn't help but ask, “What will happen if we enter the forbidden area again?”

Lie Dalang shook his head, “Even I don't know, but probably a death sentence by the King of Beiqi!”

Something clicked in Gu Yu's mind, thus he asked, “What is the name of your king?”

“Who else? Lord North Sea!” Lie Dalang answered almost immediately.

Gu Yu and the dog stared at each other for a moment and thought of the dead Beiqi King's decree.

The dog questioned testily, “Brother, do you know that North Sea was buried a long time ago?”

After he finished his statement, Gu Yu's gut felt uneasy but it was already too late. He could only watch Lie Dalang move as quickly as lightning to lift the dog and start to pummel him furiously.

“Ow, ow, ow!” Sun Qi struggled but Lie Dalang's strength was not something he could overcome. He could only stare at Gu Yu in despair.

Gu Yu saw this and took a step back.

After he had beaten the dog within an inch of his life, Lie Dalang tossed him to the ground, “Little creature, let me warn you, you better watch your tongue. If you ever disrespect the Lord King of Beiqi, I will end your life!”

He heard this and shivered on the ground, weeping soundlessly.

What is this? Why would I have to be punished for telling the truth?

Then, Lie Dalang directed his gaze toward Gu Yu.

Gu Yu immediately voiced out, “He’s still alive, the Land of Beiqi is prosperous under his rule!”

Lie Dalang nodded and said, “That’s alright since you don’t know the rules, I won’t be offended again, now get lost!”

Gu Yu was not willing to give up after he journeyed this far, so he asked, “I heard that you have Earth Breaking Stones. I’m willing to exchange any material for them. Do you agree to exchange it with me?”

Lie Dalang was stunned but soon recovered his senses to reply, “What spiritual material can you give me in return?”

Gu Yu found the situation hopeful, hence he instantly took out a whole bunch of spiritual material from his personal space, “Really anything you want! What do you want?”

After he examined the things Gu Yu took out, Lie Dalang looked toward his wife as she cradled their unconscious son.

“I don’t know either, let’s ask the clan leader,” the woman shook her head as she answered.

“Earth Breaking Stones may not be anything precious to me, but we have no right to exchange them, I can bring you to the clan leader instead to see what he says!” Lie Dalang turned toward Gu Yu and explained.

Gu Yu smiled and nodded, he picked up the dog from the ground and tagged along behind Lie Dalang and his family.

Gu Yu and Sun Qi finally came to the land of the Earth Breaking Clan after a half an hour walk with Lie Dalang and his family.

The clan’s compound was huge and vast. Aside from buildings made of mud, there were also tall pagodas everywhere. The two foreigners attracted

a lot of attention as they passed by.

They were led to one of the pagodas. Lie Dalang paused in front of it and kneeled to the ground with one knee to proclaim, “Clan Leader, these foreigners wish to have an audience with you. They wish to exchange spiritual materials for our Earth Breaking Stones.”

Not long after, a rustling sound emitted from the pagoda and the door was flung open. A large imposing giant strode out.

Gu Yu lifted his gaze to take in the towering figure...

[Lie Shan (Ghost Emperor Middle Phase)]:

Character Details: Leader of the ancient Earth Breaking Clan of Beiqi. Fought in the war for the title of the first King of Beiqi where he was the strongest contender for the throne. After his defeat, he swore loyalty to North Sea and vowed to never betray him!

Character Status: Normal.

When Lie Shan appeared, Lie Dalang bowed deeply to show his respect toward the leader.

Lie Shan looked down upon Gu Yu and asked, “You want Earth Breaking Stones?”

“Yes, I have many spiritual materials, do you...”

Lie Shan interrupted Gu Yu before he could finish and pointed at the dog, “I don’t want your spiritual materials, I can give you plenty of Earth Breaking Stones, but only in exchange for your pet, the White Phantom!”

Upon hearing this, Sun Qi was jolted into action, causing him to grab Gu Yu’s arm immediately.

Gu Yu looked at the dog. He really wanted to consider this trade but he felt that he had to decline it.

“Clan Leader Lie Shan, this is my friend... I’m afraid I can’t give him to you, but I can give you plenty of spiritual materials instead!”

“I won’t accept anything other than King Level spiritual materials, anything else is of no use to me. Why don’t you give it more thought?”

“No! I don’t want to be exchanged! I’m not an object!” the dog protested stubbornly as he defiantly met Lie Shan’s eyes. However, at the same time, he started to cling tighter onto Gu Yu’s arm.

“The White Phantom speaks!” Lie Shan’s eyes bulged out as if he had just seen a ghost.

Chapter 199 - I Shall Acknowledge You As The King!

Chapter 199: I Shall Acknowledge You As The King!

Lie Shan had been in Beiqi for many years. It was very natural that he knew about the Spiritual Beast called the White Phantom. However, this was his first time encountering one that could talk, hence he revealed an instant look of astonishment.

“Is this a type of variation?” Lie Shan asked curiously.

“I’m a human!” Sun Qi clenched his dog teeth.

Gu Yu pressed hard on the dog’s head, then looked up and said, “Leader of the Earth Breaking Clan, did you not find anything else appealing other than the King Level spiritual materials?”

“Even if something does catch my eye, you wouldn’t be able to retrieve it. Perhaps you’d consider exchanging the White Phantom with me, if I could give you an over abundance of Earth Breaking Stones, and even offer you a piece of Earth Essence?”

Gu Yu took a glance at Sun Qi. He had no idea that this little creature was worth so much.

Although he could hoodwink Lie Shan by handing over the White Phantom to him, he did not like the notion of offending the Earth Breaking Clan. Such a method would be feasible against his rival, Xiao Tian, but it would be inappropriate to pull this trick with Lie Shan who had achieved the Ghost Emperor Level. On behalf of the players, he did not wish to make enemies of such formidable existence.

“That won’t do, Clan Leader Lie Shan!” Gu Yu shook his head.

“Then, you should go... there’s nothing else we can talk about. In the past, I would have seized what I wanted. But now, I comply with the command of the Lord King of Beiqi to stay away from the outside world. I don’t want any trouble. You should leave!”

Gu Yu could not help but let out a sigh as Lie Shan began to drive him away. He felt miserably poor given that he could not even provide an item that could satisfy them.

Just when Gu Yu was ready to pick up the dog and leave, a few chat boxes popped out from the right side.

Wu Guoyi: “Brother, bring your men to the Liuli Coast now! The Sea King is here, hurry up!”

Chen Ziyu: “The Sea King has invaded. Where are you?”

Liu Chai: “The Sea King has brought the entire Sea King Navy. We can’t hold back anymore, brother!”

From the series of messages, Gu Yi deduced that the circumstances were bleak.

He never thought that the Sea King would actually declare a full-scale war with them. This was definitely not good news for the players’ faction.

Gu Yu immediately grabbed Sun Qi and bolted toward the Mansion of the Dead.

Since there was no transport array at the Barren Grasslands, he had to speed up.

As he was running, Gu Yu started to call for his team members via the guild live chat channel, requesting them to gather together before he got there.

After giving out his command, Gu Yu opened the in-game official web forum, glanced through the page and clicked into one of the player’s live streams at the coast.

Once he saw the situation of the one-sided battle, Gu Yu's facial expression had completely changed. He came to realize that the situation could no longer be saved, the legion of players had already been defeated on all fronts.

Gu Yu turned to look back at the Earth Breaking Clan before speaking to Sun Qi, "Dog, head over to the Cliffs of Desperation... and hurry!"

At the Liuli Coast, great billows rose one after another, a swarm of beasts and armies of the Sea King Navy had formed an unbreakable torrent, approaching the land with truculent rage.

The battle formation of the Sea King Navy was much stronger than that of their past two attacks. Their troops stretched across the entire coastline as far as the eye could see.

The Sea King's invasion had heightened the tension of all the players. They started to gather there and hoped to resist the attack with all their might.

However, this time around, the Sea King cut the crap and attacked straight away. Large waves crashed onto the coast, and plenty of the Sea King's warriors took advantage of this opportunity to break into the players' formations.

Knowing now that Tong Gua was just a paper tiger, the Sea King was fearless.

In fact, Mu Zhiguang had assured him that once Tong Gua attacked with the ability of a Ghost Emperor Elite, he would definitely come forward and stop the assault.

With nothing left to worry about, the Sea King pledged to conquer all of Liuli District here and now.

Though there were a whopping 10,000,000 players at this point in time, only about 6,000,000 were online. The advantage in numbers was narrow, but in terms of individual ability, the difference remained huge.

Even if the Sea King was eliminated, the commanders of his three main forces all possessed the ability of the Ghost General Level. The first wave of the attack had completely suppressed the players' army and the frontlines were constantly being pushed back.

It did cross the players' minds to use the structure building tactic they had employed while fighting against the evil spirits.

The Door Gods were too weak before the Sea King Army. After all, the main purpose of the Door Gods was to restrain extreme evilness. Using them to confront the oceanic capabilities would provide zero suppression on their attributes.

Large amounts of mahogany huts were being destroyed. The Sea King had fully unfolded his ability as the Overlord of the Void Ocean in this battle. Players with four months of training could be said to be completely vulnerable in front of him.

Although the Sea King felt astonished by the death-defying fighting spirit of the players, in his mind, these acts of craziness and determination were completely useless in the face of absolute strength.

Within an hour into the battle, the players' faction was being forced out of the Liuli Coast altogether. However, the Sea King Navy did not stop there. They continued to suppress the players so that they would retreat even further.

The Sea King had one simple plan: to use his absolute strength to deter each and every force in Beiqi, sending them all a message: From now on, he, the Sea King, would occupy all of Beiqi. Whoever wished to challenge him should know their own strength and consider carefully whether to be enemies with him!

The appearance of the Sea King Army had startled both the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King at the same time. They witnessed everything in silence and had yet to interfere.

Though they were both a part of Beiqi and should combine forces to fight against outsiders whenever an enemy appeared, they knew that even with them in the picture, it would still not make an impact against the Sea King.

Hence, they chose to keep quiet.

...

North Rocks.

Observing Liuli District from afar, the Rock Ghost King turned his head abruptly and looked at Du Yan who was standing behind him, “What you said was true!”

“Every sentence from this subordinate of yours is true. I suppose that guy is His Majesty, just that he has returned with a different identity!”

“No wonder! No wonder he died all of a sudden, what is his agenda!” the face of the Rock Ghost King got clouded over.

Once again he raised his head and glanced at the Liuli Coast. The Rock Ghost King then instructed, “Du Yan, take a trip to the Ascension Zone, inform the Hydra King of everything you have said!”

“Yes! This subordinate of yours will get going now!”

...

Under the forceful oppression of the Sea King, many lifelong gamers who disliked war were getting furious. Players started to join the battle one after another, but the situation on the battlefield remained unchanged. A large number of players had died and subsequently went into their three hour cooldown period.

Yet still, more and more players joined the battle. The Liuli Coast was stacked with dead bodies of the Sea King Navy. But these deaths were not even worth mentioning to the Sea King. His army continued to march forward regardless.

In this battle, his target was set on the Mansion of the Dead. He wanted to invade this center zone of Beiqi in order to clearly announce his strong intrusion!

Countless guild commanders were roaring through the live chat channel, they wanted to arrange a lineup based on the specific strategy created through research by professional players in the past to fight against the Sea King's military.

Nevertheless, in the actual battle, everything was mere empty talk before the absolute strength of the Sea King's forces. The players' formations were repeatedly being shattered.

The three main commanders who were leading the troops in the frontline were each considered a boss in the eyes of the players. The three of them combined had unfolded strength similar to that of the sharpest long spear, effortlessly piercing through the line of defense formed by the players.

The battlefield continued to advance and players were ousted from Liuli District by the Sea King with ease as though dry weeds were being crushed. They began to move forward in the direction of the Mansion of the Dead.

At this moment, an enormous ancient tree fell from the sky and relentlessly smashed onto the Sea King's armies.

“King of Beiqi, show yourself!” the Rock Ghost King bellowed angrily. Vines began to spring up from the ground and swung in a violent manner, sweeping off a large troop of the Sea King's warriors.

Just then, a black silhouette slowly condensed in mid-air. With his body draped in a black robe, no one could have a clear sight of the appearance of this man as his whole body was covered in darkness.

“I need proof!” the Rock Ghost King rose up into the air and flew toward the direction of the silhouette.

This black silhouette was, in fact, the incarnation embodied by Lu Wu. With a wave of his hand, a drop of blood fell toward the Rock Ghost King.

The moment the blood touched the Rock Ghost King, it absorbed directly into his body.

“You’re not the King of Beiqi!” the Rock Ghost King glared angrily at Lu Wu.

“I will soon be!” Lu Wu replied indifferently.

“Without the Old Ancestor, anyone can now exploit Beiqi. If no new king were to arise, the Sea King could annihilate my army today, and he could slaughter yours in the future!”

Upon hearing this, the Rock Ghost King’s face darkened. Just like what Lu Wu had said, he too had had enough of these tough days.

Considering that this mysterious man in front of him would likely be the one who held the secret weapon passed down by Lu Yan, the Rock Ghost King fell silent for a moment before gritting his teeth, “If you win this war, I, the Rock Ghost King, shall acknowledge you as the king!”

Lu Wu solemnly nodded his head and the silhouette dissipated.

At this moment, a notification rang in the players’ menus:

[Game Notification: The entire Sea King Navy has invaded the frontier of the Mansion of the Dead, each player will be blessed with double the number of attributes!]

Lu Wu himself was uncertain about the outcome of this war. All the same, he would never surrender the Mansion of the Dead. His final eight million soul coins would act as a blessing of a Battle Aura for the players. They should fight to the bitter end!

“My children! Join me in this battle!” as the roar of the Rock Ghost King was resounded in the air, a vast amount of Tree Demons, Enchanted Trees, Steel Zombies, and other warriors of the Rock Ghost Army were seen drilling out of the ground at the frontier of the Mansion of the Dead.

“Demon Snake Army, join me in this battle!”

Once again the thundering roar came from a distance. Soon after, a huge shadow descended from the sky and threw a wide area of Sea King Navy troops off the ground.

A great number of Demon Snakes came swarming from the southwest.

Two powerful Ghost King Elites had arrived with their armies. Coupled with the power acquired by players through doubling up their attributions, the overall strength and ability of Beiqi had surged tremendously.

Chapter 200 - Assembly Of The Forces Of Beiqi

Chapter 200: Assembly Of The Forces Of Beiqi

Having the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King by their side, they finally had the ability to withstand this one-sided war.

In just a blink of an eye, the Tree Demon Army from the north and the Demon Snake Army from the southwest had assembled with the players, forming a new line of defense to fight head-on with the menacing Sea King Navy.

Even though it had never occurred to the players that the two Ghost Kings who were once considered as their enemies would now lend a helping hand during this crisis, they were touched beyond words.

“Demon Capital Army! Join me in this battle!”

“Ground Wolf Army! Join me in this battle!”

At that exact moment, two figures were seen moving at full speed toward them. They were the Ghost General of Demon Capital from the forest region of the Cliffs of Desperation and the Ghost General of Ground Wolf who lived underground all year round.

“You guys came!” the Rock Ghost King turned over and looked at the two distant figures.

“For what reason would we not show up when someone has crossed the line by trespassing our homeland!” the Ghost King of the Demon Capital smiled ferociously. He then let out a long howl and transformed into a purple phantom. Taking the lead, he crashed into one of the commanders of the Sea King Navy and knocked him out with a single punch.

“You people from Beiqi really wish to start a war against me!?” with a gloomy expression on his face, the Sea King glared at the forces that had joined the battle out of the blue.

This battle was intended to show off his power to the forces in Beiqi, but he never thought it would backfire by pulling each of the independent forces together in forming an alliance.

“Sea King, why didn’t you show your savageness when His Majesty was still around. Indeed, while the cat’s away, the mice will play!” in one gulp, the Hydra King gobbled up a warrior of the Sea King Navy, then turned to the Sea King and grimaced.

“You have a death wish!” the Sea King was full of rage as he leaped toward the Hydra King with a huge blast of air.

“Roar!” the Hydra King opened his eyes and widened his mouth furiously, with a great bang, nine energy cannons were fired toward the Sea King.

The Sea King continued to move forward in the air without any hesitation, directly striking onto the energy cannon with his body. One after another, the energy cannons blew up and dispersed, causing the movement of the Sea King to decelerate.

As the Sea King got close to the Hydra King, a flash of blue light appeared in his right arm and struck a quick blow to the Hydra King.

At this very moment, the Rock Ghost King appeared right in front of the Hydra King and countless vines contracted to form an immediate wooden shield.

Boom!

Broken vines were flying all over the sky... that punch, however, had successfully been blocked.

“Hey, old buddy, it’s been a long time since we last fought with each other!” the Rock Ghost King turned around and put on a grim smile.

“Yeah!” the Hydra King nodded, his body thereafter enlarged and bulked up. Concrete muscles were bulging all over his body and visible muscle lines were formed. All of a sudden, the Rock Ghost King resolutely moved aside while he slammed forward.

Boom!

The Hydra King and the Sea King crashed into one another.

Blue energy and black energy were formed at the point where they collided, thrusting back and forth against one another.

“You are no match for me!” the Sea King roared angrily and threw a double punch with both his fists. His action shattered the black rays, struck the Hydra King in his body, and blasted him off.

The Rock Ghost King did not wait until the Sea King had steadied himself before attacking him from the other side. Countless vines flayed him repeatedly like whips and eventually blasted him off as well.

Two figures came crashing down at the same time, creating two huge dents on the ground.

The expression of the Sea King turned serious when he saw that the Rock Ghost King and Hydra King had teamed up.

Although he was confident that he could win, it would not be an easy job.

On the frontline, with the help of the two extremely powerful, top-ranked Ghost Generals from the Demon Capital and Ground Wolf, the tension among the players lessened as they finally had the combat capabilities to fight back against the three main commanders. The counterattack began.

The Fourth Disaster Army once again showed their tenacity. By insanely fighting their way into the formation of the Sea King Navy, they lived the true meaning of devoting one’s life to war!

What is death? In their eyes, death was nothing but a three-hour wait.

“My brothers, the war we fight today will go down in history. Do you still remember our oath? The chronicles of history will be filled with our glory... as the wheel of history moves forward, our victory will be looked up to by our successors!”

The raging pep talk of Wu Guoyi filled the players’ hearts with enthusiasm.

As long as we have one last breath, as long as our blood is still warm, we shall charge forward without fear!

The defensive line formed by the players started fighting back. Innumerable skills filled the sky above them, ceaselessly crashing down on the Sea King Navy. The warriors looked like starving, bloodthirsty wolves who had turned their sight toward their enemy warriors.

The final barrier of the Mansion of the Dead became so strong that despite the Sea King Navy’s numerous attempts on charging forward, they could no longer suppress them easily.

“Strike back, we need to strike back! The fucking Sea King, he dared come to the Mansion of the Dead. His role model must be Cha Na... I’m going to leave his head hanging on the city gate as a warning to others!”

“My brothers, let’s make an all-out effort! This time, we must fight to the death. As long as the Mansion of the Death is guarded, our death counts. Fight!”

“We would never give up on the Mansion of the Death or Liuli District... this is our homeland in the Second World! For those unwilling to lead the life of a vagrant, let us unite and defend our homeland together!”

With the support from different forces of Beiqi, the fighting spirit of all players had been ignited full on. The players struck out and advanced wildly. They no longer assumed a defensive position but started actively attacking the Sea King Navy in return.

Every time someone fell down on the front line, players in the back would quickly fill the gap.

Even the assassins and mages in the back row would willingly fill the gap with their own body without hesitation whenever an opening was seen in the front line, making it impossible for the Sea King Navy to tear their battle line apart.

At this particular moment, the forces of Beiqi unified as never before.

The Tree Demon Army, Demon Snake Army, Ground Wolf Army, and Demon Capital Army were pressuring the Sea King Navy from both sides while the players fought them head-on. The craziness of the players had even affected them, causing them to turn wild as well.

In the Land of Beiqi, every leader had obtained their position through showing their real ability in combat and their subordinates had also stood the test of many battles.

During more peaceful days, their lust for blood was being held deep inside their heart, but at this moment, the smell of blood in the air had ignited their desire for battle.

“Ow-woo!” a howl was heard coming from afar. A huge blue wolf crushed into the midst of the Sea King Navy, knocking off a bunch of the warriors along his way.

“Sea King! Do you still remember me?” the blue flame on the wolf dissipated, and the face of Xiao Tian appeared.

“Xiao Tian!” a few commanders around him looked surprised.

They all thought Xiao Tian had died. His appearance in Beiqi was totally unexpected.

“Xiao Tian, you’re still alive!” the pupils of the Sea King instantly constricted.

He was aware of the condition of Xiao Tian’s injury at that time, but based on his assumption, Xiao Tian would’ve surely died. However, he was now alive and standing right in front of him.

“I spent my entire life serving you, so this is what you owe me!” After glancing at the Sea King, Xiao Tian raised his head and let out a long howl, “My army, are you all still willing to follow my lead!?”

The expression of the Sea King changed following the long howl.

Knowing how loyal Xiao Tian’s Army was, his heart skipped a beat. When he was going to kill Xiao Tian in the past, it was his bodyguards who defended him with their life and gave him the chance to escape with serious injuries.

“Boss! I’m with you!” an orc raised the ax in his hand and shouted out loud.

“Boss, I pledge loyalty to you!”

“I’m the lieutenant general of Xiao Tian’s Army, I’m willing to continue following my boss!”

Countless orcs raised their hands on the spot. The scene utterly disheartened the Sea King.

“Very well! Turn the direction of your weapons. Avenge me and help the forces of Beiqi to exterminate the Sea King Navy!”

Roar!

The Orc Army of Xiao Tian firmly obeyed the order. They began to attack the remaining three main legionaries of the Sea King Navy from the inside out.

A succession of changes had happened in his battle that was supposed to be won without much difficulty. The new force of Beiqi was weak initially, but with the support of each great force, they had gone from strength to strength and caught the Sea King by surprise.

The Boss

Behind The Game

by Slashing Blade

W E B N O V E L

